UNIVERSITY
OF FLORIDA
LIBRARIES

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016 with funding from
University of Florida, George A. Smathers Libraries

https://archive.org/details/williammarycolle1819will

William and Mary College Quarterly

HISTORICAL MAGAZINE

EDITOR: LYON G. TYLER, M. A., LL. D.
PRESIDENT OF WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE, WILLIAMSBURG, VA.

VOLUME XVIII.

RICHMOND, VA.:
WHITTET & SHEPPERSON, PRINTERS.
1910.

975.505
W719
v.18

SUBJECT INDEX.

VOLUME XVIII

Accomac County Records, 108-111.
Adams, John Quincy, and Illinois, 171, 172.
Ames Family, 65.
Anstead Family, 59,60.
Appendix: Vetoes of John Tyler, 227.
Berkeley, Sir William, A Cavalier in Virginia, 115-129.
Book Reviews, 215-218; 294-297.
Carlyle House, The, and its Associations, 1-17.
Carlyle, The Family, 37-44; 201-212; 278-289.
Carter, Landon, Diary of, 37-44.
Carter Genealogy, 47-58; 89-103; 235-251, 278-291.
Cavalier, A, In Virginia, Sir William Berkeley, 115-129.
Chiles Family, Some Notes of, 106-108.
Christian Family, 63.
Clopton Family, 67.
Coke, Bible Records, 103, 104.
Copper Money in the Colony of Virginia, 219, 220.
Curious Coins, 231-234.
Delk Family, 65.
Dick, Charles, Library of, 112, 113.
Dinwiddie Family, 67.
Downman Family, 138-141.
Fielding Family, 243-251.
Garnett, Hon. Muscoe Russell, Biographical Sketch of, 17-37; 71-89.
Gwyn Family, 89.
Harrison Family, 82, 83.
Historical and Genealogical Notes, 59-67; 212-214.
Hubard, Bolling, 66.
Hungars Parish Records, 178-181.
Independent Chronicle, Personal Notes From, 113, 114.
Lancaster County Marriages, 176-178.
Lane, Thomas, Will of, 104, 105.
Lawson Family, 237.
Letters: Prof. Nathaniel Beverley Tucker to St. George Tucker, 44-46; John Tyler to Daniel Webster, 172-176; Hugh Blair Grigsby, 213; Horace E. Hayden, 291.
Library of Charles Dick, 112, 113.
Lowry Family, 234, 235.
Marriage Bonds, Lancaster County, 176-178.
Martin, Col. John, Family of, 65.
Middlesex County, Abstracts of Records From, 192-194.
Milby Family, 63.
Northampton County Marriage Bonds, 111, 112.
Personal Notes from the Newspapers, 113-115.
Queries, 68, 292, 293.
Ravenscroft Family, 213.
Roane Family, 194-200; 258-278.
Robinson Family, 181-190.
Robinson and Potter Family Connections, 190-192.
Ruffin Family, 251-258.
St. Stephens Parish Register, (Extracts), 129-137.
The Ship Captain and Selectmen, 232-233.
Silver Spoons at Sabine Hall, 234.
Travis Family, 141-144.
Tucker, Prof. Nathaniel Beverley to St. George Tucker, 44-46.
Tucker, St. George, Election as Professor of Law, 220.

160031

Tyler, John, Letters to Daniel Webster, 172-176; His Bank Vetoes, 227.
Virginia Leadership in the Revolution, 145-164.
Virginia Genealogies, 291, 292.
Walker Family, 59.
Walker-Wray Families, 289-291.
Walker, Col. John's Daughters, 213.
Whig Party, Meaning of, 220-222.
William and Mary College, The Honor System at, 165-171; Statutes of, 212; Dead of the Chapel, 213.
Wise, Henry A., Speech in 1843, 222-231.

GENERAL INDEX.

VOLUME XVIII.

Aberdeen, Lord, 172.
Abingdon Parish Register, 65.
Accomac Co., 108-111.
Adair, ("Robin Adair") 5.
Adams, 66, 113, 132, 145, 149, 152, 153, 154, 157, 160, 163, 164, 171, 172, 218, 229, 274, 295.
Adolphus, 16.
Afford, 195.
Albemarle, Earl, 4.
Allen, 59, 103, 104, 251.
Alexander, 2, 243, 281.
Ambler, 141.
Ames, 63-65.
Anderson, 82, 241, 248.
Anderton, 192.
Andrews, 181, 297.
Andros, 294.
Anne, Queen, 4.
Appleby, 208.
Arlington, Earl of, 121.
Armistead, 55, 59-60, 65, 101, 103, 142, 143, 187, 288.
Armtrading, 181.
Arundel, 118.
Ashburton Treaty, 174, 175.
Asbury, 238.
Ashgrove, 279, 284.
Ashby, 108, 109, 110, 111, 292.
Askew, 194, 195.
Atkins (Attkins) 106, 246, 247.
Atkinson, 254, 294.
Avery, 145, 146, 151, 153, 161.
Back River, 290.
Bacon, 42, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 146, 270, 271.
Bailey, 177, 178, 187.
Baker, 284, 293.
Baldwin, 193, 216.
Ball, 43, 51, 102, 138, 139, 140, 141, 199, 200, 258, 264, 265, 267, 268. 277.
Ballard, 126.
Ballew, 41.
Baltimore, Lady, 118.
Baltimore, Lord, 117.
Bancroft, 154, 160, 218.
Bannister, 254.
Barber, 237.
Barbour, 27, 28, 31, 112, 167.
Barclay, 65.
Barnaby, 179.
Barnes, 62, 94, 111, 199, 200, 261, 262, 271, 285.
Barnett, 281.
Bartlott, 194.
Basye, 248.
Bathurst, 104, 105.
Bayley (Bayly), 72.
Baylor, 261.
Beach, 109, 110, 112.
Beale, 39, 258.
Beam, 99.
Beane, 177.
Beatty, 292.
Becket, 100.
Bell, 81, 111, 179, 227, 241, 242.
Belvard, 49.
Belvoir, 2, 3, 211.
Benham, 283.
Benning, 63.
Bennett, 110.
Berkeley, 115-129, 146, 182, 184.
Bernard, 61, 161, 200.

Berrien, 227.
Berry, 97, 137.
Berryman, 178.
Beverley (Beverly), 61, 101, 102, 181, 192, 281.
Biddle, 229.
Bingham, 256.
Biscoe, 54.
Bishop, 180, 250.
"Black Point," 265.
Blackwell, 137.
Bladen, 210, 211.
Blair, 112, 156, 158.
Blake, 200.
Blakemore, 178.
Bland, 69, 125, 128, 148, 149, 162, 163, 164, 253, 257, 295.
Bland Papers, 69.
Blandford Parish, 290.
Bloodworth, 197.
Blount, 269.
Blythe, 218.
Boatman, 177.
Boerhave, 42.
"Bold Spring," 238.
Bolling (Boling), 66-67, 177, 214, 254.
Bond, 270.
Bonnawell, 178.
Bonnison, 247.
Boodle, 192.
Booker, 237.
Boone, 180, 281.
Bosman, 180.
Boston Harbor, 40.
Bosworth, 195.
Boulware, 183.
Boush, 143.
Botts, 230.
Bowen, 181.
Bowles, 176, 177.
Bowling Green, 274.
Bowman, 195.
Brackett, 114.
Braddock, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 209, 212.
Braddock's Headquarters, 2, 3.
Bragg, 249.
Brandon, 62.
Braxton, 182, 187.
Bready, 115.
Brent, 98.
Bridge, 61.
Bright, 143.
Bristol Parish, 252.
British Calendar of State Papers, 191.
Brock, 101.
Brockenbrough, 62, 84, 182, 199, 200, 257, 271, 277, 278.
Brockwell, 48.
"Broadfield," 54, 239, 251.
Brodnax, 142, 252.
Brodneck, 59.
Brooke, 182, 200, 259, 261, 282.
Brooks (Brookes), 58.
Bronaugh, 96.
Brown (Browne), 52, 60, 103, 104, 144, 177, 193, 217, 243, 252, 253, 254, 280, 293.
Bruce, 2, 202, 203, 204.
Brunson, 242.
Brunswick County Records, 62, 252.
Brush Creek, 109.
Bruton Parish, 105.
Bruton Parish Churchyard, 63.
Bruton Parish Register, 60.
Bryant, 280, 285.
Bryce, 14.
Byrdekirk, 2.
Buchanan, 114.
Buckland, 180.
Buckler, 282.
Buckner, 200, 247, 292.
Buddan, 179.
Burchett, 68.
Burford, 284.
Burke, 151, 183, 204, 237, 287.
Burks, 31.
Burnaby, 151, 164, 232, 233.
Burnham, 61.
Burtock, 195.

Burton, 11, 111.
Burwell, 65, 115, 156, 184, 214, 270, 289.
Bury, (Burry) 179, 180.
Butler, 13, 91, 105, 218, 288.
Bush, 178, 218.
Buttock, 195.
Byfield, 57.
Byrd, 213.
Cabell, 31.
Call, 289, 290.
Calhoun, 25, 33, 45, 217, 221.
Calhoun's *Works*, 221.
Callahan, 108, 109, 111.
Calvert, 118.
Camden, 84.
Cameron, 254, 270.
Camm, 150, 162.
Campbell, 177, 199, 255, 259, 260, 263.
Caperton, 86.
Carleton, Sir, Thomas, 206.
Carlyle (Carlile, Carleils, Cairleil, Carlisle, Caerleol, Karleol), 3, 7, 15, 16, 201-212, 216, 278, 289.
Carpenter, 178.
Carlyle House, 1-17.
Carr, 31, 195.
Carrick, Earl of, 203.
Carrington, 187.
Carruthers, 202, 206, 207, 208.
Carter, 37-44; 47-58; 89-103; 138, 149, 150, 156, 164, 178, 234, 235-251; 270, 292, 293.
Carter's Creek, 65, 270.
Carver, 125.
Cary, 120, 192, 284, 286.
Catalogue, General, 213.
Catherine, Queen, 192.
Cavenaugh, 197.
"Centurion," 4.
Chalmers, 148, 280.
Chamberlain, 296.
Champion, 142.
Chancery Papers, 139, 140, 144.
Chandler, 296.
Chapman, 14, 66, 67.
Charles I., 116, 117, 118, 122, 128, 146.
Charles II., 118, 119, 121, 146.
Chase, 180.
Chatton, 235.
Cheadle, 107.
Chericoke, 187.
Chew, 65, 101.
Chichester, 49, 55, 139, 141.
Chiles, 106-108.
Chilton, 50, 51, 85, 97, 103, 177.
Chinn, 55, 139.
Chipoak's Creek, 141.
Chisman, 127.
Chowning, 185.
Chrickenberger, 250.
Christ Church Parish, 51, 55, 56, 99, 100, 235, 246.
Christian, 63-64; 111, 112, 182.
Churchill, 184, 185, 192.
Cilley, 229.
Clack, 252, 255.
Claggett, 280.
Claiborne, 118, 218, 247, 252, 254, 255.
Clanton, 67.
Clarke, 177, 211, 292.
Claremont, 59.
Clay, 80, 221, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 230.
Claybrook, 72.
Clements, 198, 238.
Clifford, 19.
Clopton, 67, 80, 115.
Coats, 241.
Cochran (Vochran), 78, 270.
Cocke, 143, 252, 253, 254.
Coffield, 247.
"Coggin Point," 253.
Coke, 60, 103-104; 216.
Cook, 62, 180.
Cole, 143.
Coleburn, 109.
Coleman, 101.
Coleridge, 26.
Coles, 137.
Collegian, The, 29, 30, 31.
Collier, 62.

Colonna, 109.
Colson, 101.
Colston, 69, 182.
Colton, 179.
Committee of Safety, 211.
Commons, 297.
"Common Sense," 44, 295.
Congressional Globe, 226, 227.
Congressional Library, 24, 212.
Congress, The, 40.
Conner, 250.
Constitutional Convention, 71.
Conway, (Conaway, Connaway), 48, 49, 52, 55, 56, 57, 137, 140, 178, 213, 245, 246, 250.
Conyers, 243.
Coombs, 227.
Cooper, 6.
Copper Money, 219-220.
Copes, 181.
Corbin, 182, 220.
Cornah, 180.
Cornelius, 177.
Corotoman River, 52, 92, 98, 235.
Cosnahan, 72.
Coulston, 180
Council Chamber, 220.
Coupland, 253.
Coutts, 113.
Cox, 84, 177, 200, 293.
"Cradle of The Republic," 142.
Craighill, 12.
Cralle, 265.
Crawford, 217.
Crew, 180.
Cringer, 114.
Criswell, 49.
Crittenden, 81, 197.
Crocker, 286.
Cromwell, 119, 127.
Crook, 284.
Cropper, 290.
Cross, 113.
Crowley, 254.
Crown Point, 8.
Croxton, 31.
Crozier, 292.
Crutcher, 248.
Culpeper, 116, 121, 211.
Cummings, 50.
Cummins, 270.
Cundiff, 177.
Cunningham, 206.
Curious Coins, 231-232.
Curls, 125.
Curtis, 101, 102, 184, 191, 192, 193.
Cushing, 173.
Custis, 13, 111, 180.
Dahlgreen, 555.
Dale, 115, 292.
Dalton,, 86. 211.
Dameron, 177, 246.
Dandridge, 12, 252.
Daniel, (Daniell) 192, 193, 195, 196.
Darby, 184.
Dartmouth, Lord, 41.
Davenport, 63, 100, 177.
Davies, 212.
Daviess, 247.
Davis, 47, 53, 54, 56, 80, 94, 177, 178, 212, 239 240, 241, 246, 250, 284.
Davy, 194, 195.
Dawson, 69, 100, 212.
de Burgh, Richard, 206.
De Butts, 287.
de Graeme, 202.
De Hass, 12.
De Lancey, 7, 8.
Delaware, Lord, 115, 126.
Delganie, 96.
De Lion, 16.
Delk (Delke), 65-66.
Delony, 252.
Demereil, 176.
Democratic Reader, 72.
Dennie, 248.
Denwood, 180.
Devereux, Earl of Essex, 206.
De Villiers, 4.

Dewberry, 105.
Dewey, 290.
Dicerson, 102.
Dick, 122-113.
Digges, 177, 178.
Dinwiddie, 3, 5, 6, 7, 67, 147, 148, 209, 212, 213.
Dinwiddie *Letters*, 147, 151.
Diston, 105.
Dettengen Parish, 96.
Dix, 267.
Dodson, 144.
Doe, 180.
Doggett, 55, 57, 112, 177.
Doniphan, 144.
Douglass, 172, 289, 205-206.
Dounell, 111.
Dounton, 177.
Downes, 280.
Downing, 109, 112.
Downman, 138, 141.
Dragon Swamp, 125, 271.
Draiton, 180.
Drake, Sir Francis, 206.
Drewry, 68.
Drewry's Bluff, 68.
Dromgoole, 256.
Drummond, 123, 126, 127, 128, 143.
Duer, 281.
Dupuy, 253.
Dulany, 210, 283, 287, 288, 289.
Dunbar, 4, 6.
Dungan, 176.
Dunlop, 185.
Dunmore, 40, 42, 43, 61, 213, 287.
Dunscomb, 114.
Dykeman, 289.
Dykes, 199.
Dyner, 247, 248.
Earle, 229.
Early, 282, 284.
Eaton, 254.
Ecuff, 100.
Eden, 41, 282.
Edgehill, 211.
Edloe, 143.
Edmondson, 279.
Edmunds, 253.
Edmondstone, 279.
Edwards, 55, 56, 93, 180, 253, 254.
Eldridge, 291.
Eliason, 245.
Elizabeth City County Records, 290.
Elizabeth, Queen, 206.
Elligood, 179.
Elliott, 109, 178, 183, 186.
"Elmwood," 18, 20, 22, 27, 28, 30, 33, 78, 80, 86, 87.
"Enfield," 144.
Emerald, 29.
Epperson, 243.
Eskridge, 137.
Evans, 179.
Everard, 290.
"Evergreen," 253.
Everett, 2, 81, 172, 178, 249.
Eversfield, 281.
Ewing, 227, 228, 230.
Fairfax, 2, 3, 10, 15, 16, 209, 210, 211, 279, 283, 288.
Fairfax Register, 253.
Farlow, 127.
Faulkerson, 218.
Faulkner, 174.
Fauntleroy (Fountleroy), 59, 60, 62, 106, 116, 137, 200.
Federal Whigs, 225.
Federal Constitution, 225.
Fenwick, 104.
Ffurs, 179.
Field, 94, 254.
Fielding, (Fieldings, Ffeilden, Fielden), 239, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 251.
Fisher, 191, 213, 214.
Fitzhugh, 182.
Fling, 296.
Flint, 177.
Floyd, 73.
"Fonthill," 20, 23, 78.

Fulching Mill, 246.
Fontaine, 270.
Ford, 148, 191.
Fort Adams, 258.
Fort Duquesne, 3, 8, 11, 13.
Fort Cumberland, 4, 10.
Fort Necessity, 4.
Fort Point Comfort, 290.
Fort Sumter, 82, 215.
Foscoat, 180, 181.
Foster, 250.
Fouchee (Foushee), 48, 200.
"Four Mile Tree," 253, 254.
Fox, 47, 265.
Franklin, 3, 7, 295.
Freneau, 16.
Fry, 3.
Fryes, 244.
Fulton, 217.
Gage, 11.
Galiagan, 144.
Garner, 178.
Garnett (Garnet), 17-37; 71-89; 199, 260, 262, 263, 273.
Garrett, 104, 144.
Garrison, 250.
Gaskins, 137, 248, 249.
Gatewood, 197.
Gatton, 194, 195.
Gay, 288.
General Assembly, 73, 146, 147, 156.
Gentry, 171, 218, 221.
George, 177.
Gibson, 195.
Giles, 61.
Gill, 137.
Ginse, 195.
Glasscock, 138, 141.
Glenn (Glen), 110, 148.
Globe, The, 45.
Gholson, 256.
Gildart, 252.
Gillispie (Gillaspie), 250, 292.
Gilmer, 226.
Goldsmith, 180.
Gilmore, 297.
Gondolat, the, 40, 41.
Gooch, 52.
Goode, 252.
Goodloe, 52, 102, 241, 242.
Goodrich, 213.
Goodridge, 177.
Googe, 94.
Goodwyn (Goodwin), 68.
Gordon, 48, 55, 56, 97, 217, 235, 288.
Graeme, 202.
Graham, 94, 176, 202.
Granger, 179.
Graves, 230, 292.
Gray, 66, 200.
Gray Friar's Church, 204.
Grayson, 257.
Gregg, 288.
Gregory, 66, 283.
Green (Greene), 15, 19, 94, 98, 202.
"Green Branch," 185.
Greenhow (Greenough), 63, 69, 172.
"Green Rock," 236, 237.
Green Spring, 116, 119, 120, 126.
Greenville, 152, 155.
Greenwich Hospital, 4.
Greenwood, 265.
Grey, 179.
Griffin, 62, 111, 181.
Griggs, 50, 236.
Grigsby, 144, 213.
Groves, 242.
Grymes, 182, 184, 186, 187, 191, 220.
Gunston, 234.
Gwynn (Gwyn, Gwin, Gwinn), 60, 61, 62, 244.
Gwinn's Island, (Gwyns) 44.
Hack, 265.
Hadley, 214, 294.
Haggard, 218.
Haile, 267.
Hall, 64, 164, 195, 249, 250.
Halkett, 3, 4, 10.
Hambleton, 222.

Hamilton, 229.
Hamiltonian National Republican Federalists, 229.
Hamlin, 251.
Hammond, 281.
Hampton, 62, 63.
Hampton Creek, 64.
Hancock, 295.
Haney, 176.
Hansford, 127.
"Hansford, A Tale of Bacon's Rebellion," 44.
Harbert, 270.
Hardaway, 68.
Hardaway Mills, 68.
Hardin, 172.
Harding, 129, 130, 131.
Harnister, 195.
Harris, 67, 91, 107, 177, 218, 245, 246, 253.
Harrison, 62-63; 142, 181, 185, 223, 225, 226, 247, 253, 257, 286, 292.
Harmon, 109.
Hart, 153.
Haul, 197.
Harvey, 122, 146.
Harwood, 192, 199, 257, 258, 260, 261, 264, 273, 279.
Hary, 180.
Hawkin, 100, 218.
Hay, 114.
Hayden *Virginia Genealogies*, 59, 61, 138, 139, 265, 291, 292.
Hayne, 129.
Haynie, 55, 97, 129, 130, 293.
Hayner, 96.
Hayes, 180.
Hayward, 254.
Haywood, 294.
Heale, 139, 183.
Hearne, 264.
Heaton, 89.
Heeren, 25.
Heffernan, 184.
Heiskell, 284.
Henley, 103, 104.
Henning, (Hening) 50, 55, 147, 149.
Henry, 145, 149, 150, 152, 154, 160, 162, 164, 257, 265,, 267, 274, 276, 277, 295, 296.
Hepburn, 16.
Herbert, 16, 209, 210, 212, 278, 283, 284, 285.
Hernig, 195.
Herndon, 94, 217.
Hersman, 193.
Heslop, 102.
"Hesse," 65.
Hewick, 182.
Hewitt, 180.
Hickman, 129, 130, 131, 137.
Hicks, 62, 63.
Higginson, 60, 61.
Hildred, 202.
Hill, 112, 179, 246.
Hinden, 179.
Hinman, 180.
Hipkins, 39, 196, 199, 277.
Hobson, 129, 130, 131, 236, 237.
Hoge, 279.
Hog Island, 65.
Hogg, 103.
Hollingsworth, 89.
Holmes, 72. w
Holt, 113, 283.
Hove, 283.
Hopewell, the, 193.
Hopkins, 198, 236.
Hopper, 200.
Hoskins, 114, 252, 276.
Hotten's *Immigrants*, 141.
House of Burgesses, 18, 60, 117, 120, 147, 148, 149, 156, 158, 160, 161.
House of Commons, 10, 152, 153, 155, 159.
House of Delegates, 71, 74, 143.
House of Lords, 159.
Howard, 153.
Howell, 179, 270.
Howl, 106.
Hubbard, 57, 66-67.
Hudson, 179.
Hughes, 115.
Hull, 130, 131.

Humphreys, 185, 193.
Hungars Parish, 178.
Hunt, 112, 210.
Hunter, 18, 19, 20, 29, 30, 33, 71, 74, 78, 84, 87, 279.
Hutington, 182.
Hunton, 49, 50, 51, 99.
Hutchings, 142.
Hutchinson, 160, 161.
Hutton, 287.
Hyde, 285, 288.
Ingle, 118.
Inglis, 59, 60.
Irvine, 254.
Irving, 202, 206.
Irwin, 285.
Isle, 177.
Isle of Wight Records, 66.
Jackson, 45, 217, 221, 223.
James, 52, 111, 177, 235.
James I., 115, 116.
James City County, 141, 143, 213.
James, Duke of York, 128.
James River, 63, 118, 290.
Jameson, 150.
Jamestown, 116, 120, 121, 124, 126, 127, 141, 142, 231.
Jamestown, Kent Co., 231.
Jamey, 84.
Jefferson, 120, 164, 191, 267, 276.
Jeffersonian Democracy, 221.
Jeffryes, 129.
Jennings, 106.
Jerdone, 270.
Johnson, 3, 8, 40, 106, 112, 141, 167, 180, 197, 249.
Johnston (Johnstone), 40, 202, 207, 231.
Jones, 38, 39, 105, 131, 138, 143, 177, 179, 197, 199, 254, 261.
Jordan, 180.
Journal of the Confederate Congress, 85.
Journals of the House of Burgesses of Virginia, 158.
Journals of Virginia Convention, 84.
Joynes, 111.
Judrey, 195.
Judson, 286.
Keith, 289, 290.
Kellam, 64, 65.
Kemp, 193.
Keen, (Keene) 131, 132, 137.
Kendall, 108.
Kenner, 85, 131, 265.
Kent, 54, 177.
Kentucky Gazette, 240.
Keppel, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 212.
Kerr, 209.
Keystone State, 77.
Kinchin, 254.
King, 101, 178, 180, 287.
Kingsmill, 156.
Kingston Parish, 60.
Kinkead, 67.
Kinmount, Lord, 205.
Kindred, 291.
Kirby, 283.
Kirk (Kirke) 54, 99, 116, 293.
Kirkpatrick, 202, 204, 205, 280.
Knickbocker Press, 296.
Knight, 244, 246, 265.
Kunneloe, 180.
Lackie, 200.
Lamon, 217.
Land, 106.
Land Register, 141.
Lane, 104-105; 132.
"Laneville," 182.
Langhorne, 144.
Lancaster County Records, 176-178, 193.
Lamb, 213.
Lambert, 195.
Landon, 193, 195.
Latané, 264, 266, 267, 277.
Lawes, 177.
Lawne's Creek, 65, 66.
Lawrence, 123, 124, 126, 127, 181.
Lawson, 132, 177, 237.
Layton, 249.

Lea, 100.
Lear, 65.
Leary, 280, 285.
Lechmere, 105.
Lee, 2, 3, 15, 59, 60, 120, 155, 158, 159, 162, 198, 211, 212, 217, 247, 267, 295.
Lee's Parish, 248.
Lee's Legion, 15.
Legare, 173.
Leha, 177.
Leigh, 167, 188, 270.
"Letters and Times of the Tylers," 174, 175, 222, 223, 226, 227, 228, 230.
Lewis, 13, 192, 291.
Leonard, 269.
Liberty Bell, 9.
Lightfoot, 252, 255.
Lilly, 184.
"Limekiln," (Lymekiln), 2, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 212.
Lincoln, 80, 83, 85, 215, 216, 217, 218.
Lister, 186.
Little, 286, 287.
Little Meadows, 10.
Littleton, 180.
Lively, 241, 242.
Liverpool, The, 40, 41.
"Locust Grove," 185.
Long, 179.
Longo, 180.
"Long Assembly," 127.
"Long Parliament," 127.
Love, 62, 63, 249.
Lowndes, 210.
Lowry, 98, 234-235.
Lucas, 253.
Luddington, 181.
Ludlow, 119.
Ludwell, 125, 128.
Lukee, 112.
Lundy's Lane, 200.
Lunsford, (Lunceford) 58, 91, 97, 132, 177, 292, 293.
Lyde, 62.
Lyman, 294.
Lynch, 107, 247.
Lyon, 85, 86, 206.
Lynton, 95.
Mackenzie, 174, 175.
Mackrory, 193.
Mackman, 250.
Maclean, 209.
Macon, 113, 275.
Macrae, 285.
Madison, 18, 120, 226, 227, 296.
Major, 179.
Mallocks, 180.
Manchall, 181.
Manly, 286.
Manning, 244.
Mansfield, Lord, 148.
Mantapike, 255.
Manuscript Quaker Records, 108.
Mapp, 112.
Margaret, Princess, 205.
Markham, 68.
"Marlbourne," 253.
Marshall, 18, 102, 114, 179, 227.
Marston Moor, 211.
Martin, 65, 98, 173.
Martyn, 293.
Maryland Historical Society, 231.
Massachusetts Historical Society, 290, 296.
Massie, 100.
Mason, 95, 120, 177, 234, 251, 257, 285.
Mathews (Matthews), 52, 53.
Mattoax, 69.
Maupin, 143.
Mawer, 195.
Maxwells, 202.
May, 195.
"Maycock's," 214.
"Mayfield," 252.
McAlister, (McAllister), 208, 250, 291, 292.
McCarty, 140.
McCauley, 283.
McClernand, 172.
McCormick, 135.

McDonald, 276.
McGehee, 107.
McCulloh, 193.
McKenzie, 114.
McPheeters, 256.
McTire, 50, 177.
Meade, 290.
Meade, *Old Churches and Families of Virginia*, 55, 184.
Mealy, 264.
Meeks, 250.
Mear, (Meares), 109, 195.
Menzies, 135, 208.
Mercer, 11, 18, 112, 162.
Meherin River, 214.
Meridith, (Meredith) 179, 200.
Meriwether, 59, 60, 214.
Metcalf, 104.
Meyers, 96.
Michael, 111, 112.
Michie, 295.
Mickall, 180.
Mickelborough, 59.
Middlemore, 287.
Middlesex County Records, 191, 192-193.
Milby, 63-65.
Miller, 47, 89, 214, 235.
"Mill Necke, ye," 245.
Minor, 33, 53.
Mirabeau, 296.
Mitchell, 49, 216, 246.
Mobjack Bay, 43.
Moncure, 281, 285.
Monday, 250.
Moone, 191, 192.
"Moon's Mount," 181.
Monroe, 18, 120, 218, 257, 265.
Monongahela, the, 4, 10.
Montague, 72, 84, 86, 155, 156, 157, 158.
Morehead, 256.
Morgan, 11, 285.
Moore, 143, 177, 235, 269, 270, 296.
Moorman, 107.
Morris, 6, 7, 8.
"Morven," 16.
Mott, 289.
Mottrom, 265, 277.
Mount Vernon, 2, 3, 5, 14, 15, 211.
Muirhead, 207.
Mulgrave, 211.
Nunes, 179.
Munford, 114, 215, 216.
Murray, 202, 208.
Muscoe, 18, 19, 22.
Narrows, 43.
Nash, 69, 132, 135, 177.
Nation, the, 150.
Navigation Acts, 121.
Neale, (Neal, Neel), 21, 133, 134, 135, 137.
Neck Quarter, 259, 262.
Nelms, 132, 133, 134.
Nelson, 45, 156, 199.
Netherlands, 117.
Newby, 249.
"Newham Paddox," 243.
Newman, 95.
Neville, 287.
Newington, 198, 255, 259, 271, 272, 277.
Newsom, 252.
Newton, 106, 133, 277.
Nicholas, 113, 156, 219, 220, 252.
Nicholson, 65, 191.
Nebuhr, 24.
Nile, 174.
Niles' Register 230.
Noble, 218.
Nock, 109.
Norris, 278, 279.
North Farnham Parish Register, 138, 140.
Northampton County, 111, 112.
Northern Neck, 211, 271, 277.
"Norwich," 4.
Nuthall, 180.
Nutt, 133, 134, 135, 137, 248.
"Oaklands," 236.
Oatlan, 193.
Obert, 191, 193.
Occupatia Creek, 43, 45.

Odard, 202.
"Ohio Company, The," 2.
Old Church, 187.
"Old Dominion, The," 120.
Oldham, 132, 135.
"Old Town," 231.
Oliver, 160.
"Oliver Old School," 30.
Opekankano, 117.
Opie, 132, 135.
Orange Records, 106.
Ordinary Point, 231.
Ordinary Tract, 197.
Orme, 3, 6.
Osborne's, 68.
Otis, 145, 149, 150, 152, 153, 160, 161, 164.
Overwharton Parish, 92, 96, 144, 293.
Overwharton Register, 90, 92, 96.
Pabody, 218.
Page, 40, 59, 126, 182.
Paget, 33.
Paine, (Payne) 141, 177, 193, 292, 295.
Parker, 179.
Parks, 212.
Pamunkey, 125.
Paramson, 193.
Parish of St. George, 53.
Parish of Stepney, 105.
Parson's Causes, 149, 164.
Patent, 67.
"Parties and Patronage in the United States," 222.
Patillo, 62.
"Patrician, The," 204.
Patridge, 160.
Paul, Sir James Balfour, 206.
Peirce (Pierce) 66, 176.
Pendleton, 120, 296.
Perkins, 85, 183, 269.
Perry, 104, 105.
Perrys, 195.
Pell, 105.
Peter's Reports, 229.
Petter, 293.
Peterson, 68.
Petsworth Parish, 196.
Pettus, 100.
Pettyjohn, 179.
Peyton, 61, 95, 112, 293.
Phi Beta Kappa Society, 267.
Phillips, (Philips) 97, 170, 297.
Philipse, 6.
"Plentiful Run," 239, 240.
Pianketank, (Pyanketank) 43, 60, 297.
Pickerell, (Pickrell), 135.
Pickering, 229.
Pickett, 66.
Picton, 80.
Pittman, 247, 248.
Pierre, 3.
Piggotts, 95.
Pinkard, 138, 139.
Pinn, 176.
Piscatoway, 197.
Pocahontas, 115.
Point Comfort, 121.
Pollard, 262, 267.
Porteus, 140.
Potter, 190-191; 192, 193, 286.
Poteet, 242.
Poulson, 285.
Powell (Powel), 180, 214.
Powhatan, 117.
Preston, 276.
Price, 113, 115.
Proudfit, 199, 268.
Pugh, 85.
Putnam Sons, 296.
Pynes, 259.
Quellian, 179.
Queensberry, Earl of, 205.
Queen's Rangers, 188.
Quissenberry, 188.
Radford, 114.
Randle, (Randall) 213, 292.
Randolph, 44, 120, 156, 162, 200, 213, 275, 295.
Ravenscroft, 213 214, 256, 294.
Rawle, 278.

Read, (Reade) 61, 183, 184.
Rectory of North Showberry, 195.
Redding, 144.
Redwood, 279.
Reese, 62.
Rennells, (Reynolds) 66.
Reeves, 247, 250.
Rhett, 284.
Rhodes, 242, 249.
Rice, 136, 137.
Richards, 179.
Richmond Enquirer, 72, 200, 222, 252, 264, 276, 277.
"Richmond Junto," 276.
"Rich Neck," 252.
Ridge, 284.
Rives, 68, 84, 178.
Roane, 194-200; 252, 255, 257, 258, 278.
Robertson, 31, 49, 55, 141, 178, 235, 249, 265.
Robards, 247.
Robin, 179, 180.
Robinson, 9, 56, 59, 61, 156, 158, 161, 178, 179, 181-187; 190-191; 192, 193, 218, 247.
Robson, 192.
Rock Creek, 13.
Rodes, 243.
Rodgers, 135, 136.
Roebuck, The, 40.
Rogers, 66, 97, 98, 241.
Rolfe, 115.
Rollins, 22.
"Rosegill," 182.
Ross, 184.
Rowe, 259.
Rowland, 115, 237.
Rowzee, 19.
Roy, 18.
Ruffin, 25, 143, 199, 200, 251-258; 261, 270, 273, 277.
Ruggles, 160.
Russell, 19, 220.
"Sabine Hall," 234.
Sanders, 180.
Sanderson, 249, 287.
Sandy Point, 255.
"Sandy River," 236.
Sandys, 115.
Saterwhite, 235.
Savage, 180, 294.
Sayre, 186.
Scarbrough, 193.
Seaton, 186.
Second Supply, 138.
Schyn, 179.
Scott, 16, 21, 31, 114, 167, 268, 282.
Selden, (Seldon) 49, 55, 276.
Sergeant, 227.
Settle, 178.
Seward, 75, 253.
Shackleford, 200.
Shands, 68.
Shakspeare, 21.
Shapleigh, 136.
Sharpe, (Sharpe) 7, 8, 102, 218.
Sheardoch, 176.
Shearman, 177.
"Sherwood Forest," 173.
Sheffield, 211.
Shepherd, (Shephard, Sheppard) 62, 193.
Shields, 114.
Shirley, 6, 7, 8.
"Shoal Bay," 253, 254.
Short, 195.
Sidney, 206.
Simmons, 253.
Simpson, 293.
Skipwith, 114, 253.
Skuller, 193.
Smallwood, 144.
Smith, (Smyth) 36, 63, 65, 105, 111, 126, 136, 140, 243, 248, 258, 282, 283.
Smiths, 262.
Smither, 50, 178, 180, 192, 193, 200, 218.
Snead, 112.
Snowden, 278, 283.
Southall, 60, 143.
Southampton, The, 65.

Southern Historical Society Papers, 87.
Southern Literary Messenger, 25, 30, 165.
Southern Magazine, 25.
South Farnham Parish, 196.
Southern and Western Literary Messenger and Review, The, 33.
Spann, (Span) 55, 136.
Spears, 109, 110.
Spectator, The, 173.
Spence, 207.
Spencer, 1, 173, 174, 175, 176, 179, 201, 231, 265, 277, 288.
"Spencer Hall," 288.
Spicer, 192.
Spilman, 177.
Spotswood, 47, 147.
Spotswood Letters, 147.
"Spring Garden," 276.
"Spy, The," 6.
St. George's Parish, 101, 110.
St. John's Parish, 186.
St. Mary White Chapel Parish, 58.
St. Stephen's Parish Register, 129-137; 237, 250, 251, 258, 259.
St. Thomas Hospital, 105.
Stafford, 61.
Stamp Act, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 160, 161, 162, 164.
Stamper, 183.
Stamps, 98.
Stanard, 167, 191, 237.
Stanley, 180.
Stanley Hundred, 65.
Staples, 84.
Starke, (Stark) 98, 114, 213, 214, 294, 295.
Starling, 180.
Stephens, 52, 80, 116, 171, 218, 221.
Steptoe, 182.
State Rights, 221, 222.
Stevens, 52, 53, 80, 100, 101, 102, 114.
Stewart, 114, 214.
Stiff, 184.
Stith, 66, 104, 214, 291.
Stockley, 180.
Storry, 243.
Streator, (Streeter) 247.
Strother, 93.
Stuart, 118, 128, 229.
Sturdy, 293.
Sullivan, Sullivatn) 177, 198.
Surry County Records, 142.
Susquehannocks, 123.
Sutton, 102.
Stradford, 56.
State Library, 200, 212.
Stubbs, 63.
"Summer Hill," 270.
Summers, 216.
Sumner, 297.
Sutton, 177, 248.
Swaine, 177.
Swan, 85.
Swann Point, 254.
"Sweet Hall," (Tuscoman) 252, 255.
Sydnor, 140.
Symes, 141.
"Syren," 4.
Tabb, 61.
Taliaferro, 112.
Tapp, 94.
Tapscott, 177.
Tarleton, 11.
Tate, 143, 265.
Tayloe, 49, 55, 62, 182, 270.
Taylor, 12, 13, 26, 103, 184, 199, 218, 270, 274, 280, 290.
Tazewell, 274.
Teague, 180.
Temple, 184, 189.
Terrell, 106, 107.
Terry, 67.
Thacker, (Thacher) 93, 153, 192.
Thackeray, 11, 152.
Ther, 181.
Thergettle, 179.
Thames, 296.
Thomas, 68, 101, 102, 192, 241, 242, 288.
Thompson, 29, 236, 247, 249, 254, 257.

Thornton, 136, 265.
Thorpe, 269.
Thweatt, 68.
Timblin, 144.
Times-Dispatch, 63, 296.
Timson's Neck, 143.
Tindale, 218.
Tillingham, 195.
Toles, 176.
Tomlin, 191, 192, 213.
Towles, 97, 177.
Townshend, 6.
Torthorwald, ("Totherworld,") 2, 16.
Torthorwald Church, 204.
Torthorwald, Lord, 205.
Townes, 247.
Townsend, 179, 181.
Toye, 61.
Trabue, 247.
Tracey, 282.
Travers, 138.
Travis, 141-144; 253.
Travis' Neck, 143.
"Tree Hill," 276, 277.
Tucker, 24, 26, 29, 31, 32, 44-46; 142, 165, 166, 167, 220, 290.
Turnbull, 254.
Turner, 61, 180, 195.
Two Penny Act, 147, 149, 150.
Tyler, 81, 153, 163, 164, 172-176; 217, 222, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 257.
Union, The, 36.
University of Virginia, 72.
Upington, 195.
"Uppowoc," 255, 270, 271, 273, 277.
Upshaw, 196, 198, 199, 258, 264, 266,, 270, 273.
Upshur, 63, 111, 196, 258, 270, 271, 273, 277.
United States Bank, 226, 227, 228.
Valandingham, (Valendingham) 135, 136, 137.
Van Buren, 218, 223, 225, 226.
Van Doren, 289.
Vansalt, 180.
Vass, 181, 197.
Vaux, (Vaus, Vause), 190, 191, 193, 203.
Vawter, 79.
"Vernon Borsay," 226.
Vines, 181.
Virginia Gazette, 65, 114, 155, 213, 219, 240.
Virginia Independent Chronicle, 113.
Virgina Magazine of History and Biography, 12, 59, 61, 66, 154, 156, 158, 162, 181, 183, 190, 194, 213, 214, 237, 239, 244, 251, 257, 267, 271.
Waddell, 49, 56.
Waddelow, 180.
Waggaman, 179.
Wainhouse, 112.
Wake, 184.
Wakefield, 62.
Walford, 180.
Walker, 59, 211, 213, 254, 289-391.
Walklate, 271.
Wallace, 178.
Waller, 13, 143, 144, 292.
Walley, 179, 286.
Walsingham, Sir Francis, 206.
Waltham, 192.
Waltheof, 201.
Wamsley, 95.
Wardrope, 10.
Ward, 177.
Warden, 275.
Ware, 180.
Ware Parish, 60.
Warren, 247.
Warwick County, 178.
Washington, 2, 3, 4, 6, 7, 9, 10, 11, 13, 14, 15, 77, 115, 120, 139, 145, 152, 173, 211, 212, 217, 265, 277.
Washington Madisonian, 228.
Watson, 49, 110, 112.
Watkins, 243, 247, 251.
Watts, 31.
Weaver, 176, 177.
Webb, 177.
Webster, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 221, 225, 227, 228, 230.
Wedderburne, 10.

Weeks, (Weekes) 193.
Wellingborow, 195.
Welby, 287.
Welsh, 207.
Wertenbaker, 295, 296.
West 66, 121.
Whale, 49.
Wheatly, 179.
Whig Party, 220-222.
Wheeler, 52, 53.
Whitaker, 192.
White, 99, 182, 200, 237, 254.
White Chapel Parish, 58, 95, 97.
Whitehall, 195.
Whitehead, 178.
Whiting, 16, 61, 183, 184, 210, 212, 285, 286, 288, 289.
Whittington, 179.
Whyte, 282.
Wickham, 275.
"Wicomico Hall," 245.
Willcocks, 179.
Wilford, 127.
Wilkins, 265.
Wilkison, 179.
William, King, 202.
Williams, 48, 144, 197, 294.
Williamson, 235.
Williamsburg, (Middle Plantation), 5, 45, 55, 60, 63, 72, 105, 113, 114, 125, 139, 141, 143, 144, 155, 156, 158, 162, 183, 186, 212, 214, 220, 234, 275.
William and Mary College, 18, 44, 64, 161, 165-171; 185, 186, 191, 212, 213, 214, 215, 220, 267, 276.
William and Mary College Quarterly, 18, 47, 60, 61, 65, 66, 67, 69, 104, 105, 112, 138, 139, 140, 141 142, 150, 162, 164, 175, 184, 216, 231, 241, 265, 270, 277, 289, 290.
William and Mary College Library, 212.
William and Mary College Chapel, 213.
Willis, 108, 115.
Wilkin, 112.
Wilmot, 36.
Wilson, 67.
Wills' Creek, 4.
Windey, 180.
Wirt, 149, 161, 274.
Winslow, 240, 241.
Wise, 222-231.
Wise, *"Seven Decades of the Union,"* 222.
Wiseman, 193.
Withington, 104.
Wood, 192, 249, 268, 269, 270.
Woodson, 107.
Woodward, 200.
Wolfe, 6, 15, 211.
Wolsey, 128.
Wordsworth, 27.
Wormeley, 136, 181, 182, 192, 193.
Worseley, 194, 195.
Worthington, 148.
Wray, 289-291.
Wright, 49, 87, 279.
Wyatt, 137, 183, 185, 218.
Wythe, 156, 159, 162, 214, 220, 290.
Yapp, 177, 293.
Yates, 59, 184.
Yeardley, 63, 115.
York County, 60, 63, 143.
York County Records, 294.
York, Duke of, 128.
York River, 123, 143.
Yorktown, 255, 270, 272.
Young, 110, 207, 208.
Zimmerman, 94.

Vol. XVIII., No. 1. July, 1909

William and Mary

College Quarterly

Historical · Magazine.

Editor: Lyon G. Tyler, M. A., L L. D.,
President of William and Mary College.
William and Mary College, Williamsburg, Va.

Copy of this Number, $1.00. $3.00 Per Year
[Entered as second-class matter at the Post Office in Williamsburg.]

William and Mary College

Quarterly Historical Magazine.

VOL. XVIII. JULY, 1909. No. 1

CONTENTS.

The Carlyle House and its Association—Braddock's Headquarters—Here the Colonial Governors Met in Council, April, 1755. 1

Biographical Sketch of Hon. Muscoe Russell Hunter Garnett, of Essex County, Virginia. 17

Diary of Col. Landon Carter, ... 37

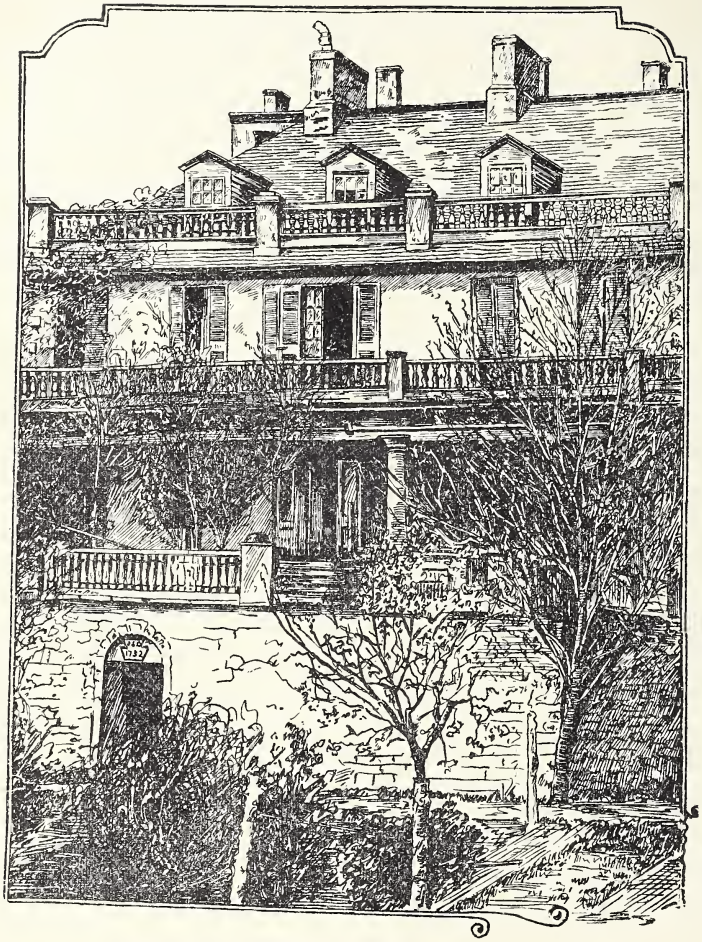
Prof. Nathaniel Beverley Tucker to St. George Tucker, ... 44

Carter Geneology, ... 47

Historical and Genealogical Notes, ... 59

Querries, ... 68

Errors, ... 69



THE CARLYLE HOUSE 1752.

William and Mary College
Quarterly Historical Magazine.

Vol. XVIII. JULY, 1909 No. 1.

THE CARYLE HOUSE AND ITS ASSOCIATIONS—BRADDOCK'S HEADQUARTERS—HERE THE COLONIAL GOVERNORS MET IN COUNCIL, APRIL, 1755.

By Richard Henry Spencer.

To the student of history and biography, particularly of the Colonial period, everything connected with the stirring events of those days, is invested with a peculiar charm. There are a great many historic houses of the Revolution which are well known, but the Colonial houses with their earlier history, are none the less interesting because so little has been written about them or their owners.

In this country, with its spirit of progress and the desire for that which is new, we have levelled to the earth many of its old landmarks, and we are still continuing to do so.

We have no embattled castles telling of feudal wars and imprisoned enemies, or ancient abbeys with their massive towers, vaulted domes, monuments and effigies, armorial encaustic tiles and beautiful chantry chapels, to thrill us with wonder and delight and to remind us of the grandeur and splendor of the past, but we have a few old Colonial churches and houses left, abounding in sacred memories, in which important events have taken place, and these should be preserved from the ravages of time and the ruthless hand of the destroyer. These shrines of the nation, unless cared for, will pass rapidly into ruin and decay and soon become only a memory.

Among them the "Carlyle House," in Alexandria, Virginia, built by Colonel John Carlyle twenty-four years before the Revolution, and since generally known as "Braddock's Headquarters," is one of the most interesting on account of its association with the historic past.

He was born in Annandale, Dumfriesshire, Scotland, the 6th of February, 1720, the son of Dr. William Carlyle of the Torthorwald, Brydekirk and Limekilns branches of the family, who were descended from Sir William Carlile and his wife Margaret Bruce, the sister of King Robert I. of Scotland.

Coming to America about the year 1740, and settling first at Dumfries, Virginia, he was one of the incorporators in 1748, of the town of Alexandria, with Thomas Lord Fairfax, Honorable William Fairfax of Belvoir, George William Fairfax, Lawrence Washington of Mount Vernon, John Alexander, Gerard Alexander, Philip Alexander and others. He was also one of the most active members with George William Fairfax, Lawrence Washington, Augustine Washington and others of "The Ohio Company," which was formed to secure a share of the trade with the Indians of that region, as well as to establish a colony or colonies therein. Hon. Thomas Lee, President of the Council of Virginia, whose sons Richard Henry Lee and Francis Lightfoot Lee were afterwards two of the Signers of the Declaration of Independence, took the lead in the management of the affairs of the company, but upon his death Lawrence Washington was chosen as his successor. A few families were settled under the auspices of the company, but the French and Indian wars finally caused a total suspension of operations.

Edward Everett in his "Life of George Washington," says, "Out of this germ of private enterprise grew the Seven Years' war, and by no doubtful chain of cause and effect, the war of American Independence."

The "Carlyle House" is still in a good state of preservation and ought to be regarded as one of the most historic houses in America. It is situated at the corner of Fairfax and Cameron Streets. On what is called the east front—that por-

GENERAL EDWARD BRADDOCK

From Passano's Maryland. Stories from Her History.

tion facing the Potomac River, from which a fine view of the house can be obtained—is a door with a keystone over it, in which are cut the letters "J. S. C.," and underneath them the figures "1752," showing the year that John Carlyle built the house, the letter "S," being for his wife Sarah, the second daughter of Honorable William Fairfax of Belvoir, her eldest sister Anne, being then the wife of Lawrence Washington of Mount Vernon, the half brother of George Washington. The "Carlyle House" is said to have been built upon a stone fort, supposed to have been erected by the very earliest settlers, as a defense against the Indians, the old fort being turned into a cellar, and above it the mansion was reared. This square, well built house was once surrounded by a lawn sloping to the river's edge, and shaded by lofty trees, but it is now hemmed in, the City having grown up around it. It is usually spoken of as "Braddock's Headquarters," from the fact that General Edward Braddock and his aid-de-camp Captain Robert Orme were the guests of Colonel Carlyle in March and April 1755, and the five Colonial Governors met here in Council to concert measures for the campaign against the French and just before Braddock started on his disastrous expedition to Fort Duquesne. It was here that General Braddock first met the youthful Washington, whom he had already invited to become a member of his military family. And here also were Benjamin Franklin, Richard Henry Lee, Colonel William Johnson, Commodore Keppel, Sir Peter Halkett, once a Member of Parliament, but then in the army, and many of the British military and naval officers then in Alexandria.

In October 1753, Governor Robert Dinwiddie of Virginia, sent George Washington, on a mission to La Gardeur de Saint Pierre, the French Commandant of the Fort on the upper Ohio River, to demand an evacuation of the territory, but his mission was unsuccessful. Troops were then ordered to be raised at once under the command of Colonel Joshua Fry and Lieutenant Colonel George Washington, and on the 26th of January 1754, Governor Dinwiddie appointed John Carlyle, Major and Commissary of the Virginia forces.

The campaign, however, of that year was unsuccessful, ending in July, in the surrender by Colonel Washington of Fort Necessity to M. Coulon de Villiers.

After this unfortunate affair, the English Government determined to send over two Regiments of Infantry of about five hundred men each, the 44th under Colonel Sir Peter Halkett and the 48th under Colonel Thomas Dunbar.

On the 24th of November 1754, Major General Edward Braddock[1] was appointed "General & Commander of all & singular our Troops & Forces, Yt are now in North America & Yt shall be sent or rais'd there to vindicate our just Rights & Possessions in those Parts."

A fort at Wills's Creek was erected and named Fort Cumberland, in honor of the Duke of Cumberland, Captain General of the British Army, and where now stands the flourishing City of Cumberland, Maryland.

General Braddock sailed the 24th of December 1754, on board the "Norwich," accompanied by the famous "Centurion," whose figure head adorns Greenwich Hospital to-day, the flagship of Commodore Augustus Keppel, and the "Syren," followed a little later by the transports, ordinance ships and convoys.

The Honorable Augustus Keppel (1725-86), who commanded the little squadron, second son of William Anne Keppel, 2nd Earl of Albemarle, for whom Queen Anne stood godmother in person, and thence his second name, entered the Navy and became eminent as Admiral Keppel. His father was Governor-in-Chief of Virginia (which he never visited) for seventeen years and until his death the 22nd of December 1754, just two days before the squadron sailed for Virginia.

---

[1] Edward Braddock born in 1695, son of Major General Edward Braddock, entered the army as an Ensign in the Coldstream Guards 14th. October 1710. Lieutenant Colonel 21st. November 1745. Major General 29th. March 1754, and 24th. September, Commander in chief of his Majestys' Forces in America.

He was fatally wounded at the engagement on the Monongahela, 9th. July 1755, and died four days later.

His second sister Lady Caroline Keppel married in 1758, Robert Adair, for whom she wrote before her marriage to him, that beautiful ballad "Robin Adair," that was destined to become familiar through the length and breadth of the civilized world.

The inhabitants of the colonies of Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania eagerly looked forward to the arrival of General Braddock and his army, and to the ultimate defeat of the French. Expressions of popular pleasure were frequent and the poets of the day were inspired to tune their joyful lyres to strains like these.

"Breathe, breathe, ye winds, rise, rise, ye gentle gales;
Swell the ship's canvass, and expand her sails!
Ye sea-green Nymphs, the royal vessel deign
To guide propitious o'er the liquid main;
Freighted with wealth, for noble ends designed
(So willed great George, and so the Fates inclined.)
The ponderous Cannon o'er the surges sleep;
The flaming Muskets swim the raging deep:
The mur'drous Swords, concealed in scabbards, sail:
And pointed Bayonets partake the gale;
Ah! swiftly waft her to the longing shore;
In safety land her, and we ask no more!"

On the 20th of February 1755, General Braddock arrived at Hampton Roads, and immediately went to Williamsburg, where Commodore Keppel agreed to meet him, to consult with Governor Dinwiddie.

By the middle of March the entire fleet had arrived and proceeded up the Chesapeake Bay and up the Potomac River, passing by Mount Vernon, to Alexandria. General Braddock remained in Williamsburg planning with Governor Dinwiddie preparations for the approaching campaign.

On the 10th of March, General Braddock from Williamsburg, wrote to the Governors of Massachusetts, New York and Pennsylvania requesting them to meet him in Annapolis, Maryland, the beginning of April, for consultation and to settle upon a plan of operations, and urging on them the establishment of a common fund for defraying in part the expenses of the expedition.

On the 26th of March, accompanied by Governor Dinwiddie and Commodore Keppel, he arrived in Alexandria, and made his headquarters at the "Carlyle House," all the forces having reached there by that time, where they were encamped. The next day he announced the appointment of Captain Robert Orme[1] of the Coldstream Regiment of Guards and Captain Roger Morris[2] of Colonel Dunbar'*s Regiment of Foot, as his aids-de-camp; and on the 31st, General Braddock reviewed the forces, in the presence of Governor Dinwiddie and Commodore Keppel.

On the 3rd of April, General Braddock, Commodore Keppel, Governor Dinwiddie, Captain Orme and William Shirley, Esqr., went to Annapolis, where they were the guests of

---

[1] Robert Orme of Devonshire, England, entered the army as an Ensign in the 35th Regiment of Foot, and in 1745 exchanged into the Coldstream Guards. Accompanying Braddock he served as aid-de-camp, and was wounded with him. He returned to England the same year and in October, 1756, resigned his commission, and married the Hon. Audrey Townshend, only daughter of Charles Viscount Townshend, sister of Lieutenant Colonel Roger Townshend who fell at Ticonderoga in 1759, and of George, afterwards 1st Marquis Townshend, who fought with the victorious Wolfe on the Plains of Abraham the same year, and succeeded him in command after the capture of Quebec, which surrendered to him. Captain Orme was a great favorite of General Braddock's; he made a most favorable impression on all whom he encountered, and he and Washington became warm friends. The day he sailed for England, he wrote to Colonel Washington, as follows: "Nantasket Bay, Nov. 10, 1755. My Dear Friend, If you see Mr. Carlyle tell him of my Surprise at his not sending the Box of Books and Maps which was left in my Bed Chamber (Carlyle House) and which he has not sent as it by Accident was left out of the List. Pray let him send it directed to me in Hollis Street, near Cavendish Square, London. Write to me often and assure me of your friendship, as I have the greatest Pleasure in telling you, I am, Dr. George, Yr affectionate Friend, Rob. Orme."

[2] Roger Morris was born in England. Accompanied Braddock as one of his aids-de-camp. He married in 1758 Mary Philipse of New York, a great heiress, who is said to have been very much admired by Washington and whose character is so beautifully drawn by Cooper in "The Spy." She died in England at the age of ninety-six.

COMMODORE AUGUSTUS KEPPEL.

Governor Sharpe until the 7th, but owing to the absence of Governor Shirley and Lieutenant Governors De Lancey and Morris, the Council was postponed to the 14th, the place of meeting being changed to Alexandria. On the 11th and 12th, the three Governors, with "a great number of other gentlemen of distinction," among them Benjamin Franklin, arrived at Annapolis and with Governor Sharpe proceeded to Alexandria.

On Monday, the 14th of April 1755, and the two following days, General Braddock and Commodore Keppel held a Council at the "Carlyle House," through the courtesy of its owner Colonel John Carlyle, with the Governors of five colonies concerning plans for the proposed hostilities of the English against the French and Indian allies along the Ohio and St. Lawrence Rivers and concerted measures for the united action of the Northern and Middle Colonies. Colonel Washington met the members of the Council during their stay in Alexandria, all of whom received him very cordially.

"There were present at the Council, His Excellency Edward Braddock, Esq^{r}., General & Commander in Chief of his Majesty's Forces in North America. The Hon^{ble} Augustus Keppel, Esq^{r}., Commander in Chief of his Majesty's Ships and Vessels in North America. The Hon^{ble} William Shirley,[1] Esq^{r}. The Hon^{ble} Robert Dinwiddie,[2] Esq^{r}. The Hon^{ble} James De Lancey,[3] Esq^{r}. The Hon^{ble} Horatio Sharpe,[4] Esq^{r}.

---

[1] Hon. William Shirley, born in Preston, Sussex, England, in 1693. Studied law and came to Boston, Mass. to live in 1734. Governor of Massachusetts 1741-56. He died 24th. March 1771.

[2] Hon. Robert Dinwiddie, born in Scotland in 1693, Collector of Customs in Bermuda in 1727. Lieutenant Governor of Virginia, 1751-58. He died in England 1st. August 1770.

[3] Hon. James DeLancey, son of a Huguenot emigrant from Caen, Normandy. Born in New York City, 27th. November 1703. Lieutenant Governor of New York 1753-55. He died 2nd. August 1760.

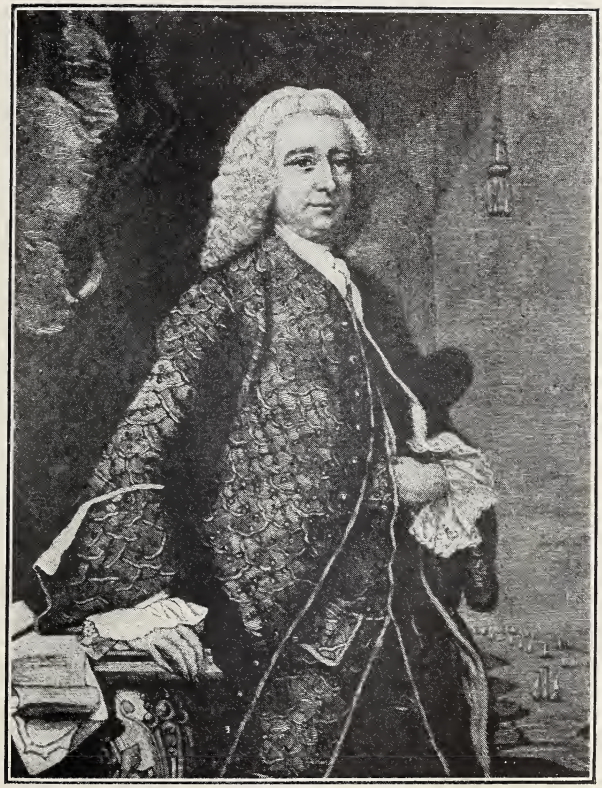
[4] Hon. Horatio Sharpe born in England. In early life he was an officer in the British Army. Proprietary Governor of Maryland 1753-68. He died 9th November 1790.

The Hon^ble Robert Hunter Morris,[5] Esq^r. and William Shirley Esq^r., Secretary."

"The General's Commission having been read and the Articles of his Instructions from his Majesty relating to a common Fund to be established in the Colonies for carrying on the services under the General's direction, and also the article relating to the measures to be taken for engaging the Indians in his Majesty's interest," the members of the Council agreed upon a plan of operations and arranged the details. General Braddock proposed to proceed in person against Fort Duquesne, while Governor Shirley was to command an expedition against Niagara and Colonel William Johnson (who was in Alexandria at the time) one against Crown Point. After the plans of the campaigns had been arranged the Governors in Council, on the subject of the common Fund proposed, "gave it as their unanimous opinion that such a Fund can never be established in the Colonies without the aid of Parliament." They likewise declared "that having found it impracticable to obtain in their respective governments, their proportions expected by his Majesty towards defraying the expense of his service in North America, that they were unanimously of opinion that it should be proposed to his Majesty's Ministers to find out some method of compelling them to do it, and of assessing the several Governments in proportion to their respective abilities, their shares of the whole money already furnished and which it shall be thought proper for them further to furnish towards the General expense of his service."

Governor Shirley, Lieutenant Governors De Lancey and Morris remained in Alexandria until the 17th, when they returned to Annapolis with Governor Sharpe, whose hospitality they enjoyed for several days, when they and the gentlemen who accompanied them, went over the Chesapeake Bay on their return to their respective governments and homes. When

[5] Hon. Robert Hunter Morris, son of Hon. Lewis Morris Governor of New Jersey. Born in Morrisania, New York about 1700. Lieutenant Governor of Pennsylvania 1754-56. He died 20th. February 1764.



GOVERNOR WILLIAM SHIRLEY

they arrived in Philadelphia they were received with every demonstration of joy. "At their entering the City, they were complimented with a Peal of the New Sett of eight bells in Christ Church steeple. They were likewise saluted with a Round of Twenty one brass guns." These eight bells pealed forth twenty one years afterwards, with the Liberty Bell, to announce the signing of the Declaration of Independence. The chime of bells is still in the belfry of old historic Christ Church steeple and are rung every Sunday in "ye ancient manner," as they were rung when President Washington and the Revolutionary heroes worshipped there in the long ago, and in July 1908, the same old Liberty Bell, on a carefully guarded truck and partly buried in straw, was shown in Philadelphia's great historical pageant just as it was hurried away, with the chimes of Christ Church, in a hay wagon to Allentown, Pa., for safekeeping in 1777.

After the adjournment of the Council, General Braddock wrote from the "Carlyle House," on April 19, 1755, to Sir Thomas Robinson, one of his Majesty's Secretaries of State, as follows: "The copy inclosed will acquaint you of the different subjects that have been examined in Council, and what I brought upon the carpet at this interview which I have had with the Governors. * * * You will be sufficiently informed, Sir, by the minutes of the Council, which I send you, of the impossibility of obtaining from several colonies the establishment of a general fund agreeable to his Majesty's instructions, and to the letters you have directed to me for several Governors. * * * I cannot but take the liberty to represent to you the necessity of laying a tax upon all his Majesty's dominions in America, agreeably to the result of Council, for reimbursing the great sums that must be advanced for the service and interest of the colonies in this important crisis."

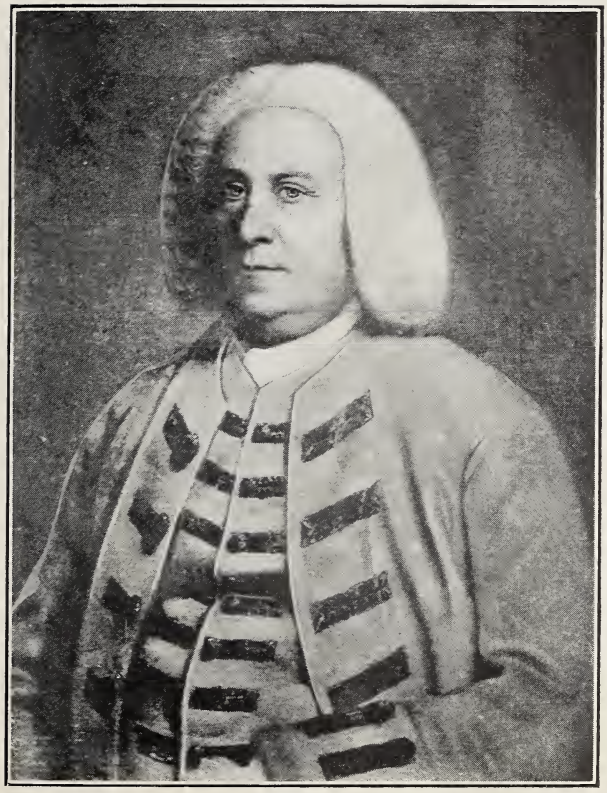
This was the first suggestion by British officials in Council, for taxing the American Colonies—a project which ended in their independence.

In the meantime, however, it had been decided to march the troops at once from Alexandria in two divisions, accordingly General Braddock, on his return from Annapolis on the 7th of April, Ordered, "That all Departments for Duty of every nature whatever are to parade at the Grand Parade and to march from thence." These were stirring times in the little town, meeting of the Royal Governors, many dinner parties and much ceremony.

On the 8th, the Grand Parade took place, and General Braddock, in the presence of a large and distinguished assembly of ladies and gentlemen, reviewed the troops, British and Provincial, of which reference is made by Colonel Washington, in a humorous letter to Mrs. George William Fairfax, dated Fort Cumberland, May 14, 1755. "I have at last with great pains and difficulty discovered the reason why Mrs. Wardrope is a greater favorite of General Braddock than Mrs. F———x, and met with more respect at the review in Alexandria. The cause I shall communicate, after having rallied you upon neglecting the means which produced the effect. And what do you think they were? Why, nothing less, I assure you, than a present of delicious cake and potted wood-cocks, which so affected the palate as to leave a deep impression upon the hearts of *all* who tasted of them. How then, could the General do otherwise than admire, not only the charm, but the politeness of this lady."

Between the 8th and the 18th days of April, the two divisions started on their march to Fort Cumberland, and by the 18th of June, General Braddock with his whole force of about two thousand, one hundred and fifty men, had reached the Little Meadows, when it was decided to move forward with a detachment under the command of General Braddock in person, Sir Peter Halkett[1] acting as Brigadier, Lieutenant

[1] Sir Peter Halkett born in Scotland in 1695. He was the son of Sir Peter Wedderburne, who marrying the heiress of the ancient family of Halkett assumed her name. In 1734, he was in the House of Commons. Colonel of the 44th. Regiment of Foot 1751. His son James was killed with him in the battle of the Monongahela, 9th. July 1755.



GOVERNOR ROBERT DINWIDDIE.

Colonels Burton and Gage, with a little over twelve hundred men and twelve pieces of cannon.

On the 8th of July, they reached the fatal Monongahela River, where Colonel Washington, who had been ill, rejoined General Braddock as his aid-de-camp.

On the 9th, Lieutenant Gage with about four hundred men was ordered to advance early in the morning. By one o'clock the entire army had crossed the river the second time, at a point about seven miles from Fort Duquesne, when the advance guard was attacked by a body of French and Indians, concealed behind rocks and trees. The circumstances attending the disastrous defeat and the dreadful slaughter on that day, is too generally known to require a detailed account.

With Braddock on that beautiful, but fateful summer day, there were five young men, all of whom afterwards gained renown in the Revolutionary war—Gage commander of the British Troops at Bunker Hill; Gates victor at Saratoga; Mercer killed at Princeton; Morgan who defeated Tarleton at the Cowpens, and last but not least George Washington.

Thackeray, in his novel, "The Virginians," gives a spirited account of Braddock's defeat and refers to the marvelous rapidity with which tidings of the disaster were circulated, in Eastern Virginia.

"The house negroes, in their midnight gallops about the country, in search of junketing or sweethearts, brought and spread news over amazingly wide districts. They had a curious knowledge of the incidents of the march for a fortnight at least after its commencement. * * * But on the 10th of July, a vast and sudden gloom spread over the province. A look of terror and doubt seemed to fall upon every face. Affrighted negroes wistfully eyed their masters and retired; and hummed and whispered with one another. The fiddles ceased in the quarters; the song and laugh of those cheery black folk were hushed. Right and left, everybody's servants were on the gallop for news. The country taverns were thronged with horsemen, who drank and cursed and brawled at the bars, each bringing his gloomy story. The

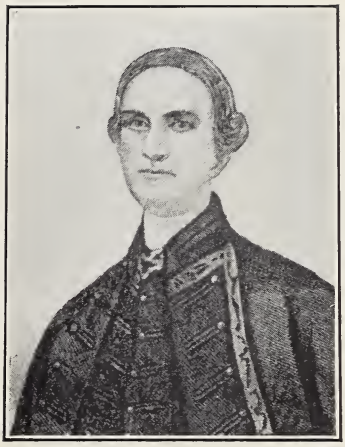
army had been surprised. The troops had fallen into an ambuscade, and had been cut up almost to a man. All the officers were taken down by the French marksmen and savages. The General had been wounded and carried off the field in his sash. Four days afterwards the report was that he was dead, and scalped by a French Indian."

The news of Braddock's defeat spread consternation in the colonies, and in England it was received with mingled feelings of regret and amusement. Regret at the great sacrifice of human life, and the loss, for the time being, of the territory on the Ohio River and its tributaries, and amusement at the inglorious ending of what was expected to have been a brilliant campaign, expressing itself in such lines as these from the Gentlemen's Magazine for September 1755.

"Ah! *Braddock,* why did you persuade
To stand and fight each recreant blade,
That left thee in the wood?

They knew that those who run away,
Might live to fight another day,
But all must die that stood."

It is interesting to note, that the sash worn by General Braddock and in which he was carried from the field, is still in existence, the history of which is thus graphically told by the late General William Price Craighill, U. S. A., in the West Virginia Historical Magazine, July 1902. "I saw this sash in Winchester, Virginia, several years ago, through the courtesy of Mrs. Betty Taylor Dandridge. She had received it from her father General Zachary Taylor, who died as President of the United States. The sash is very large and made of red silk. It has on it the date of 1707. The stains of blood on it are distinctly visible. The report of De Haas, (History of the early settlement and Indian Wars of Western Virginia,) is that in 1846, 'a gentleman of New Orleans' had the sash. His wish was that it should be presented to the soldier who was most distinguished in the 'recent campaign' on the Rio Grande. Thus it came into the possession of General Taylor after his victories at Buena Vista, Resaca de la Palma and



GOVERNOR HORATIO SHARPE

From Passano's Maryland. Stories from Her History.

Monterey. After prolonged and diligent search I ascertained that the sash passed into the hands of General Washington at the death of Braddock in 1755. From him Nellie Custis received it. She became Mrs. Lawrence Lewis, and one of her daughters (the eldest Eleanor Park Lewis) married Colonel E. G. W. Butler of Louisiana, and he was 'the gentleman of New Orleans,' who presented the sash to General Taylor."

This famous sash, now over two hundred years old, is still preserved with jealous care. It is a singular coincidence that General Taylor died in 1850, on the anniversary of the defeat of General Braddock.

It is of more than passing interest to add, that on the 10th of November, 1907, the Society of Colonial Wars, in the District of Columbia, placed a "boulder" on the sacred grounds of the Cathedral Church of Saint Peter and Saint Paul, at Mount St. Alban, Washington, D. C., on the line of march taken by Braddock's soldiers and seamen, when they went from Alexandria to Rock Creek and thence to Frederick-Town, Maryland, and placed thereon a bronze tablet bearing this inscription:

THIS MEMORIAL
WAS ERECTED IN 1907,
BY THE SOCIETY OF COLONIAL WARS
IN THE DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA,
TO MARK THE ROAD OVER WHICH,
ON APRIL 14, 1755,
A DIVISION OF THE BRITISH ARMY,
UNDER GENERAL BRADDOCK,
MARCHED ON ITS WAY
TO FORT DUQUESNE.

The ceremony of the unveiling was performed by the Honorable James Bryce, British Ambassador, the bronze tablet was covered by two laurel wreaths, one with the British and the other with the American colors. And in the distance, rising majestically, could be clearly seen the white marble shaft to the memory of Washington.

Lawrence Washington of Mount Vernon, died in 1752, leaving a valuable estate, his executors being Honorable William Fairfax, George William Fairfax, Augustine Washington, George Washington, Majr John Carlyle and Nathaniel Chapman. After the estate had been divided, Colonel Carlyle wrote to Colonel George Washington the following letter in reference to some quit rents.

"Alexr June 28, 1760.

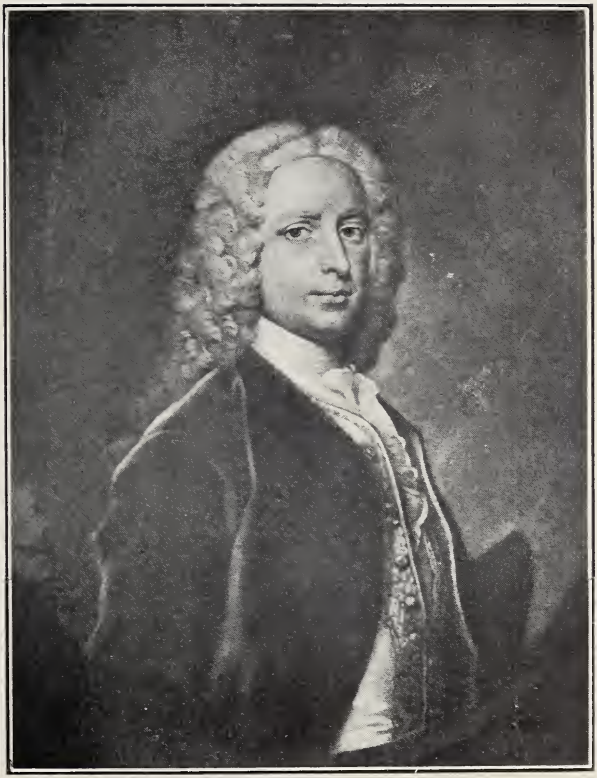
To Colo. Washington,

at Mount Vernon.

Sir. Coll. Fairfax Calling upon Me for to Settle The Qt Rents due on Y'r Brother's Lands, when I had the Estate In my hands & acquainting me that Mr. John Washington Said I had Credit for the Sum In the Estate's Acct, I have Inclosed you a Copy of my Supposed Acct When the Estate was Divided, by which you'l See the Estate would have been £32. in my debt had I paid the Qt Rents. In the Acct I Settled With the Court I take Credit for £62.6.9. pd. Lord Fairfax, but that is for a Protested bill of Exchange which I took in for the Qt Rents before the Death of your brother. If you'l gett your acct from Your overseer & fix a time any time I am ready to furnish the whole amt. I have paid several Debts Since the Settlement & am ready to finish the whole when you Will get an acct of the Frederick affairs. If you'l Settle in the meantime with Coll. Fairfax the Exact Sum of Qt Rents & Draw an order on us, for the Estate, We Will pay it as I believe We have Sixty or Seventy pds In our hands & am

Yr Obedt Hble Ser't

JOHN CARLYLE.



COLONEL SIR PETER HAIKETT.

(Endorsed) "Col° Carlyle's Lett^r, 28th June 1760, relat'g to my dec'd Br. Law's Estate." The endorsement is in the handwriting of General Washington.

Colonel Carlyle's wife Sarah, the second daughter of Honorable William Fairfax, died on the 22nd of January 1761, "A lady of a most amiable Character, endowed with excellent qualities and her death is (was) universally lamented by all who had the pleasure of her Acquaintance." Sixteen months before she had mourned the loss of her young brother, William Henry Fairfax, born in Virginia, of the 28th British Regulars, who fell with Wolfe on the Plains of Abraham the 13th of September 1759, in the memorable battle which decided the fate of Canada.

Colonel Carlyle and his family were on the most intimate terms with the Washingtons and were frequent visitors at Mount Vernon, and at the "Carlyle House" George Washington, from early manhood, was a constant and honored guest. In his diary mention is often made of his having "Lodg^d at Col° Carlyle's" or "Dined at Col° Carlyle's."

He died in October 1780, leaving a daughter by his first wife and an only son by his second wife, George William Carlyle born in 1765, who joined the army in February 1781, as a cadet in "Lee's Legion," an independent partisan corps which constantly hung on the flank of the British Army and in South Carolina "covered the rear of General Greene's Army, giving occasional opportunity for Tarleton's Dragoon s to measure swords with the Virginians." He was killed at the battle of Eutaw Springs, where "the corps rendered distinguished services," on the 8th of September 1781, in the seventeenth year of his age.

General Henry Lee (Light Horse Harry) father of General Robert E. Lee, in his "Memoirs of the war in the Southern Department of the United States," says, "The gallant young Carlyle of Alexandria, a cadet in the Regiment, was killed and half the corps destroyed."

Such a death was a fitting end for the scion of a warlike race, which had fought gallantly in the fierce and romantic

conflicts of Border warfare in Scotland, had followed their native leaders to the Crusades under Richard Coeur de Lion and had served under Marshal Hepburn in the army of Gustavus Adolphus.

"At Eutaw Springs the valiant died;
Their limbs with dust are covered o'er,—
Weep on, ye Springs, your tearful tide;
How many heroes are no more!

If, in this wreck of ruin, they
Can yet be thought to claim the tear,
Oh, smite your gentle breast, and say,
The friends of freedom slumber here!

* * * * * * *

Now rest in peace, our patriot band;
Though far from Nature's limits thrown,
We trust they find a happier land,
A brighter sunshine of their own."

These lines by Philip Freneau, the Revolutionary War poet, were pronounced by Sir Walter Scott "as fine a thing as there is of the kind in the English language."

Young Carlyle who thus lost his life in the closing years of the Revolutionary War, fighting for the liberty of his country, was left a handsome estate by his father, a part of which, a fine summer residence near Alexandria, went at his death to his young nephew Carlyle Fairfax Whiting. This place was originally named "Torthorwald," after the fourteenth century Castle of that name near Dumfries, Scotland, long the seat of the Carlyles, but it was afterwards changed to "Morven," on account of the negroes in the neighbourhood calling it "Totherworld." To his daughter Sarah, wife of William Herbert, whose daughter Margaret about 1800 became the wife of her cousin Thomas, 9th Lord Fairfax, he left the "Carlyle House," with all its memories and traditions.

Here the Commander in Chief of the Revolutionary Army often came and went an ever welcome guest, and here may

GEORGE WASHINGTON, COLONEL
VIRGINIA MILITIA

From Passano's Maryland. Stories from Her History.

be said to have been the place where the Revolution was born, for from within its walls, ten years before the Stamp Act, first came the demand from a body of officials representing the British Government, for taxation of the colonies by Act of Parliament, which, when finally carried out, resulted in its resistance, the independence of the colonies, and the formation of the United States of America.

"There is given
Unto the things of earth, which Time hath bent,
A spirit's feeling, and where he hath leant
His hand, but broke his scythe, there is a power
And magic in the ruined battlement;
For which the palace of the present hour
Must yield its pomp, and wait till ages are its dower."

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH
OF
HON. MUSCOE RUSSELL HUNTER GARNETT, OF ESSEX COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

(1821-1864)

By James Mercer Garnett.

This brief sketch will serve to introduce to the present generation, and to bring before his contemporaries, few of whom are now living, the memory of one of the younger statesmen of Virginia, who flourished fifty years ago and brilliantly adorned the annals of the Commonwealth. He was universally regarded as one of the most intellectual, and one of the most highly educated, young men, especially in his knowledge of history and literature, and political science, that this State has ever produced. He was cut off by disease in the vigor of his young manhood, but not before he had made a name for himself, and had already taken a high stand in political life, which bade fair to honor him with the highest

honors that the Commonwealth could bestow. The position that he had already attained at forty years of age was but an earnest of what the future had in store for him.

MUSCOE RUSSELL HUNTER GARNETT was born on July 25th, 1821, the son of James Mercer Garnett, Jr., and Maria Hunter. His father was the eldest son of the Hon. James Mercer Garnett, of Elmwood, Essex county, Virginia, and his first cousin, Mary Eleanor Dick Mercer, daughter of Judge James Mercer, of the Virginia Court of Appeals (see *William and Mary College,* QUARTERLY, XVII., 2 and 3, October, 1908, and January, 1909). His grandfather Garnett had served in the State Legislature, and in the United States Congress for two terms (1805-1809), when he declined a renomination; and he afterwards served in that noted Constitutional Convention of 1829-30, which has been called the most distinguished body of men that ever assembled on the soil of Virginia, of which President Monroe was the president, and President Madison, Chief Justice Marshall, and a host of the most prominent men in the State, were members.

His mother was a daughter of James Hunter and his first wife, Maria Garnett, daughter of Muscoe Garnett and Grace Fenton Mercer, and sister of Hon. James Mercer Garnett. She was an elder sister of the late Hon. Robert Mercer Taliaferro Hunter, who served in the State Legislature, the U. S. House of Representatives, of which body he was the Speaker in 1839-40, and later in the U. S. and the Confederate States Senates, and was Confederate Secretary of State for several months.

His grandfather, Hon. James Mercer Garnett, was the son of Muscoe Garnett and Grace Fenton Mercer, daughter of John Mercer, of Marlborough, Stafford county—a lawyer, author of Mercer's "Abridgment of the Laws of Virginia," and his second wife Anne Roy. He was a grandson of James Garnett and his second wife, Elizabeth Muscoe, daughter of Salvator Muscoe, a lawyer, and a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses (1734-40), of which body James Garnett was also a member (1744-47). James Garnett was the son

of John Garnett, of Gloucester county, later of Essex county, Virginia, whose will was proved in Essex county court March 11, 1713. He is supposed to have been descended from the Garnetts of Lancashire, England, but the date of his immigration to Virginia is not known.

James Hunter, maternal grandfather of M. R. H. Garnett, was the son of William Hunter and Sarah Garnett, daughter of William Garnett,—who was the son of the above-named James Garnett and his first wife, Sarah Green,—and Ann Rowzee. Both the parents and the grandparents of M. R. H. Garnett were, therefore, related to each other. Muscoe was the surname of his paternal great-great-grandmother, Russell was a surname in the Hunter family, and Hunter was the surname of his mother, who was a first cousin of his father, James Mercer Garnett, Jr. His father was educated at Princeton College, but left before graduation and entered upon the practice of the law. He died in his thirtieth year, too early to make a name for himself, but family tradition credits him with most remarkable talents. His mother was a woman of unusual intellectual powers, a strong and determined will, and excellent business qualifications, and was one who impressed herself upon all with whom she came in contact. She was very fond of reading, and having access to good libraries in both her father's and her uncle's homes, had fitted herself well to direct the education of her son, who received his early training at her hands, and those of his maternal aunts, all intellectual women. One of these aunts, Miss Martha Fenton Hunter, well known in her day as an authoress, chiefly of children's stories and novels—one of which, *The Clifford Family,* attained considerable reputation—has left us a sketch of her nephew, which deserves insertion here as the *only* contemporary account that has been preserved, written by one who knew him well all his life and took part in his early education, as did also another aunt, Miss Jane Swann Hunter, who possessed one of the strongest feminine minds that the writer has ever known.

After the death of his grandfather, Hon. James Mercer Garnett, of "Elmwood," in 1843, his daughter-in-law and her son lived for many years at "Fonthill," Essex county, Virginia, the residence of her brother, the Hon. Robert M. T. Hunter, with whom also lived his above-mentioned sisters, and it was under such training and influence that young Muscoe Garnett was brought up until he was nearly thirty years of age.

The following is the sketch referred to above:

MEMOIR OF MUSCOE R. H. GARNETT BY HIS AUNT, MARTHA F. HUNTER.

"M. R. H. Garnett, [was] born on July 25th, 1821, at Elmwood in Essex county [Virginia]. Strongly marked traits of character and mind were much earlier developed than is usual with children, in the subject of this memoir. He was gifted by nature with unusual sensibility, quickness and delicacy of perception, and was always remarked by his friends for a depth and reach of thought far beyond his years. Though his temper was naturally quick and his feelings impetuous, there was so much native kindness and gentleness in his disposition that no one who knew him can recall an act of boyish cruelty, or violence, ever committed by him; the sight of suffering always caused him pain, partly, I believe, from delicacy of organization, partly from strong natural sensibility, and in some measure also attributable to his having been educated by women during the early years of his life. The early influences under which he was fostered, and the circumstance of being an only child, no doubt greatly contributed to strengthen these traits of character, and produced a degree of purity and refinement of feeling, which made the necessary intercourse with the world in after life often painful and jarring to his spirit. A few anecdotes will illustrate the very early development of his mind, and the subjects of thought upon which he loved to dwell.

When not more than five years of age, he used to delight

in hearing passages from "The Pilgrim's Progress," and attempted to draw a picture of the Last Judgment, the dead rising from their graves, Christ on the throne of His Glory, the sheep on His right hand and the goats on His left. The drawing, of course, consisted only of wide, imperfect pencil marks, but the idea which he attempted to explain in all its details with great animation, and something too of solemnity, quite touching in so young a child, was remarkable.

He showed, when not more than seven or eight years of age, a marked fondness for poetry, history and geography, and made very early attempts at composition; at eight and nine he wrote tales and verses evincing a power of expression and thought very unusual at so early an age. When not more than eight years of age he would spend two or three hours at a time stretched on the floor in the parlor, studying Le Sage's Atlas, perfectly absorbed in tracing the courses of rivers and the relative position[s] of towns and counties. When he was not more than ten years of age, he undertook to edit a literary paper to which he engaged some of his friends and acquaintances as contributors, and for which he wrote several articles, but as every number was to be sent in manuscript, the undertaking proved so laborious as to be soon relinquished. His aims were always high and his interest directed to objects which seldom engage the attention of boys. He acquired very early habits of accuracy and research, and a power of systematising and generalising whatever knowledge he acquired, so as to bring it to bear upon any subject to which his attention was directed. It was one of his amusements to write historical tables, and when not more than twelve or thirteen one of his favorite plans was, that, when he was old enough for the undertaking, and had acquired the necessary knowledge, to write a Universal History, the plan of which he had conceived on a very comprehensive scale, and he used to delight to enter into the details of all its intended execution.

The Romances of History by Henry Neale, Scott's Novels and Shakspeare's Historical Plays, doubtless, increased his taste for historical studies, which was always a very marked one during his life.

When he was rather more than eight years of age, his grandfather, Mr. James [Mercer] Garnett, having engaged the services of a competent teacher, opened an Academy for boys at Elmwood, his own residence and Muscoe's home. This gave Muscoe an opportunity of mingling with boys of his own age and sharing their studies, but he was so much addicted to his own pursuits, and so fond of the company of his mother and his family, that his intercourse with the boys had much less influence over his character and habits than could possibly have been anticipated, and he always retained a marked individuality of character. As a proof of his zeal for acquiring knowledge, it may be mentioned that he read voluntarily during his leisure hours a very voluminous and tedious historical work, Rollin's Roman History, when he was not more than ten years of age, and continued without intermission to follow out his own plans for self-improvement.

When the Academy for boys was broken up at Elmwood, he continued to reside there and was instructed by private teachers with two or three other boys. He was, therefore, never removed from home influences until he went to the University of Virginia, when he was rather more than seventeen years of age, and where, though he remained only a year and was detained at home by sickness for some weeks, he graduated in Mathematics, Greek, Latin, French and German. An extract from one of his letters, written whilst he was at the University, will best explain the nature and extent of his views on self-education.

'I shall continue my general studies without reference to any particular profession for at least twelve months and probably longer. Of course, then, my three branches of study will be history, metaphysics, and Belles Lettres. I shall frame an extensive course of study in each, and the books may be in any of the five languages I am acquainted with. So by reading authors in the original, my knowledge of the language will be kept up and improved. History I will study not as a mere amusement, but philosophically. I will study it in connection with Political Economy and the general doctrines of

government, and as an illustration of the science of the mind, in short, as "philosophy teaching by example." By metaphysics I mean the whole philosophy of the mind, whether considered individually or in masses, in its most extensive sense. In Belles Lettres I will study the great poets and critics, and view their masterpieces not only as sources of enjoyment, but as works of art, and examine the principles which direct their composition. In a word, I mean to study in these Belles Lettres what the Germans call Aesthetics. And furthermore, I shall accustom myself to express my reflections on what I read in writing. This will force me to reflect, fix what I read in my memory, and assist me to form a style in writing. Now, look at the advantages of this plan. I am anxious to become well acquainted with the languages, and this plan will certainly make me so. For, if I read Shakspeare, so will I Homer and Göthe. If I read Clarendon, so will I Sismondi and Tacitus, and if I study Bacon, so will I Plato. This plan too embraces everything but mathematics in its connection with the natural sciences, and the sciences themselves. But these can easily be put in. It may be objected that it is so extensive that it would require a long time to do it any justice. I reply that I can stop whenever I find it necessary, and that, as to its requiring so much time and labor, a thorough education is not be attained without these. I think, in making out a course of reading, the best plan is to put down the very best books we know, without considering whether we have them or not, and also to make the course very thorough without noticing how long it would require to go through it. Then we can afterwards modify it to suit our case.'

There was an interval now of two years spent at home, during which he endeavored assiduously to carry out his views of self-education such as are expressed in the above extract from his letter, and though his views were too comprehensive to be thoroughly carried out in practice, his reading was various and extensive, and the studies to which his attention was chiefly directed were so thoroughly digested and systematised in his mind that he could apply the knowledge he

possessed to any subject he wished. During this time he paid two or three visits to Washington, where he took great delight in the access to books which the Congress Library afforded him, and the opportunities of attending the debates in Congress.

At the expiration of two years he returned to the University of Virginia for the purpose of attending Judge Tucker's Law Lectures. In the home of this gentleman he found a second home; to his intercourse with Judge Tucker's family and the warm friendship formed with one of his sons, it may be attributed that his time passed off so pleasantly that he often said in after years he looked back upon this year as one of the happiest of his life.

He entered upon the practice of his profession soon after his return home, where he determined to reside, and attended the county courts in which he practised regularly, studying conscientiously whatever cases he undertook and giving much satisfaction to his clients, but country practice did not afford sufficient stimulus to his mind to awaken a very strong interest in his profession, and his time was much occupied by pursuits more congenial to his tastes and habits. At this period of his life he was fond of agriculture, both as a study and an occupation; indeed, the earnest and reflective character of his mind always blended study with his occupation; he cultivated Belles Lettres not only as an amusement but as a study, applying the principles of philosophical criticism to the masterpieces of the best authors, but his especial delight was always in historical studies, which he conducted in the manner indicated in the extract from his letter, in which he lays down the plan he designed to pursue in reading history. He acquired such an extensive, connected and systematic knowledge of history as to add rich and varied stores to the furniture of his mind, enabling him to find apt and striking illustrations from the past of present and passing events. He was a warm admirer of Niebuhr, and derived many valuable lessons as to the manner in which history should be studied and applied from the writings of this author.

German literature opened up to him many new fields of thought in which he delighted to expatiate; the depth of thought to be found in the celebrated writers of this language, their habits of extensive and accurate research, their philosophical manner of treating the subjects upon which they wrote, were peculiarly fitted to excite the admiration of a mind such as his, and exercise a strong influence upon his modes of thinking and mental training.

One of his first publications was a Review on Heeren's Ancient History. It appeared first in *The Southern Magazine*, edited by Mr. Edmund Ruffin, and at once excited notice and admiration; it was republished in *The Southern* [*Literary*] *Messenger*. He wrote also a Review of the Life of Calhoun, and a Review of Paget's Hungary and Transylvania, both of which appeared in *The Southern* [*Literary*] *Messenger* [the latter in the Nos. for January and February, 1844].

The rich materials he possessed for writing in his varied stories of information upon many important and interesting subjects, the trains of thought to which they had given rise in his mind, and the power he possessed of expressing his thoughts not only forcibly and accurately, but also beautifully when occasion required it, made his friends regret that he did not make more frequent use of his pen, but the very high standard of excellence in composition he had formed was one of the chief causes [why] he did not write more, as it was difficult for him to believe that his efforts came up to their requirements. He had many literary plans which were never executed, to the regret of those who knew his capacities and acquirements most intimately, and who believed that he could have adorned and illustrated any subject to which he gave his attention.

Though he was always an interested observer of public affairs, and became, as soon as he formed any political opinions, a strong opposer of Northern incroachments and the Northern school of politics and a warm champion of Southern Rights, he made no attempt to enter public life, nor published anything upon political subjects until the winter of 1850. At this period

he wrote "The Union, Past and Present [Future]," and the publication of this pamphlet was the commencement of a new era in his life. From this time his attention was more closely directed to political subjects, and his desire to enter public life increased. It was in the summer of 1850 that he delivered an oration at the University of Virginia at a meeting of the Alumni.

His entrance on public life was as a member of the Convention which met in Richmond [in 1850]. As Mr. Tucker is intimately acquainted with all that relates to his political career, it is useless to dwell on the subject, and I will, therefore, add only a few more observations upon some of the traits for which he was distinguished from childhood.[1] A love of truth, a sense of honor, a contempt for all that is mean and base, characterised him even as a child. A love of the beautiful seemed natural to him, and was always a source of exquisite delight. He was always a firm believer in the truth of Revealed Religion, and a champion for it when assailed. The purifying influences of the Gospel of Jesus Christ seemed to exert an increasing influence over his character and life until its close. The metaphysical and political aspects of Religion had always peculiar attractions for him from his earliest years. As a proof of these tastes it may be mentioned that Coleridge's writings and Jeremy Taylor's sermons were among his favorite works on Theological subjects.'

The following extract shows the seriousness of the youth when not yet nineteen years of age. Extract from a letter written from the University of Virginia, 1839:

"And, indeed, as I grow older, and direct myself more and more, I feel that I shall meet the common fate of man, which I had one day hoped to escape,—to grow more *alone* as I grow older. I have an undefinable dread too of the burdens, the cares, the responsibilities of life, which weighs much upon my mind. And then, too, when I look back on the brilliant hopes with which I set out when a child, and watch how

[1] This allusion is to the fact that his friend, Hon. John Randolph Tucker, proposed writing a sketch of his life which was never fulfilled.

they have faded from year to year, it all makes me feel very sad. Even now what great things I would gladly attain, and yet the thought of the immense effort necessary, the intense and unwearying endeavor, and striving, appals me, and after all, if these efforts be in vain! It almost disposes me to give up all, and hope to find my pleasures in watching the clouds, sowing my corn, going from county court to county court, till the county bench becomes a refuge for my gray hairs. All these things weigh on my mind very much, and I feel a deep regret for what is not so easily described, I mean the passing away of the freshness and brightness of boyhood, for, though I am not an *old man,* yet the boy has passed into the youth, and I feel sorry that the youth is passing into the man.

You admire and appreciate that Ode of Wordsworth's, when he describes the 'glory' whose faded colors I so much regret (I believe that it is called "Intimations of Immortality, from [Recollections of] Early Childhood"), and you will not accuse me of affectation when I say that I feel the 'fading' there described."

When Muscoe Garnett was about eight years of age, his grandfather opened a boys' school at Elmwood, chiefly for the education of his grandson. This school was taught by teachers employed for that purpose, Mr. Garnett attending to business matters, conducting family prayers, and delivering occasional lectures to the boys, a volume of which was published in 1830, containing four lectures. A girls' school had previously been conducted at Elmwood by Mrs. Garnett and her daughters, to which Mr. Garnett delivered a series of lectures on Female Education, which were published in 1824 and 1825, and went through four editions.

The late Hon. B. Johnson Barbour, who attended the boys' school in 1829, being a schoolmate there of Muscoe Garnett, has left some reminiscences of his school days in a letter to the writer written in 1885. He says of Mr. Garnett: "Mr. Garnett's presence was very imposing, tall, well proportioned, with a fine eye, a full head of gray hair, neatly brought together at the back in a queue, which was the more striking

from the fact that that style of dressing the hair had nearly gone out of vogue" and of Mrs. Garnett: "I cannot forbear from paying a deserved tribute to Mrs. Garnett. I still cherish her memory with love and gratitude. During my whole stay at Elmwood she was indeed a mother to me, chiding me gently when in fault, encouraging me in every way to press forward, calling me to her chamber to read a portion of the Scriptures, and afterwards whatever there might be of interest in the newspapers." He adds of "Elmwood": "I need not attempt any description of Elmwood. I will only say that it has suggested some of the fine old English houses to me, and for years after I lived there, when I would be reading an English novel, Elmwood, with its fine hall, its library and parlor, its corridors and general spaciousness, would rise up before me." Mr. Barbour also pays a warm tribute to his friend and schoolmate, M. R. H. Garnett, with whom he continued in bonds of friendship until Muscoe Garnett's death.

After some years of home education under tutors, and under the direction of his mother and aunts, studying ancient and modern languages, mathematics, history and general literature, Muscoe Garnett entered the University of Virginia in the fall of 1838 at seventeen years of age. The excellence of his preparation may be inferred from the fact that at the close of this session he graduated in Latin, Greek, mathematics, French and German, which course used to be known before the War of 1861 as "the green ticket." Had he returned the next session, he could readily have completed the course for the degree of Master of Arts, the only academic degree then given at the University besides the degree of Graduate in a School. He did not, however, return to the University the following session, but prepared to pursue a private course of reading and study at home for the next two years. The spirit in which this course was pursued may be seen from his letter quoted above in the sketch by his aunt. While many young men might not profit as much by a course of private study as by a college curriculum, such was his mind and such were his habits, that the result showed that

this was best for him. For a young man of eighteen to twenty, with a good previous preparation, it may be a question whether it is not best to let him follow the bent of his own mind, for, after all, such self-education may be the *best* education, especially when it is as intelligently planned as the above-quoted letter shows that his was.

A letter from his uncle, the late Hon. R. M. T. Hunter, to his sister relating to her son, quoted in Miss M. T. Hunter's "Memoir" of her father (pp. 82 ff.), shows that it is best in his opinion to devolve responsibility upon a young man as soon as he is able to bear it; and the letter following (pp. 85 ff.), written to his nephew during his law course at the University, shows his deep interest in him and the excellence of the advice that he from time to time gave him. After these two years of private study at home, laying up a stock of physical health as well as making mental acquirements, Muscoe Garnett returned to the University of Virginia in the fall of 1841 and attended the lectures on Law of Professor Henry St. George Tucker, graduating with the degree of Bachelor of Law at the close of that session. He became very intimate in the family of Professor Tucker, and especially with his son, the late Hon. John Randolph Tucker, two years his junior, forming a friendship that was severed only by death.

It was at this time that a short-lived periodical, known as *The Collegian,* was conducted by the students, and Muscoe Garnett was one of its editors. In Vol. IV., No. 2, for November, 1841, will be found an article by the late John R. Thompson, well known in later life as a journalist and *litterateur*, descriptive of the five editors, Muscoe Garnett being described under the name *Emerald.* Thompson writes of him as follows: "To begin with our indefatigable *Emerald.* He is a gentleman who is entitled to your most distinguished consideration. In person he is rather under the middle height. His hair resembles drifts of purest snow, albeit he labors under the optical delusion that its hue is much darker. He dresses always in black, and although he boasts a connexion with the unterrified democracy, the gold chain

which dangles ostentatiously from his neck would certainly inspire a different opinion. His conversation is instructive and diversified. At one time he discourses on the beauties of the dreamy writers of Germany; at another he enters into an eloquent and thrilling disquisition on the "Sovereignty of the People," but his favorite theme is Italy. He is familiar with every "ruined arch and ivied wall" from Rome and Caracalla's Baths to Tivoli's romantic steep. Her dark-eyed daughters and her sunny skies are associated with his fondest dreams of the Poet Land. He dives deep into the mazes of her philosophy and literature and sighs to think that

'In Venice, Tasso's echoes are no more,'

and that the lyre of Ariosto is motionless forever. *Emerald* is our chairman and presides over the meetings of the Committee with 'dignity blended with ease.' In his room he is generally attired in a *robe de chambre* of most flaming material, and in his ordinary positions, exhibits an attitudinising elegance which Henry Pelham might have envied. Tobacco he loudly inveighs against, and, when talking on that subject, cites numerous instances of many unfortunate individuals whose sudden and lamentable death is to be attributed to its use."

In this Number "M. R. H. G." wrote the leading article on 'Poets and Poetry,' and one entitled 'A Winter Evening,' also five eight-line stanzas entitled 'Lines,' and beginning:

'The dove her plaintive note prolongs
From pine groves far away;
The birds their morning choral songs
Awake at spring of day.'

In the only other Number accessible to the writer, that for January, 1842, "M. R. H. G." seems to have drawn upon his home talent, as it opens with a letter "To the Editors of *The Collegian*" signed "Oliver Old School," the well known signature of his grandfather, James Mercer Garnett, of "Elmwood," in the *Southern Literary Messenger*, a prose article by his aunt, Miss Martha F. Hunter, entitled "Historical Scene from

the Reign of the Empress Maria Theresa, translated from the German, for *The Collegian*," and certain lines by this lady entitled "The Hour to Die," and "The Enchanter's Invitation."

Muscoe Garnett graduated in Law at the close of this session, July, 1842, in the same class with the late Hon. John S. Barbour, Hon. Edward C. Burks, Col. H. Coalter Cabell, Maj. George W. Carr, Hon. Thomas Croxton, Hon. William J. Robertson, Col. John Scott, Col. William Watts, and others, twenty-six in all.

One of his most intimate friends at the University was, as stated above, John Randolph Tucker, son of the Professor of Law, Henry St. George Tucker, and a correspondence between the two extending from this year (1842) to 1853 has been preserved. Most of these letters are of too intimate a character for publication, but citations from a few may be made in order to show the estimation in which Mr. Garnett was held. The following brief letter will be given in full:

"Winchester, July 6, 1849.

"My dear Muscoe:

"I have just learned by letter from our old friend Dick Noland, whose *penchant* for you is unsurpassed, that the new Chair of History and Literature has been erected at the University.[2] He writes most *passionately* (in the French sense of the term) for your appointment. Need I tell you, my well beloved, that I would rather you should have it than all others in the world. But will you take it? The two lines of distinction are before you. Which will you take? Political or literary distinction? I cannot advise as yet, without hearing from you. Let me hear. Let me see you in order to my hearing properly & fully. I believe you could get it.

I hear also that you are the orator [i. e., of the Society of the Alumni]. Glad am I to hear so. And I am your alternate. Glad also to be just behind you, when the association does

[2] This was premature, as this Chair was not finally established until 1858.

me an honour, which my occupancy of the first position would never give me.

Write soon. In haste.

Your own friend,

J. R. Tucker."

Mr. Garnett did not seem to approve of the suggestion of a professorship of History and Literature for himself, as Mr. Tucker's next letter of July 24th, 1849, shows. He writes: "One thing, however, before advancing. You seem to have given up the idea of the merely literary life, and to have become enamoured of the politico-literary. *Eh! bien*, as you will. But what do you mean by going to practise law in a city? Where? Baltimore? Not New York or any city north of Baltimore, surely? The question is one full of interest. 1st, would you suit it? 2nd, will it suit you?

"If it be any Northern city or even Baltimore, I would say not. If it be Richmond or a Southern city, it is more probable. This much for the 1st question. As to the second, I doubt as to any, for the purpose you propose. Practise law! You do not like it, and in all human probability never would. There is too much of the merely plausible, of the technically ingenious, of the *ad captandum,* in the practise of law to suit *your taste,* if not the order of your mind. Nor do I depreciate you at all. That is a higher order of mind which cannot deceive itself, and which is consorted with a heart which refuses to deceive others. Now, my own idea is that it would not suit you to devote your life and talents to the pursuit of a profession like that of the bar. To do it in a city requires incessant, persevering, EXCLUSIVE devotion to its study. In your present situation, or even in mine, time is allowed to some other duty, but in a city success only waits on exclusiveness of attention to the profession of your choice. *Would that suit you?* But you may look to political preferment in a city. 'Choose you this day whom you will serve.' In a city politics and law will

not mingle with success in the latter. It is impossible. It results from the *necessity* of that *exclusiveness* above-mentioned. Then, if Politics be your object, flee a city, the most tainted and corrupted air for pure political aspirations like your own, that ever was selected. You may expect the oak to grow in the dark cells of the Penitentiary, but never hope to see the pure, and honest, politician thrive in the heated and putrid atmosphere in which alone can flourish the political rabble of a city. Upon the whole of this matter let me have a *talk* with you before you decide. Come here and let me *see* you."

Immediately after graduation he opened his law office at Loretto, Essex county, the Post Office nearest to "Elmwood," and continued to reside there until after the death of his grandfather in April, 1843, when he and his mother, as stated above, made their home at "Fonthill," the residence of his uncle, the late Hon. R. M. T. Hunter. For some years he devoted himself to law and literature, of which the latter seems to have accorded best with his tastes. He wrote chiefly review articles, the titles of some of which are given in the above-quoted sketch by his aunt.

He was a great admirer of Mr. Calhoun and a supporter of his views of Southern Rights, the continued aggressions on which by Northern politicians were creating the gravest apprehensions. His review of the "Life" of Calhoun, referred to above a short sketch of whose life from 1811 to 1843 had been prepared by the Hon. R. M. T. Hunter—will show his own political opinions, from which he never deviated. His review of Paget's "Hungary and Transylvania" (2 Vols., London, 1839), published in *The Southern and Western Literary Messenger and Review*, as it was then called (Vol XII., Nos. 1 and 2, January and February, 1846), under the editorship of the late Benjamin B. Minor, Esq., will give an example of his literary style, which was pure, smooth and flowing, easy and polished, a model of its kind.

Thus he continued his self-education, reading and writing, and laying up those stores of knowledge and learning which stood him in good stead when he entered later upon political life.

It was in the year 1850, before he was thirty years of age, that we have Mr. Garnett's first printed address, delivered before the Society of Alumni of the University of Virginia on June 29th, 1850. It is in this address that we first see the results of his literary and political training.

It shows the ardent devotion of the alumnus to his *Alma Mater,* the pride of the citizen in his State, which was to be the *coryphaeus* of that chorus of Southern States that was eventually to be the leader of the World. But alas! physical power was to overthrow moral and intellectual. Scarce fourteen months after Muscoe Garnett's death all these visions were ruthlessly shattered, and even then "coming events cast their shadows before."

It was in this year that his principal pamphlet was published on "The Union, Past and Future: How It Works and How to Save It. By a Citizen of Virginia (Charleston, 1850)." This is a calm and well-reasoned discussion of the political and economic relations between the Northern and the Southern States since the foundation of the government, that is, during the preceding sixty years (1790-1850), supporting its statements with respect to the economic relations by some half-dozen tables taken from the reports of the Secretary of the Treasury, and other official documents. His view of the political relations may be seen from the opening paragraph:

"The time has come when it behooves every Southern man to consider the best means of preserving the Union which he loves, and the rights and honor which are yet dearer. Sixty years have passed since the Northern and Southern States entered into a treaty for the common defence and general welfare. We joined that league as equals: its strictly defined powers were to be exercised for the equal good of all the parties, and its benefits and burdens were to be equally shared. But our allies at the North have grown strong under the fostering protection of this great treaty, and are no longer content with the equal conditions upon which it was formed. They have perverted it from its original character, not only wielding the granted powers for sectional and oppressive purposes,

but assuming every doubtful power for their exclusive advantage.

"In this spirit they have advanced far in a series of measures, which, if unresisted, must end in the overthrow of our slave institutions. But it cannot be doubted that a free people, still untamed by the yoke of oppression and the stamp of superiority, will resist such assaults. The South has at stake, not merely the fourteen hundred millions of dollars, the value of her slave property, but all of honor and of happiness that civilization and society can give. To count the means of resistance, the relative strength of the opponents, the value of what we must hazard, and the surest ways of preserving the Union in its original equality, is the object of this Essay."

These quotations show the danger to be apprehended, even in 1850, from the political discussions between the Northern and the Southern States, the continual aggression of the North upon the South on account of slavery, and the natural resistance on the part of the South to a violation of her Constitutional rights. The bulk of the pamphlet is taken up with the discussion of the disadvantages of the Union to the South from an economic point of view, and the manifest effort of the North "to convert this Federal Union into a grand consolidated State, on the French model, where the numerical majority might have absolute sway."

This tendency has progressed since the War Between the States and the liberation and enfranchisement of the negroes—itself a fulfillment of the prophecies previously made—so that even now the proposition is discussed in Congress to deprive the Southern States of electoral votes, because, forsooth, negroes are deprived of votes, which, in the opinion of the majority in Congress, *they ought to cast*, thus importing an entirely new principle into legislation. The illegal enfranchisement of the negroes should be sufficient, but the end is not yet.

The pamphlet contains many truths, and *then* was the time for secession, when the South was stronger and proportionately better able to maintain her "Equality and Independence," but the "numerical majority" proved too strong for her.

A communication in *The Union*, a Democratic paper of Washington, D. C., said of this pamphlet: "It is filled with profound thought and powerful argument, which at the present time commend themselves to every patriotic heart which desires the preservation of the Union and the restoration of kind feelings between the two sections of our country. A general consideration of this essay will not only diffuse light and information amongst the community, but will show most clearly the indispensable necessity of restoring repose to the public mind. As sincere friends of the Union—as most ardently desirous of giving quiet to the agitated feelings of the country—we recommend to every one to read and circulate it. * * * The facts and statistics are faithfully arrayed, and will well repay a most thoughtful perusal."

The extracts from Mr. Garnett's pamphlet show his views on the burning questions of the day, especially his firm determination to resist all Northern aggressions upon slavery, such as the Wilmot proviso and cognate measures, even at the risk of a severance of the Union. If Southern men could not settle freely in the common territory of the Union with their property of all kinds, without any restriction, of what good was the Federal Union to them? They were not willing to submit to a circumscription of their rights in any respect, and the manifest tendency of all restrictive measures proposed by the Northern States was to confine slavery to the States in which it already existed, and ultimately to extinguish it even there. This was plainly the object to which all these proposed measures looked, and the South preferred to dissolve the partnerships which they had a perfect right to do, rather than submit.

Mr. Garnett had, up to this time (1850), never held a political office, but he was now chosen a delegate to the Constitutional Convention that assembled in Richmond, Virginia, on October 14th, 1850, representing the district composed of Essex, King and Queen, Middlesex and Matthews counties, and having as his colleagues, James Smith, of King and Queen, and Muscoe Garnett, of

lower Essex county, who, if at all related to him, was very distantly related. Mr. M. R. H. Garnett took a very active part in the deliberations of this Convention, especially in the discussion of the basis of representation, on which he delivered a notable speech. He strongly supported the *mixed basis,* for it was upon this question that the eastern and the western portions of the State were divided, the eastern portion favoring the mixed basis and the western portion, the white basis, the mixed basis allowing certain weight to the negroes, as in the U. S. Constitution.

Although a printed copy of his speech on this question has been preserved, lack of space forbids extracts.

(*To be Continued*)

DIARY OF COL. LANDON CARTER.

(*Continued from page* 18.)

18. Saturday, May, 1776. Yesterday was our fast day, and I went to church and tho' our Parson preach'd it at our Upper Church, yet I endeavored to join heartily in our Public Prayer Agst our enemies, and with sincere gratitude for all the mercies of heaven. But O! when I came home, and after a composed nap of sleep, how was I unguardedly agitated in a moment almost! A paper from our Convention came to me declaring unanimously, with 112 members, for a direction to our delegates to represent this colony in their endeavours in Congress for an independ^{t} governm^{t} of the Crown of Parliam^{t} of G. B.; and also if they judged proper for a foreign alliance both as to commerce and the aids of war. It was really very well penned, and except as to the hurry of declaring the thing until there could be no hopes of a reconciliation, it was not reprehensible. In company it was said that it was a matter wch might be attended with very serious consequences; and one only observed that fighting it out was the Plan. I replyed it gave me no alarm, and was going to say,

for I had long expected this declaration tho we had not been so drove to it, from the peculiar genius of some folks. I was immediately answered he did not see why I should be alarmed as I could not be engaged in battle. Without considering the constant rashness in the youth in has answer to me I said he was a damned fool for saying so, because it represented me not only quite thoughtless of what I must feel, but as a villian to be under no concern, because I might be safe for a mom[t] in my Person. (These remarks were directed to his son Robert Wormeley Carter, whose disrespect is further commented upon by his irate parent.)

With rain and the usual blessings from heaven I hope we shall do enough to cloath, feed ourselves & contribute to the expense of defending our Liberties.

This day Dr. Jones extracts from a Northern Paper that 45,000 Hessians and others are to come agst us. Col. Carter thinks that this is one of the rumors started by the papers to alarm the people to promote the precipitate declaration of Independence. Deems it as senseless as the rumor started some time back "that G. B. was going to join with France and Spain to divide the soil of America." But suppose these 45,000 should come, can they be more dreadful than the number of blood-hounds whom we have lately vanquished tho' fed with all the despotic food of Parliamentary statutes. Indeed, it is a pure contrivance for weak minds to bring about Independency, and it has done it in Virginia, God help us all.

19. Sunday, May 1776. My Squire still goes on, but I hope in God I shall be on my guard & keep unmoved. It is merry for him always to accuse his father of warmth in argument, when it is now evident he never does or can argue cooly with his father let it be on what subject it will.

20. Monday, May, 1776. Our cotton it seems by being planted in light lands is coming up. But then by this coldness we are to dread the ground worm. We have planted abt 2000 tob° hills.

23. Thursday, May, 1776. I cannot avoid observing on a most outrageous inconsistency governing between those who

have unanimously declared for an Independency, and all the half pay writers on that side of the present question, from the famous author of Common Sense down to the E. F. of the 17th inst., said to be Dr. Jones. They all declare agst the English constitution, as a form of Government wch freedom cannot exist under from its arbitrary tendency; and yet the very unanimous declaring of this Independency do avow a conduct more arbitrary than ever the English constitution in its Purity could admit of and was only brot into it by Ministerial corruption: That of taking the arms away from the very friends to America and only paying for them in the same manner that they have done to the enemies to the country. In wch this evil certainly leaves not only a defenceless situation in the real sons of freedom agst an enemy, should such an one actually invade, but even agst the growing power that has ever arisen from such orders into arbitrary government. It is pretended to be a pressing occasion, wch is the very first step in all despotic climax. * * *

Why then is a limited monarchy objected to on acct of some possible arbitrariness that may be introduced into it, and the same tendency or precedent for such a tendency, established only because it can be confidently advanced that these Republican distractions have arisen from Monarchical Principles; for my part I see no difference; an evil begot how it will and necessity is no better plea in a Republican form than it is or can be in a monarchical form. In both it is bad, and is such a payment to extravagant power that I dread its effects wherever I hear it mentioned. A State had better run in debt or do anything to engage a free consent to Part with a thing than ever countenance the taking it by force; besides do military men know the proper boundary to any action in which their own Power is to judge of. I never knew but one man who resolved not to forget the citizen in the soldier or ruler and that is G. W. and I am affraid I shall not know another. Reuben Beale just now rode here who says Hipkins is Just returned from Baltimore and says an express arrived there from Philadelphia giving an acct. that 27 commissioners from

G. B. had arrived with 4,000 troops and were adjacent to Boston Harbor, but as they saw they could not land, they sent a flag of truce to communicate their purposes, wch Boston sent notice to the Congress, and that they had sent troops of horse to escort them if they had any business to confer about with them, but if not that they shd not be permitted to land. That the Baltimore express said each of them had £4,000 a man, wch amts £108,000. Surely this is done, if true, with a view to Bribe. But I can't believe one word of the report, or at best it is only some ministerial scheme to deceive America, some base Purpose or another; for I cannot think that the King with so foul a mouth as that with what he opened in his last speech can ever desire or design to grant America her reasonable demands now, or that his accursed ministers with his more damned Parliament would now propose such a thing, but what are these 4,000 troops for? We cannot now with the least Prudence say Possibly they have at last seen that they cannot conquer us; and certainly we cannot receive them with their Bayonets thus fixed. In short, I cannot believe the tale the more I think of it.

27. Monday, May, 1776. Mr. Page from the Convention, Friday evening, told us yesterday that immediately after a battle fought the week before by Capt. George Johnson at the head of 40 Virginians agst 150 of Dunmore's men, 40 of them regulars, in wch not a man was slain & only Johnston himself wounded in the soul of his shoe, Dunmore and all his fleet after first having burnt all his barracks at Portsmouth and about 40 of the small vessels made off for Ha. Roads & from thence to sea. The number killed on Dunmore's side not known, but abundance of blood lying on the ground. It seems Dunmore said as the country had declared for Independency, there was no occasion or business for him here. But it is presumed he was either vastly beaten in the fight, or alarmed at the floating fire stages preparing to burn his whole fleet. At least 55 vessels went away. The same gentlemen told us that the Congress had sent word that the *Gondolat* had drove away the *Liverpool* & the *Roebuck* men of war out of Dela-

ware river or bay, by a manuevre wch would have crowned the American cause. A fine fight wch would have taken both the vessels of war, tho of 44 & 32 guns, had not, the officers of the *Gondolat* in a council of war differed about boarding them in the night.

The day before this engagement Ballew of the *Liverpool* had sent a flag to the Congress to obtain leave for his Lady of N England to travel by land to Boston to her relatives; and the Congress sent a chariot & 6 with an officer & a company of horse to Escort her on the Journey. That the officer went on board to deliver the compliments of Congress. But then the Captain would not let his wife go; and the off^{r} returned with an account of the damage she had sustained in the Engagement all her gallerill beat off her netings & q^{r} rails tore all to p^{s}, & her sides full of plugs to stop her holes made by the *Gondolat*, & deck very bloody. The day after, the engagement began again, and drove both the vessells out to sea whither the *Gondolat* followed them both better than 20 miles. That the story about 27 commissioners, 12,000 Hes*sians an*d 4,000 British troops was all a Baltimore, not even founded on the least truth; That Gov^{r} Eden was only on his parole, not acquitted, Denying nothing, but that his letter to Ld. Dartmouth was written long ago & that since he had devoted himself to the American cause.

28. Tuesday, May, 1776. Col. Carter apprehends rust in his wheat, sees it among the blackberry bushes. The cause and prevention deserve study; had also an occasion to observe on the growth of cheat in that part of my last year's wheat patch wch I never plowed after the wheat was reaped to give the shattered cheat any opportunity to come up till the winter rains had buryed it for the Spring growth, wch must convince any but down right obstinacy that it is not wheat or oats that turned to wheat, but the actual cheat itself that comes up in any field when sown twice with wheat year after year. This pt. of the field not cultivated or sown is quite full of it, both the wheat and last year's oat patch, and yet but a little in the present wheat growing and cultivating in the other part of

the last year's wheat field. Not more than the early plowing of it last year after reaping might have left unburyed or more than might have been sown among the wheat thro' the carelessness in cleaning it. But the obstinate Simple rather than allow of things so very possible as to be really common chuses to adopt the inconsistency of all grains changing to cheat when he knows that cheat sown does only produce itself, to say nothing of the doctrine of a distinct species in creation; and nothing in the least tending to equivocal generation. It is needless to say more here I have been full upon it elsewhere since the year 1725 in England, when both Boerhave & Ld Bacon were quoted agst me to which I answered that in this argument, however great their knowledge, they did not discover much of the Philosopher in what they advanced.

28. Tuesday, May, 1776. On examining his corn Col. Carter finds it free from the weevil fly, which he attributes to planting the corn in a field distant from the cornhouses.

It seems the Dunmore fleet wch left Norfolk Harbour last Wednesday & seemed to Put to sea was on Sunday last seen off the mth of Pyankentank, and by report at the mouth of Rappahannock river, on wch a great alarm is spread among all the militia on the bay & riversides. If it had come higher up, I shd have called the report a mere Baltimore, without a foundation, but the whole gang removing; and as there are so many channels to fear and apprehension, a few vessels possibly seen in the bay are advanced to 50 & 100, & could it be possible this chief could be so great a fool as to burn his place of resort in Portsmouth, & 50 of his small craft only to remove to another place; and to have got no farther than the mouth of two rivers up this bay from Wednesday to Sunday? It may be a truth, but then it must be allowed, to be so, without one sensible circumstance. But, indeed, a human creature abandoned to barbarity and inhumanity is generally deprived of senses in some discovery or another; so says the old adage: *Quos Deus vult perdere prius dementat.*

29. Wednesday, May, 1776. Thinks that the late frosts and cool weather or our winters even into our Summers and

the early coming in of those frosts even in our most early fall weather will soon render this no tobacco or cotton Colony. At present deeply engaged in the cotton culture, about 11 I read a note from the magnanimous W^m^son Ball to Col. R. W. Carter, telling him that his boat boarded a pilot boat going up, I do suppose, to H. Hole commanded by one of the Perkins, sent down on purpose to make what discoveries he could of this tremendous Dunmore fleet. Col. Carter is informed that they had seen the fleet landing men on Gwin's Island. I remember a great many years ago to have been I think upon this Island, a p^l^ of ground or land not bigger than the Island of the same name lying between Occupatia creek and our Narrows by the cliffs up this river, I am certain not more than half a dozen hutts merely were on it, and I do suppose only inhabited by the family of that name in Kingston Psh. It makes the Southern side of Pyanketank or rather the Northern of Mobjack Bay. Believes that the story is a senseless one as no one could land a force unless it was to steal a few sheep. They must themselves be incommoded in getting over to our mainland. Has been advised to send away his stock and slaves, but will not even if Dunmore should come on shore and order me to do it.

I can with truth say, and bless my God for it, that altho I from the beginning abominated this present contest wch G. B. certainly began with America by attempting to tax her out of the constitutional road, yet I was so convinced of the Romanticness of her intention to come 3,000 miles and subdue above 3 million of People to her arbitrary rule of enslaving, that I never once entertained the least Possibility of her success in it; and I do suppose from a confidence in the success of our cause, by applying my leisure hours and devoting my most serious thoughts to the throne of mercy, I can say that I have never been moved with the least fear or apprehension as to the success of the dispute. But really my only dread has been on account of this separation which she, her King, her ministry & her Parliament have barbarously driven us into, least from the secret inclination of some to an arbitrary sway them-

selves we might fall into a worse situation from internal oppression & commotions than might have been obtained by a serious as well as cautious reconciliation. Therefore, I have always wondered at the prodigious rash Praise wch has been given to that most nonsensical of all Pamphlets *Common Sense,* in wch I could not deduce one just Sentiment, according to any Sense whatever. From whence I still conclude that the support wch it has met with must have been through a latent desire in every body that has countenanced it, to be as arbitrary as possible; and they have therefore resolved to run every risk rather than not indulge this innate disposition to rule, certainly then it behooves him who admires Peace, order & moderation in Government to be cautious of such People, for it is morally certain that there are such, & without the utmost timely care they will work themselves into the Hydra of Power. I don't expect to live to see it but mark the conclusion.

30th, Thursday, May, 1776. Bad news from Quebeck & here our own fears raising forces landing on Gwinn's Island. Ten thousand men arrived at New York but not landed. There we are strongly fortified to receive them.

31. Friday, May, 1776. Comments on the weather during the past month. Dry and cold throughout. It was this day two years ago I was first attacked with the colic which has never left my company one day in that time.

(*To be continued*)

PROF. NATHANIEL BEVERLEY TUCKER TO ST. GEORGE TUCKER.

Prof. Tucker was law professor at William and Mary and was an advocate of secession as early as 1833. He was half-brother of John Randolph. St. George Tucker was son of Henry St. George Tucker, President of the Supreme Court of Appeals, who was Prof. Tucker's brother. St. George was the author of a popular novel, "Hansford, a Tale of Bacon's Rebellion."

Williamsburg, March 25, 1850.

My Dear Saint,

I should have made more haste to answer your questions, had I not found the answer in your letter itself. The idea that a case of collision between one or more states of this Union and the rest could be a case of treason, that a war growing out of secession would be a cruel war and that *the captives taken in such a conflict would be not prisoners of War but prisoners of State*, was never heard of until it was understood to be expressed in Jackson's proclamation. It was protested against even then by his most zealous backers in the controversy of that day, and, in the following summer disavowed in a semi-official article in the *Globe*, which he afterwards authorized Ritchie to declare expressed his true opinion. He had before that disavowed it expressly *to me* in person, for, at the instance of my brother, I put to him the question I have underscored above, and received for answer, *"Prisoners of War, Sir, certainly."*

Your enquiry as to the probable consequence of secession by one or more states is answered in the letters you speak of. I beg you to read them all *seriatim* ("seriously" as Wm. Nelson rendered it). They are commanding great attention, and will work strongly on the public mind. I have been applied to from various quarters to have them printed in pamphlet, and measures are in progress to have it done by subscription. They will be in the hands of every member of the Nashville Convention, and will give their colors to the acts of that body. Virginia will probably not be there. So much the better. The timid policy of those who shrink from the trial will not embarrass the action of the more spirited, determined and far-seeing men, who see what is before them, and have made up their minds to meet it. That the action of S. C. will be derided is absolutely sure. She has been held in check by Calhoun for seventeen years. Seeing now no room between him and the grave for any ambitious career, he, for the first time,

looks at the subject with a single eye, and his late speech does but give utterance to what has been in his mind, and in the mind of every man in that state, during that time. Whether Georgia, Alabama & Mississippi will *at once* act with her is doubtful; but that is of small consequence. They will not act against her, nor will we; and a peaceable result may be rendered more probable by the interposition of a tier of non-seceding, slave-holding states as a sort of wrapping paper between her and Northern fanaticism.

You will see, from my published letters, that I consider the one Cotton growing region of the world absolutely safe from all aggression as one woman would be, if there were only one. Emancipation in Jamaica cost England only £20,000,000 and the Island. The same thing in the Cotton states would cost her her own existence. Any serious interruption of the production of that great staple which gives employment to all her labor, and in which so much of her capital is irrevocably embarked, would overturn the whole fabric, political and social. The same is true of the North itself, and to a considerable extent of all great European powers except Russia. A tier of states from the Atlantic to the Mississippi can make its own terms with all the world. *Nous verrons.* We shall see what we shall see; and, among other things, tim-servers and self-seekers will see the verification of our Saviour's words: "He who will save his life shall lose it."

Your mother wrote us word that she was unable to come to see us; so Lucy ran up on Tuesday, and I followed on Saturday, and returned to-day. They say Lucy's visit cured Gin. She certainly seems now quite well. Give my love and as many kisses as you will advance for me to dear little Lizzie and believe me truly and trustingly your loving uncle B.

CARTER GENEALOGY.

By DR. JOS. LYON MILLER.

Omissions from the April Magazine.

Stephen Fox, in his will made at sea in 1662, mentions certain tobacco of his in the hands of Capt. Thomas Carter at Nansemund in James River. If this refers to the Capt. Thomas Carter, who settled in Lancaster, and it seems probable that they are the same, it makes what would seem to be a peculiar coincidence unless explained by some tie of blood—as brothers or cousins—when it is very simple. The coincidence is that three men, apparently unrelated, of the same surname, the same social station, and nearly the same military rank, emigrated to Virginia about the same time; all settled in the same county—Nansemond; later all three purchased land in another county—Lancaster—where two of them settled as neighbors for the remainder of their lives while the third returned to England. There certainly seems to have been something more than coincidence guiding Col. Edward Carter, Col. John Carter, and Capt. Thomas Carter in the selection of their homes.

3, Thomas[2] Carter (Thomas[1]) was commissioned a captain in the Lancaster Militia April 7, 1711, by Governor Spotswood. His original commission is now owned by one of his descendants—Thomas Davis, Woodford County, Ky.

Aug. 10, 1719, "Mr. Edward Carter" (son of Capt. Thomas Carter, Sr.) had a negro boy, son of a free negro woman, bound to him till he was of age, and besides finding him suitable maintenace in his service he was *"to cause him to be taught to read and write."*

Also there is a strong probability that the above Edward Carter was the father of Joseph Carter, who died in Prince George County in 1761, as the names of the children of Joseph point strongly to a connection with the Lancaster family. As we have full data of the children of Capt. Thomas

Carter, Sr.'s other sons—Thomas, Henry, James, Peter, and Joseph, and only partial data of Edward's sons it would seem that this Joseph was his son if he was a member of the Lancaster Carter family. Joseph Carter mentions in his will in 1760 the following children and grandchildren: Sons—Joseph, John, Daniel, David and William; Daughters—Elizabeth, Lucy, Sarah, married a Williams, Anne married a Williams, and Mary married a Brockwell; grandsons—Carter Brockwell son of John Brockwell, Joseph son of David Carter, and Joseph son of Peter Williams. Peter Williams was later clerk of Prince George County.

45, Tabitha[3] Carter (Joseph,[2] Thomas[1]) was omitted from the list of children of Joseph Carter of White Chapel Parish.

THIRD GENERATION.

11, THOMAS[3] CARTER (Edward,[2] Thomas[1]) owned and lived on a plantation on Corotoman River adjoining the homes of Col. James Gordon, and his cousin Dale Carter. Col. Gordon mentions him several times in his Journal, from which I take the following extracts:

1759.

Jan. 6. "I went with Capt. Fouchee to Thomas Carter's to see about his son's Board. Rained all day."

Jan. 9. "Received a letter from Col. Conway and one to Nancy upon religion, but in my opinion very little to the purpose. Thos. Carter rec'd one which displeased him very much. Col. Conway seems so great a bigot that people who are religiously inclined dispise his advice."

Aug. 10. "Went to Col. Conway's in order to make friends with him about the letters he has lately rec'd from Thomas Carter, or in his name—which I performed with much difficulty. The old gentleman was in a great rage at first."

Oct. 22. "Col. Conway has begun again to write to Thomas Carter, which surprises us all, after his promise to have done with such writings."

James Davis,
of "Broadfield," Spotsylvania County.

Nov. 30. "Thomas Carter here and several of the neighbors."

1761

Aug. 10. "I went for some of the neighbors, viz.: Dale & Thos. Carter, John Mitchell, &c.," about getting a new minister.

Dec. 26. "Sent for several of the neighbors to dine with us—Col. Tayloe, Mr. Dale Carter, Thomas Carter & many of the girls of the neighborhood. All very agreeable."

Apr. 29, 1762. "We went to Mr. Thomas Carter's to Mrs. Whale's funeral, where Mr. Waddel preached an excellent sermon to a largs number of people, who seemed much pleased."

Feb. 13, 1763. "Mr. Waddel proposed ten persons for elders—Col. Selden, Dr. Robertson, Mr. Chichester, Dr. Watson, Mr. Thomas Carter, Mr. Dale Carter, Mr. John Mitchell, Mr. Belvard, Mr. Wright, & myself.

1763.

Aug. 14. "Told Mr. Criswell that his difference with Mr. W. has made it disagreable his boarding longer at our house, so he & his wife went to Thos. Carter's."

Aug. 23. "After dinner went with Mr. Chichester to the meeting house to meet Mr. Waddel & Mr. Criswell, who appointed this day to talk over their differences before Mr. Thomas Carter and Col. Selden. After much debate they agreed to be friends."

Sept. 13. "This day our son Nathaniel was baptized by Mr. Waddell. No Company but Mr. Chichester & Nancy, Molly Chichr. with Mr. Carter and their girls."

At a poll of freeholders in 1747 and again in 1752 for the election of Burgesses Thomas Carter voted for Col. Edwin Conway and Capt. Wm. Tayloe.

January 15, 1750, Thomas Carter married as his second wife Mrs. Anne Hunton, *nee* Wall, widow of Thomas Hunton whom she had married on Nov. 15, 1737. She had at least

one daughter by her former husband as Thomas Carter remembers his daughter-in-law Anne Hunton in his will. By his first wife Thomas Carter had issue as follows:

46. Edward, died in Lancaster in 1781.

47. Thomas.

48. George, removed to Spotsylvania about 1743, and later to Buckingham county prior to 1766.

49. John, removed to Spotsylvania about 1743, where he died 1783.

50. Rawleigh, removed to Amelia County prior to 1772.

51. James, probably a cripple or an embecile.

52. Margaret, married a Cummings.

53. Sarah, married a Mr. McTire.

54. Alice, married a Mr. Griggs.

55. Judith, married a Mr. Chilton.

56. Mary, married a Mr. Chilton.

57. Lucy, married John Smither, Nov. 11, 1761.

"Thomas Carter, of Christ Church Parish Gent." made his will in 1776, prob. Dec. 19, 1776. To son John two negroes; to son Edward two negroes and his lower plantation; son Thomas all the cash he had paid on a tract of a hundred acres of land, all his wearing apparel, and to Thomas's son Edward a negro; son Rawleigh a negro and his upper plantation; son George a negro and his book called "Becket on the New Testament"; daughter Judith Chilton a negro; daughter Margaret Cummings three negroes that he had already given her; daughter Sarah McTire an equal share of estate after all legacies were paid, as he had already given her a negro devided in the estate of her first husband Robert Henning, Jr.; daughter Alice Griggs two negroes, horse and sidesaddle; son James two negro men to maintain him during his natural life. He was to be under the care of his son Edward, who was to receive the negroes if James lived fifteen years longer. Also

gave James his best bed and furniture; to grandson Charles Chilton, son of daughter Mary, £40, he having already given a like sum to his brother Thomas Chilton. To daughter-in-law Anne Hunton he gave a negro girl, her sidesaddle, his least great Bible a new table cloath, second best bed and furniture, his old desk and a loom and weaving gear. To cousin Dale Carter £5. All children to share alike in the residuary estate. Sons Edward and Rawleigh to be executors.

12. WILLIAM[3] CARTER (Edward,[2] Thomas[1]), died in 1757 leaving three children to the guardianship of Thomas Carter. They were: 58. William, Jr. 59. George. 60. Elizabeth.

The appraisement of the personal estate amounted to £106.13. Jan. 21, 1773 the estate was divided between George and Elizabeth.

13. THOMAS CARTER (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) married *circa* 1720-'25 Joana * * * probably a Williamson or Ball as her descendants have perpetuated the baptismal names of Jesse, Jeduthun, Rawleigh, and Williamson, more fully than any other branch of the Carter family. They are all names to be found in the Ball family and I think probably enter it through a marriage between the Ball and Williamson families. But as these names appear in other branches of this Carter family they may come through Arabella the wife of the second Capt. Thomas Carter, father of the above Thomas.

Thomas and Joan Carter were the parents of three sons, two of whom—Jesse and Thomas were mentioned in their grandfather Thomas Carter's will in 1728. The son Thomas, however, died in 1733 and another son born Nov. 27, 1734, received the same name, as often happened in those days in Virginia.

Thomas Carter of Christ Church Parish made his will April 17, 1735, probated July 9, 1735. He left entire estate to loving wife Joan Carter during her widowhood, after which to go to his two sons Jesse and Thomas. Asked that no appraisement be made; but an inventory shows a good lot of household goods, books, a gold ring, and *seven sets of brick moulds*—showing that bricks were made in that part of Lancaster. As Thomas

Carter had inherited his father's home place and he in turn had received his father's home plantation on Corotoman River, this was probably the original home of the first Thomas Carter in Lancaster.

Joan Carter evidently remarried as May 3, 1737, the estate was turned over to Mr. Thomas James as guardian for Jesse and Thomas Carter. March 10, 1748, Jesse Carter was evidently of age as the court settled with him for his share of the personal estates of his father and grandfather Thomas Carter, Jr. and Sr. Feb. 21, 1752, in a suit against Mr. Thomas James, his guardian, the court allowed Thomas Carter his share of his father, Thomas Carter's estate, which included a negro wench and boy. Aug. 17, 1753, Jesse Carter as guardian of Thomas Carter returned an account to court for the services of the said negroes. This would show that Thomas Carter was not yet of age, and tend to substantiate the fact that his father had two sons named Thomas.

61. Jesse Carter, removed from Lancaster after 1760.

62. Thomas Carter, removed to Pittsylvania after 1764.

14. JOSEPH[3] CARTER (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) married about 1718 Catharine Stephens, or Stevens, daughter of James Stephens of King and Queen County. They lived on Corotoman River, Lancaster till 1738, when Joseph Carter removed his family to his plantation in Spotsylvania. As early as 1727 Joseph Carter was Tobacco Inspector at Corotoman, as in that year complaints were made by various planters against him because of his "overbearing temper and partiality in administering the duties of his office." In 1732 Col. Edwin Conway wrote to Gov. Gooch about the matter, but Carter seems to have continued as Inspector till he removed to Spotsylvania in 1738. The next year his brother Dale Carter was appointed Inspector in his stead.

Before his removal to Spotsylvania Joseph Carter was granted 215 acres in that county, to which he added 89 acres from Robt. Brown in 1739; 100 acres from Benj. Matthews in 1748; 100 acres from Mark Wheeler in 1749; and 190 acres from Robert Goodloe in 1750.

Mary Carter Davis,
Daughter of Joseph Carter, and Wife of James Davis

Jan. 2, 1739. "Joseph Carter of y^e^ Psh of St. George in the County of Spotsylvania Planter" made a deed for two negroes to his daughter Mary Eliz^th^. "the wife of James Davis of y^e^ County afsd." "The sd Robin having been devised unto me the sd Joseph Carter by my father Tho. Carter of the parish of Christ Church in the County of Lancaster Gent by his will recorded in the sd county in October, 1733; and the said Bet having been conveyed to me by Deed of Gift from my wife's father Mr. James Stevens of the county of King & Queen bearing date the 2^nd^ Day of Dec^r^. 1721, and recorded in y^e^ sd County on the same day." It will be noticed that this date is the same as the date of birth of Joseph Carter's daughter Mary Elizabeth. And was probably intended by her grandfather Stevens as a gift to her when she arrived at legal age or marriage. The original of this deed shows a very good signature and seal with the cypher "J. C."

Feb. 19, 1750, Joseph Carter of St. George's Parish, Spotsylvania made his will, probated May 7, 1750. He left the home plantation of 215 acres and two negroes to wife Catharine; the Wheeler land, one negro man, horse, and a gun "called Mary" to son Joseph; the Mathews land, a negro man, young horse, and his gun called "Ye Reed" to son John; the Brown land and thirty acres adjoining, negro man, choice of his other three guns, and £3 current money to son George; the home place after wife's death, choice of his other two guns, and thirty pounds current money to son Robert; negro girl to daughter Mary; thirty-three pounds c.m. to daughter Elizabeth; thirty pounds c.m. to daughter Caty. All sons to share in his brandy still. Wife, son John and friend Mr. John Minor Executors. The appraisement of "Mr. Joseph Carter" amounted to £404. 2 .2. and besides a good lot of household furniture included a "parcel of books, a pair of silver buckles and four silver spoons. Catharine Carter was still living in 1771 when she made a deed to son John.

Joseph and Catharine Stevens Carter had issue: (Bible Records):

63. Thomas, born May 8, 1720, accidentally killed Christmas week, 1738.

64. Mary Elizabeth, born Dec. 2, 1721, probably in King and Queen Co., married James Davis of "Broadfield," Spotsylvania, Dec. 25, 1738, died after 1770.

65. Edward Dale, born June 2, 1723, died prior to 1750.

66. John, born June 8, 1725, living in Orange county in 1785.

67. George, born Dec. 18, 1728.

68. Elizabeth, born Sept. 20, 1731.

69. Joseph, born May 3, 1733; 70. Catharine, born May 3, 1733. Twins.

71. Robert, born Aug. 22, 1735.

16. DANIEL[3] CARTER (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) appears first in the Lancaster records May 17, 1725, as the attorney of Robert Biscoe. He was married and had children when his father made his will in 1728 as his portion of the estate was left to him without mention of reversion to his brothers in case of failure to have issue, which mention was made regarding each of the unmarried sons of Thomas Carter.

Nov. 16, 1759, the appraisement of the personal estate of Daniel Carter, Sr., was returned to court by his widow Elizabeth Carter. It amounted to £343 .2 .4 and included negroes, books, a sword, and the usual furniture. It was divided among the following children and grandchildren:

72. John, died in 1782 in Lancaster.

73. Daniel, died in 1795 in Lancaster.

74. Thomas, removed to Culpeper.

75. Daughter, married a Kent and had sons William and John Kent, 1759.

76. Daughter, married a Kirk and had son John Kirk in 1759.

77. Frances Carter.

78. Joseph Carter.

19. DALE[3] CARTER (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) lived on a plantation in Christ Church parish near the home of Col. James Gordon. Bishop Meade says he was a vestryman at old Christ Church, and Col. Gordon says that Mr. Waddell in 1763 proposed him as one of the Elders in the Presbyterian Church so that he must have left the church of his fathers under the preaching of Mr. Waddel. "Dale Carter, Gent." was a member of the county court in 1763, '64, '65, & '66; and in 1774 and 1776 he was a member of the Committee of Safety for Lancaster county. Col. Gordon mentions him as follows:

June 9, 1758. "This day my daughter Anne was married to Mr. Rich[d] Chichester about 11 o'clock forenoon; had a very agreable company, viz.: Col. Conway, Mrs. C. and her children, Col. Tayloe, Dr. Robertson, & his wife, Mrs. Chinn, Mr. Armistead, Mr. Dale Carter & his wife, Mrs. Doggett & Sally, Bridger Haynie, Col. Seldon & Miss Betty Seldon, Richd. Spann, and Robt. Henning."

Oct. 14, 1761. "Went with Col. Tayloe and Mr. Dale Carter to Mr. Chichester to get his English papers ready to send to Wmrg. to have the Governor's certificate & seal of the Colony."

Jan. 6, 1762. "Mrs. Conway and her children, Col. Tayloe, and Dale Carter at dinner. Stayed all night."

March 24, 1762. "This night Sallie Carter died—Dale's daughter."

Feb. 16, 1763. "Mr. Dale Carter came to let us know that Mrs. Edwards has cleared up Sally Dogget's character by oath."

Oct. 5, 1763. "Went with my wife to see Mr. Dale Carter found him very ill. My wife carried him something and he was better in the evening."

Oct. 6. "Mr. Dale Carter's negro came to tell us his master is very ill all night. My wife rose very early and went to see him. We called there as we went to Col. Conway's funeral and found him better."

Dale Carter was not married in 1728 when his father made his will; but seems to have been married twice—the second wife being a Mrs. Elizabeth Stradford, who had a son Peter Stradford.

Dec. 11, 1776. "Dale Carter Gent" of Christ Church parish made his will, probated on the 19th. of the same month. He left to his wife all the estate she brought with her and that he had paid for Peter Stradford in lieu of her dower. He left the home plantation to son James, who was living in 1811; daughter Anne negroes Mary and Spencer; son John £5 cash and he and daughter Anne to have the right to live at the home place. Rest of estate equally to all children. This will bears a seal showing a bird similar to the Dale seal used by Thomas Carter in 1700.

Dale Carter has issue as follows:

79. Rev. Jesse Carter, died after 1789.

80. Jeduthun.

81. Augustine, b. Oct. 23, 1741, died in 1811.

82. William, died 1790.

83. James, alive in 1811.

84. Frances, married Edwards.

85. John.

86. Anne.

21. GANY[3] CARTER (Henry,[2] Thomas[1]) died without issue prior to 1749. His next older brother John Carter of Stafford County as his heir sold May 12, 1749, to brother Josiah Carter 95 acres of land on Corotoman River, part of the land left to Gany Carter by his father Henry Carter. This land adjoined land of Capt. James Gordon, Thomas Carter, Sr., Jesse Carter, and John Davis.

23. CATHARINE[3] CARTER (Henry,[2] Thomas[1]) died in 1749 unmarried. She left by will, probated July 14, 1749, to loving brother Harry Carter her silver studs and one Pistole; to brother Josiah Carter her plain gold ring; to sister Anne Carter, her mourning ring; to brother Harry's wife—Lucretia her best suit of clothes and her cloak; to brother Robert one third of residue of estate, and the remainder to sister Anne. Inventory mentions 1 large Bible, Speed'd Chronicle, Byfield's Sermons, and a Common Prayer Book.

26. HENRY[3] CARTER (Henry,[2] Thomas[1]) married Lucretia prior to 1749. In Sept. 1750 he added to the land left him by his father 180 acres from Peter Conway, Gent. Is styled "Planter" in this deed.

He made his will July 5, 1775, probated June 17, 1784. Gives wife Lucretia all estate during her widowhood. Names children:

87. Thomas, died in 1824.

88. Lucretia.

89. Chloe, died in 1827.

90. Betty.

91. Sinah.

Henry Carter's Inventory included a Bible, the Connection of the Old and New Testaments, Drib[n]. Court, The Prodigal Son, and "a parcel of old bookes."

27. JOSIAH[3] CARTER (Henry,[2] Thomas[1]) lived and died on Corotoman River. July 24, 1753 he was married to Betty Doggett, daughter of William Dogget. In addition to the land left him by his father he purchased 95 acres from brother John in 1749, and 138 acres from Thomas Hubbard in 1756. He died in 1763 and the settlement of his estate mentions wife Betty Carter and the following children:

92. Nancy Carter.

93. Betty Carter.

94. George Carter.

The Inventory of estate recorded July 13, 1763, amounted to £76.16.3 and included five "painted plates," a punch bowl, a pair of silver clasps, and "4 pounds weight of Books."

36. Aaron[3] Carter (Peter,[2] Thomas[1]) was married prior to 1740 as in April 1740 his wife Martha relinquished her dower in a tract of land part of their home place in St. Mary White Chapel parish.

They had the following children:

94. Katharine Carter.

95. Molly, married Edwin Lunsford Nov. 11, 1772.

96. Mildred Carter.

97. Elizabeth, married Philip Brooks prior to 1772.

98. Aaron, under age 1772.

Dec. 14, 1772, Aaron Carter's personal estate amounting to £302.13 was devided among the widow and children; the widow, Martha Carter receiving one third—three negroes, best bed in the large room, chest of drawers, large oval table, clothes press, flag chairs, etc.

Martha Carter, widow, died in 1782 and her inventory was returned to court in June.

38. MOSES[3] CARTER (Peter,[2] Thomas[1]) of White Chapel parish made his will Jan. 3, 1740, prob. April 11, 1740. He left a negro to his mother and his plantation to brother Aaron Carter. Appraisement included a pair of silver shoebuckles and a pair of knee buckles.

As I expect to obtain more complete data in the next few months of the following sons of Thomas and Henry Carter they have been omitted from their proper place and will appear in the October number with the descendants of James and Joseph Carter the other sons of Capt. Thomas Carter, Sr.

15. James Carter, 17. Peter Carter, 18. Edward Carter, and 20. Charles Carter—sons of Thomas[2]; and 22. John Carter, and 28. Robert Carter—sons of Henry.[2]

(To be continued)

HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL NOTES.

WALKER. It is stated in Virginia Magazine, XVI., page 107, that Clara Robinson, daughter of Col. Christopher Robinson, married John Walker, formerly of Ashbourn, in Derbyshire, but at the time of the marriage living in Middlesex County, Virginia. The Middlesex parish register shows that Clara Robinson, daughter of Mr. Christopher Robinson and Mrs. Katherine Robinson, was born October 11, 1689, married James Walker (who was son of John Walker of Ashbourn in Derbyshire), May 20, 1707, died October 25, and was buried October 29, 1715. They had issue (1) Ann, born January 17, 1707; (2) *John,* born Sept. 16, 1709; (3) Katherine, born Nov. 3, 1711. John Walker, son of James, married Catharine Yates[1], born June 24, 1706, daughter of Rev. Bartholomew Yates and his wife Sarah, widow of Tobias Mickelborough, and had issue (See Yates in *Hayden,* pp. 121-122): (1) Sarah, born June 30, 1734, and married January 20, 1750, Robert Page of Brodneck, Hanover Co., Va. (*Page Family,* 127). (2) Clara, born Sept. 7, 1737, married John Allen, of Claremont, Surry County. See abstracts of wills of Richard Walker, uncle of James, and of John Walker, son of James, in Virginia Magazine I., pp. 470-1, according to which James Walker was educated in England.

ARMISTEAD. It has been seen that William Armistead, of Eastmost River (born 1671; died 1711), and Anna Lee had a son John, who died in 1734. He married twice (1) Elizabeth ———; II. Susanna Meriwether, daughter of Thomas Meriwether, of Essex. By the latter marriage he had John, William and Susanna, who married Moore Fountleroy. William, it is probable, married Judith Bray Inglis, daughter of James Inglis (son of Mungo Inglis) and had Henry, born January 8, 1753. He removed to Charles City County, where

[1] Her tombstone, formerly at Urbanna, and now at "Hewick," Middlesex Co., reads: "Here lies Catherine, late wife of John Walker, of Urbanna. She departed this life the 5th day of October, 1738, in the 33[d] year of her age."

he left descendants.[2] It it probable that Judith Armistead, Meriwether, of Essex. By the latter marriage he had John, who died in 1734. He married twice (1) Elizabeth ———; II. Susanna Meriwether, daughter of Thomas Meriwether, of Essex. By the latter marriage he had John, William and Susanna, who married Moore Fauntleroy, William, it is probable, married Judith Bray Inglis, daughter of James Inglis (son of Mungo Inglis) and had Henry, born January 8, 1753. He removed to Charles City County, where he left descendants.[2] who married Dr. John Brown of Williamsburg, December 25, 1743 (Bible record) and had Judith who married, July 17, 1760, Samuel Coke, was a daughter of John Armistead by his first marriage with Elizabeth ———. See Lee, *Lee of Virginia,* 533; QUARTERLY II., 232; VII., 184.

Dr. John Brown and Judith Armistead had issue (Bruton Parish Register) 1, Judith, born 174-; 2, John, born 1750; 3, Sally Armistead, born 1758.

GWYNN (GWYN, GWINN). Hugh Gwynn was an early settler in Charles River County (subsequently York), and in 1639 represented it in the House of Burgesses. He was a justice of York in 1641 and burgess in 1646. In 1642 he patented 1,700 acres at the mouth of the Pyanketank river, and among his headrights were Christopher Higginson, Mrs. Ann Gwynn, and Eliza Higginson. Col. Hugh Gwynn was burgess for Gloucester County in 1652, and probably died about 1654, when Elizabeth Gwynn patented 700 acres in Isle of Wight County, as executrix of Hugh Gwynn, who had patented the same in 1640. Hugh Gwynn, doubtless his son, was vestryman of Kingston parish, Gloucester in 1680. Probably another son was Rev. John Gwynn a distinguished royalist minister of Ware Parish, Gloucester Co., who came to Virginia in the Cromwellian times. He had issue: Edmund Gwynn, who mar-

[2] Henry Armistead of Charles City Co. married Anne Southall, and he died about 1813. The will of his son, Henry Armistead was dated March 2, 1819, and names his brothers John and David, and sisters Anne Southall Armistead, Rebecca Edloe Armistead and Allezoera Armistead—Charles City County *records.*

ried Lucy Bernard, daughter of Col. William Bernard and Lucy Higginson, his wife (daughter of Capt. Robert Higginson) (Va. Magazine, IV., 204). Edmund Gwynn made his will March 10, 1682, and names issue: (1) Lucy, who married Thomas Reade, and (2) *John.* Humphrey and John Gwynn at a General Court held Sept. 30, 1681, in their own right and as attorney for Humphrey Stafford, petitioned for the administration of the estate of Col. John Burnham, deceased, on the ground that they were his nearest kin (Middlesex Records). In 1698-9 Mr. John Gwynn is mentioned in the Middlesex Records as having married Margaret, the relict of Mr. Francis Bridge, who died about 1678, at which time she spoke of Major Robert Beverley as her "father-in-law." The destruction of the records of Gloucester and Matthews prevents us from knowing much of John Gwynn, but it is very possible that he was the father of John Gwynn, who married, February 25, 1720, Mildred Reade. He had issue: Humphrey Gwynn, born Dec. 16, 1727; died Dec. 8, 1794, who was the owner of Gwynn's Island, when Lord Dunmore occupied it in 1776. He married, Feb. 21, 1755, Frances, daughter of Thomas and Frances Tabb Peyton, and had issue (1) John, born March 27, 1756, drowned in Milford Haven on Sept. 11, 1770; (2) Francis, born Dec. 5, 1757; (3) Mildred, born Nov. 23, 1759; (4) Thomas Peyton, born April 19, 1762 (who married Ann and had 1 Frances Ann, born Dec. 14, 1793, and married William B. Giles U. S. Senator) (5) Edmund, born August 17, 176-; died Jan. —; (6) Martha Peyton, born Feb. 2, 1764; (7) Humphrey, born Feb. 9, 1769; (8) Lucy, born June 10, 1771; died March 6, 1771; (9) Elizabeth Toye, born April 25, 1772; (10) Mary Tabb, born Aug. 22, 1774; (11) Matthew Whiting, born Sept. 23, 1776; (12) Lucy, born May 27, 1779. Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies,* 269. Humphrey Gwynn, the father of these children, advertises, in 1776, 500 acres of Gwinn's Island for sale, QUARTERLY XI., 194. Mary Tabb Gwynn, one of these children, married Samuel Turner and their daughter Francis H. P. Turner, married, August 24, 1824, William Robinson and their daughter Martha Peyton Tabb

Turner, married, Feb. 25, 1830, Hon. Augustine H. Shepherd, of North Carolina. Query: Can any one give the parentage and ancestry of Augustine H. Shepherd?

The relationship of David Gwynn, of Richmond County, to the parties above mentioned is not known. He made his will February 22, 1703, which was proved March 8, 1704. He mentions two brothers—Benjamin Gwynn, of Bristol, England and Rev. Edward Gwynn—a minister of Wales, and a sister Mary Gwynn. He had real estate near Harford-West in Wales. In 1699 there was a deed recorded in Richmond County from David Gwynn and his wife Katherine, daughter of Samuel Griffin. She married I. William Fauntleroy; II. David Gwynn. The will of Samuel Griffin, dated February 2, 1702, and recorded in Northumberland County names his grandchildren—(1) Elizabeth Gwynn (who married I. Samuel Lyde of Bristol, II. Hon. John Tayloe); 2 Sarah Gwynn and 3 Katherine (who married Newman Brockenbrough).

HARRISONS OF JAMES RIVER. Which Benjamin Harrison "qualified as County Lieut. of Brunswick Co. 5 July, 1739, took the appointed oaths and signed the test" (Brunswick Co. Records)? Was it the Wakefield-Brandon Benjamin Harrison, or Benjamin Harrison, of Brunswick Co., who made his will in 1789 which was proved in 1790. It names sons Thomas Harrison, Benjamin Harrison, James Harrison, daughter Rita Cook (Mrs. John Cook), Harriet Reese (Mrs. Thomas Reese), Judith Collier (Mrs. Myhill Collier), Elyn Barnes (Mrs. John Barnes), Rebecca Hicks (Mrs. John Hicks), Mary Hicks (Mrs. Robert Hicks), grandsons Theophilus Harrison and Robert Harrison, granddaughters Judith Barnes and Elizabeth Hicks. Sons James and Benjamin Harrison Executors. This last Benjamin was Mrs. Love's (Frances Harrison's) father. This Harrison family were kinsmen of President Wm. Henry Harrison, and of Major Richard Harrison, N. C. militia, Revolutionary Army (who married Anne Patillo, daughter of Pres. Henry Patillo, Provincial Council, N. C.), and his brother James Harrison, Revolutionary Army, S. C. (who married Elizabeth Hampton, sister of Gen. Wade Hampton and of

Col. Henry Hampton of the Revolutionary Army), both of whom were from James River, Va., but I don't know in what degree. The Stubbs book makes the statement. I want to know who were the parents of Benjamin Harrison, who died 1789-90, and if he descended from Benjamin Harrison, the councillor, also the name of his wife? Family tradition states that the name of the wife of his son Benjamin was Martha Hicks, but one branch of the family questions this and claim that this Benjamin was Francis Harrison Love's father. Was Henry Harrison son of Councillor, who died 1732 twice married? And are the Sussex Co., Va., Harrisons his descendants? His will leaves his plantation to his nephew, Benjamin Harrison, upon the death of Henry's wife, who was Elizabeth Smith, and I always supposed he had no children, but saw in the Times-Dispatch, that the Sussex Harrisons were descended from him.—*Mrs. Mary H. Benning*, 1420 Broad St., Columbus, Georgia. This Harrison family seems to come from a family of Harrisons in York County, Va., among whom the names Robert, Richard and James frequently occur. A full account of them has never been given—*Editor.*

GREENHOW. In Bruton Parish Churchyard, Williamsburg, is the tombstone of Judith Greenhow (née Davenport), first wife of John Greenhow:

In memory of Judith Greenhow
a Sincere Christian
Who died the Seventh day
of January, 1765,
and in the 29 year of her age.

How lov'd how valu'd was thy lot
To whom Related or by whom begot
A heap of Dust alone remains of thee
So all thou art and all the proud will be.

AMES—MILBY—CHRISTIAN. The ancestry of Michael Christian is given in "Sir George Yeardley and some of his Descendants," by T. T. Upshur. He errs in giving Catherine

as daughter of Michael Christian. It should be Margaret Christian. She married I Richard Ames; II. Zerubabel Ames, from whom the children are descended. Her eldest son George Christian Ames (grandfather of Margaret Seymour Hall, 24 Monroe Place, Brooklyn, New York,) left the old family Bible from which these corrections are made. His son John Christian Ames was a student of William and Mary College in 1857. He died in consequence of injuries received in the Confederate service. The following is a copy of the Bible record:

MARRIAGES.

Gilbert Milby & Betsey his wife were married the 23^{d} day of May, A. D. 1799.

George C. Ames & Hester Walter Milby were married on Hampton Creek the 10th April A. D. 1828.

BIRTHS.

Gilbert Milby son of John & Rachel his wife was born 28 November A. D. 1767.

Betsey Kellam daughter of John Kellam & Margaret his wife was born 10 July, 1773.

John Kellam Milby son of Gilbert & Betsey his wife was born 14 March, A. D. 1800.

Katharine Milby dau. of Gilbert & Betsey his wife was born the 6 November, 1801.

Hester Walter Milby daughter of Gilbert & Betsey his wife was born the 21st July 1805.

George Christian Ames son of Zerubabel & Margaret Ames was born 16 December A. D. 1801.

DEATHS.

Gilbert Milby departed this life the 30th day of September 1807 aged 39 years 10 months & 2 days.

John Kellam Milby departed this life 5th July 1801 aged 1 year 3 months & 21 days.

Katharine Milby departed this life 26 September 1805 aged 6 years 10 mos. 26 days.

Hester Milby Ames departed this life the 5th day of December 1840 aged 35 years 4 mo. 2 days.

MARTIN—Col. John Martin lived in Caroline and King William counties. He appears to have emigrated to Virginia from England about 1730, but his ancestry is unknown. In the Virginia Gazette for the year 1738 he advertised for a stolen silver pint cup having his arms engraved upon it: "A chevron between 3 half moons," and a ring with J. M. M. engraved on it (John and Martha Martin). He married Martha Burwell, daughter of Major Lewis Burwell of Carter's Creek and Martha Lear, his second wife. She was born 1703 and died May 27, 1738. Burwell had another daughter Martha (by his first wife Abigail Smith), Col. Nicholson's flame, who married Henry Armistead, of "Hesse." Col. John Martin had issue three sons and four daughters. (QUARTERLY XI., 146.) One of the daughters was Elizabeth Martin born, according to Abingdon Parish register, "July ye 16th and baptized July ye 23, 1721. About 1742 she married Patrick Barclay, merchant of Louisa County. Col. Martin's three sons were George, born Sept. 3rd., bapt. Oct. 2, 1722. (Abingdon Parish register), and probably John, and Samuel of King William County. QUARTERLY VII., 74; XIII., 205. The loss of the records of Caroline and King William Counties prevents us from learning much about Col. Martin and his descendants.

DELK. Roger Delk came to Virginia in the *Southampton*, and was employed by John Chew on his plantation at Hog Island, in 1624 (Hotten's *Emigrants to America*). In 1631-32 he was burgess for Stanley Hundred. He died about 1635, for his widow, Alice, patented land on Lawnes Creek in 1635. Roger Delk, their son, was born in 1634, according to his deposition in 1674, when he stated he was forty years old.

There is a deed recorded in Surry county, dated December 5, 1639, from Roger Delk, to Capt. Thomas Adams for 100 acres, and on November 9, 1659, Alice Gregory, widow of Roger Delk, and mother of Roger Delk who made the deed, gives her consent to the deed. Gregory was her third husband, for on Dec. 23, 1636, Nicholas Reynolds patented 1,000 acres at Lawne's Creek, adjoining the lands of Edward Rogers and Captain William Pierce, said land "being granted by Capt. Thomas West, late deceased, to Roger Delke, also lately deceased, and now due said Reynolds as marrying the widow said Delke." On August 23, 1661, Roger Delk, second of the name (and Rebecca his wife), for love and affection deeded to his "brothers, Francis and Robert Rennells, born of his mother, Alice Gregory (wife of John Gregory) by her husband, Nicholas Reynolds of Lawne's Creek, deced.," a tract of land in Surry County. In 1673 Roger Delk took part in an incipient mutiny in Surry County against the taxes laid by the justices in their levy for their expenses for "Drams and Cyder." (QUARTERLY III., 123.) In 1687 he was one of a company of horse for Surry County. His will, dated October 28, 1692, proved July 4, 1693, names legatees: Eldest son John, daughter Rebecca (a large silver cup, two gold rings and a silver bodkin), youngest sons, Roger and Joseph, wife Elizabeth. There is a deed recorded in Surry from Joseph Delk, dated 1735. *Virginia Maga. of History and Biography* III., 277. Roger Delk made his will, which was proved in Surry April 29, 1773. I have not the details. Mrs. Delk is mentioned in the will of Elizabeth Stith (1764). In 1778 Moreland Delk was ensign in the company in Isle of Wight, of which William Gray was captain. (Isle of Wight Co. records.)

HUBBARD—BOLLING. In Vol. VI. of QUARTERLY, No. 4, p. 245, in the Hubard lineage, among the issue of Robert Thruston Hubard, and Susan Bolling, their seventh (7) child Bolling Hubard was a distinguished lawyer. He married Felitia Chapman, not Julia, as stated in QUARTERLY; however they were sisters, daughters of Gov. Reuben Chapman of Huntsville, Ala., and his wife Felitia Pickett. Gov. Chap-

man was a distinguished lawyer, served as Governor of Ala., member of U. S. Congress, and held some public positions in Paris; the Hon. Bolling Hubard and his wife Felitia Chapman, are both dead, they had one child, Felitia Chapman Hubard; the sister Juliet Chapman married Col. Turner Clanton, of Ala., and they had but one child, Mary Turner Clanton. Col. Clanton is dead, but his widow is living.

Clopton Family: See Quarterly XVII., p. 296. Three more names should be added to the list of children of (8) Mary Clopton, who married Daniel Terry. XI Josephine married Harris, XII Rufus died in infancy, XIII Sallie died young.

Dinwiddie. Will of Robert Dinwiddie, of Jackson River, Bath County, "now in the late evening of my days," dated June 21, 1796. It names son William Dinwiddie, wife Elizabeth Dinwiddie; £30 to John Dinwiddie, whom I have kept from a child, grandson Robert Dinwiddie my son James' son, Mathew Patent and John his brother, sons of my daughter Elizabeth; William Kinkead, son to dau. Mary; Thomas, Robert, Charles, James, William and Stephen Wilson, sons of my daughter Jane; James Dinwiddie, Stephen Wilson and his wife, James Patent and John Kinkead and his wife; son William Dinwiddie executor, to whom he leaves his plantation. Proved Oct. 4, 1796. Will of Elizabeth Dinwiddie, her mark; son James, daus. Jenny Wilson, Mary Kinkead, son William. Proved Oct. 4, 1796. Will of Elizabeth Dinwiddie, her mark; December 20, 1803.

QUERRIES.

By MRS. A. B. JONES, 11 Montauk Ave., Mobile, Alabama.

Thomas Hardaway while a little boy came from England to America about 1685 on a ship owned by Capt. Joseph Thomas. He grew up and married Miss Jane Drewry, of Drewry's Bluff, Va., and settled at Osborne's, Chesterfield Co., Va. Wish names of Miss Jane Drewry's parents and their colonial and Revolutionary records, also coat of arms.

John Hardaway (son of Thomas Hardaway and Jane Drewry) married Miss Frances Markham. Wish names of her parents and their colonial and Revolutionary records, also coat of arms. Lived in Chesterfield Co., Va.

Robert Rives married Miss Martha Hardaway, daughter of Thomas Hardaway and Agnes Peterson. They lived at Hardaway Mills, Nottoway River, Nottoway Co., Va. This "Thomas Hardaway" was a son of Thomas Hardaway and Jane Drewry of Osborne's, Chesterfield Co., Va. Wish names of "Robert Rives," his parents and grandparents, their colonial and Revolutionary records, and coat of arms. Also wish names of "Agnes Peterson's parents and grandparents, their colonial and Revolutionary records and coat-of-arms.

William Rives, of Sussex Co., Va., married Miss Lucy Shands, daughter of William Shands, of Sussex Co. Wish names of this Mr. William Rives' children and who they married.

Wish names of parents and grandparents of John Thweatt, who married Miss Judith. (Wish names of her parents). His will was probated in Prince George Co., Va., names grandson John, son of James, grandson Peterson Thweatt, son William, daus, Elizabeth Burchett, Martha Goodwyn, Mary Thweatt and Judith Thweatt; granddaughter Amy Goodwin, grandson Thomas Thweatt, son of my son James Thweatt. Wife Judith, dated Jan. 5, 1758; proved June 12, 1759. Wish the Thweatt ancestry.

ERRORS

IN QUARTERLY, VOL. XVII, NO. 4,

[April Number, 1909.]

The Colston children given on page 241 were children of Travers Colston (not *Francis* Colston which is a misprint).

On page 274, "Greenhow Chart, by Mr. Ralph Greenhow" should be "Greenhow Chart, by R. Relph Greenhow."

On page 251, the date of Richard Nash's birth should be 1674, not 1670. And John Dawson was congressman from 1794 to 1814, (not 1824).

On page 268, in 13th line, the date of Francis Bland's birth should be September 24, 1752, U. S., (not 1732). She died at Mattoax, January 18, 1788. *Bland Papers,* Vol. II., 120.

ADVERTISEMENTS.

JUST ISSUED

294 Pages Octavo
Price, $3.00

The Cradle of the Republic

Jamestown and James River

1908

BY LYON GARDINER TYLER, LL.D.
President of William and Mary College

Second Edition, Rewritten, Enlarged and Copiously Illustrated

Sent to any place in the United States free of postage

CONTENTS

I. New Foundland and Roanoke. II. Colonies of the London and Plymouth Companies. III. The Indians along James River. IV. The Island of Jamestown. V. The English at Jamestown. VI. The Fort. VII. The Church. VIII. The Block House. IX. The Glass House. X. The Governor's House. XI. The State House. XII. Social Conditions. XIII. Political Conditions. XIV. Origin and History of Places along James River.

¶ A detailed history of Jamestown Island and accounts of the origin of the other James River settlements—Hampton, Newport News, Martin's Hundred, Brandon, Westover, Shirley, Curls, &c. The beginnings of English civilization upon the American continent.

Address LYON G. TYLER,
Williamsburg, Va.

Just Issued *285 Pages Octavo Price $2.50*

WILLIAMSBURG

THE OLD COLONIAL CAPITAL

Copiously Illustrated

BY LYON GARDINER TYLER, LL. D.

President of William and Mary College

AS Jamestown and the James river settlements were the beginnings of English civilization upon the American continent, Williamsburg, which succeeded Jamestown as the capital of Virginia, was the CRADLE of the AMERICAN REVOLUTION. Here, in the old capitol at the east end of Duke of Gloucester street, were passed the resolutions against the stamp act, the resolutions for the committees of correspondence, and the resolutions calling on Congress to declare the American colonies free and independent States. Here is William and Mary College, where Jefferson, Marshall, Monroe, the Randolphs, Dabney Carr and a host of other great men studied. Here was the first American theatre and the first hospital for the insane. *Here was concentrated all the glory of Colonial Virginia.* This work is the first serious effort to give a detailed account of this ancient town, which may be described as *a very small place with a very great story.*

Sent to any place in the United States for $2.50, free of postage, by

LYON G. TYLER, Williamsburg, Virginia

Vol. XVIII., No. 2. October, 1909

William and Mary

College Quarterly

Historical · Magazine.

Editor: Lyon G. Tyler, M. A., L L. D.,
President of William and Mary College.
William and Mary College, Williamsburg, Va.

Copy of this Number, $1.00. $3.00 Per Year
[Entered as second-class matter at the Post Office in Williamsburg.]

William and Mary College

Quarterly Historical Magazine.

Vol. XVIII. OCTOBER, 1909. No. 2

CONTENTS.

Biographical Sketch of Hon. Muscoe Russell Hunter Garnett, of Essex County, Virginia, ... 71
Carter Genealogy, ... 89
Records of Coke Bible, ... 103
Thomas Lane, ... 104
Some Notes on the Chiles Family, ... 106
Accomac County Notes, ... 108
Northampton County, Va., ... 111
Library of Charles Dick, ... 112
Personal Notes, ... 113
A Cavalier in Virginia—The Right Hon. Sir Wm. Berkeley, His Majesty's Governor, ... 115
Register of St. Stephen's Parish, Northumberland Co., .. 129
Downman Family, ... 138
Travis Family, ... 141

William and Mary College
Quarterly Historical Magazine.

Vol. XVIII. OCTOBER, 1909 No. 2.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

OF

HON. MUSCOE RUSSELL HUNTER GARNETT, OF ESSEX COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

(1821-1864)

By James Mercer Garnett.

(*Continued from page* 37.)

At the election succeeding the adjournment of the Constitutional Convention of 1850-51, Mr. Garnett was elected to the House of Delegates, and served continuously for five years. He was made chairman of the Committee of Finance, and there has been preserved a report of that committee submitted by him on February 4th, 1856, but it is not possible to go into the subject in any detail for want of necessary space. He was specially interested in financial matters, and became thoroughly conversant with them. He seems to have inherited his aptitude for these matters, for his uncle, the late Hon. Robert Mercer Taliaferro Hunter, United States and Confederate States Senator from Virginia, was for many years chairman of the Committee of Finance in the United States Senate, and was specially prominent in framing the tariff bill of 1857. He favored a low tariff, but not one so low as to reduce the revenues of the country below its expenses; nor did he believe in levying a tax upon consumers for the benefit of producers.

In 1855 Mr. Garnett was appointed by the Governor a member of the Board of Visitors of the University of Virginia, and served until 1859. He is said to have been largely instrumental in the establishment by this Board of the Chair of History and Literature in the University of Virginia, the first incumbent of which, Professor George F. Holmes, entered upon his duties in October, 1857. Mr. Garnett was deeply interested in the University.

In the year 1856 the Democratic Representative from the First Virginia District, Hon. Thomas H. Bayly, died, and Mr. Garnett was looked to as a suitable candidate for the vacancy. The District consisted at that time of the counties of Accomac, Elizabeth City, Essex, Gloucester, King and Queen, James City, Lancaster Mathews, Middlesex, New Kent, Northampton, Northumberland, Richmond, Warwick, Westmoreland, York, and the City of Williamsburg, and the nominating Convention met at the Courthouse of Mathews county on Wednesday, the 20th day of August, 1856. The result of the first ballot was as follows:

Muscoe R. H. Garnett,	1,938
Robert L. Montague,	1,207½
Richard A. Claybrook,	690
J. B. Cosnahan (not in nomination),	36½
	3,872

Mr. Garnett, having received a majority of all the votes cast, was declared the nominee, and, on motion, the nomination was made unanimous. At the election in November Mr. Garnett was duly elected over his opponent of the Know Nothing party.

The *Richmond Enquirer,* as quoted in the *Democratic Recorder,* of Fredericksburg, of Sept. 8, 1856, said of the nominee:

"Mr. Garnett was first distinguished as the author of a political pamphlet, which elicited immediate and universal ap-

plause by its intense Southern spirit, the originality of its speculations, and the sound statesmanship which controlled its conclusions. It was the earliest and the ablest philosophical exposition of the relations of slavery to the Federal Government; and as such gave the writer foremost rank among the rising men of the South. But it is not so much for this production, or his contributions to the Reviews, that Mr. Garnett is held in high esteem through the State. His reputation, in Virginia at least, rests on the more solid basis of an approved ability in practical legislation.

"The last session of our General Assembly was distinguished by the discussion of some of the most profound and difficult problems in finance and general policy; and in virtue of his position at the head of the leading committee, Mr. Garnett bore a conspicuous part in every debate. The promptitude of suggestion, the fertility of resource, the mature thought and ample information which he displayed, in collision, too, with some of the first minds of the State, were attested and applauded by men of all parties.

It is compliment enough for one so fresh in public affairs, to say that he sustained himself in strenuous hand to hand debate with a person of the experience and ability of John B. Floyd. The contest between these gentlemen was worthy of any arena. Mr. Garnett certainly suffered no loss of credit, but (and it is a rare thing) he fully redeemed the reputation of his writings. * * * Mr. Garnett is known through the North as the most prominent and brilliant of that rising school of statesmen in the South who defend the institution of slavery on grounds of moral, social, and political expediency—of that school which, discarding the prejudices and rejecting the dogmas of an obsolete age, boldly claims for the civilization of the South the sanctions of a juster and truer philosophy. He is known, too, for that sort of *ultraism* which is unwilling to brook any further infringement of the Constitution and encroachment upon the rights of the South.

The effect of the defeat of a person with this reputation and

these opinions, at this particular crisis, will be to confirm the impression now so actively propagated in the North, that the people of Virginia are not so loyal to its institutions and so jealous of its rights as the papers and politicians represent. And the effect of that pessimism would be to stimulate the fanaticism of the Abolitionists, and encourage them to still more violent assaults on the Constitution. * * * The people of that district owe it to themselves, to the State and to the South, to reinforce the ranks of the slavery champions in Congress with the best talent, the best energy, and the best spirit which they can press into the public service. We cannot doubt the election of Mr. Garnett."

In consequence of this election in November, 1856, Mr. Garnett's political activity was transferred from the State Legislature to the halls of Congress, which he entered the following month, Dec. 1, 1856. The experience that he had had in the State Constitutional Convention, and in the Legislature, especially as chairman of the Committee on Ways and Means of the House of Delegates, was, doubtless, of great service to him in this larger field of legislation. Some half-dozen or more separate printed speeches delivered in the House of Representatives, have been preserved, but we can do no more than mention them here.

The first that we have available is one on "Public Expenditures and the Tariff," delivered on Feb. 14, 1857, about two months and a half after he took his seat. Here he advanced the views that he always held of economy in expenditures and a low tariff, the limitation of expenditures to the actual needs of the Government, and the reduction of the tariff to the demands of the revenue. This whole speech shows the Democratic position on the tariff, especially at that time when a reduction of duties was necessary to avoid piling up a surplus revenue.

The amounts a half-century ago were ridiculously small when compared to the colossal receipts and expenditures of the present day, but the principle of retrenchment and reform was the same. It was no part of the office of govern-

ment to assist individuals in amassing huge fortunes, and to levy taxes on the necessaries of life, which oppresses the poor and increases the inequality of wealth already existing.

The principles of the Democratic party have remained the same, and they have ever striven against the exorbitant duties which go from bad to worse, but the people are blind to their true interests, and the oppression of the poor by means of the tariff continues and will continue against all opposition. The following year, on March 22nd, 1858, Mr. Garnett delivered a speech on the admission of Kansas into the Union under a Constitution which authorized its admission with slavery. He showed clearly that the anti-slavery feeling was at the bottom of the opposition to the admission of Kansas, while there was no opposition to the admission of Oregon and Minnesota, notwithstanding certain irregularities, because the Constitutions of these States forbade slavery. He asserted that the Senator from New York [Mr. SEWARD] "Disclosed the true secret when he declared that it was a dynastic struggle between North and South whether another slave State could be admitted into the Union," and he gave an interesting historical review of the issue.

Less than two months later, on May 4th, 1858, Mr. Garnett spoke on the admission of Minnesota, opposing such admission not on political grounds, but because of serious irregularities in the adoption of its Constitution.

The enabling act permitted unnaturalized foreigners to vote; it violated the compact entered into on the cession of the Northwest Territory in that five States had already been formed from it and now twenty thousand square miles more went to the formation of Minnesota; moreover, there were irregularities in the organization of the conventions, hence the Constitution was not the act of the people of Minnesota, even if it was afterwards adopted by the people; this act could not make that lawful which was previously unlawful. Again, the population did not justify the number of representatives allowed to the State. Minnesota, therefore, had not complied with the enabling act and did not have a population

that justified more than *one* representative, and such an amendment Mr. Garnett offered to the pending bill. He protested against allowing to Minnesota twice the power and influence given to his people.

We have another speech on "Public Expenditures," delivered by Mr. Garnett on February 14th, 1859. He takes up the expenditures of the different departments, Army, Navy, Post-office, Public Lands, and others, and proposes reductions in them all, showing again his advocacy of retrenchment and reform. Without going into details, which would be of no service at this day, we may quote his closing paragraph as showing the principles which actuated him in his Congressional career. He says:

"There are but two modes of organizing parties. One is on principles—principles fixed and eternal; the other is by patronage and expenditure and personal combinations. The State-rights Democratic party commenced its career with the foundation of the Government. It began on principle; on the strict construction of the Constitution; that Government should do as little, and that the individual should do as much, as possible. It has been a party of free trade, of low duties, of economy, of retrenchment, and of a strict construction of the Constitution. It is because it has been such a party that it has commanded the affections of the people of the country.

My heart warms to its old banner inscribed with the names of many a glorious achievement and soiled with the smoke of many a gallant action; warms to it when I remember that, under the auspices of that party, our country has grown from the few feeble settlements of 1789 to the magnificent Confederacy in which we now live; warms to it when I remember that it laid down, in 1798-'99, in my own old State, the chart of constitutional construction, which, amid all aberrations, it has ever returned to since; when I remember that, despite the opposition of its foes, it added to our country the mouths of the Mississippi; that it added Florida and Texas, and gave us the Pacific Coast. I thank it when I remember that, under its care, we have been gradually brought from a

system of high duties, paper currency and of Government interference, to a system where we have a sound metallic currency, and comparative free trade; where our trade and commerce, our imports and exports, have outstripped those of any other nation of the world.

I value it for all these things; and let me say to my friends of the Democratic party, that, if we once permit ourselves, for the sake of carrying this election or that election, in this State or the other State—ay, even in the old Keystone State itself—to desert our principles, and to become a protectionist party,—when we depend for success, not upon principles, but upon expenditure—then the days of the party are numbered, and its *mene, mene, tekel upharsin,* are written on the wall. By adhering to principles, though we may be in the minority for a moment, we will ultimately control and carry the country with us, and command the destinies of the Confederacy and of the western hemisphere, till we shall have fulfilled that high mission on earth for which God designed our race."

This speech also shows his steadfast adherence to the principles of the Democratic party, economy in expenses, low tariff, and strict construction of the Constitution.

Mr. Garnett sometimes joined in brief remarks on bills before the House. On Jan. 15, 1860, the Civil Appropriation bill being under consideration, he moved to amend the 21st amendment made by the Senate by adding thereto the following proviso:

"*Provided,* That the opprobrium of American art, purporting to be an equestrian statue of Washington, shall be removed and melted down and the bronze sold to defray in part this appropriation,"—on which he remarked as follows:

"Mr. Chairman: In the last sixty-odd years the memory of the Father of his Country has been harassed by Fourth of July orations and by disgraceful statues and monuments all over this country, and by pictures such as that wretched daub which we see there in the corner of this Hall. Not many years ago we placed him in an almost naked condition out in

these grounds to endure the hot sun of summer and the cold frosts of winter.* And not content with thus pillorying him in the public grounds, we have now mounted him on what purports to be a horse, but what any gentleman who has been accustomed to see horses will pronounce to be an intolerable beast. But not content with that, this so-called artist has placed him in a position in which it would be impossible for any rider to continue in his seat for two consecutive minutes. The horse is rearing, while the rider, instead of leaning forward, is falling back, about to pitch backwards over the thing intended for the horse's tail. I think it great ingratitude on the part of the American people to keep their "Father" in such a position any longer. That figure, sir, is a caricature of every lineament of his face, and every feature of his form; and I do hope that Congress, if it means to pass this amendment at all, will, before they inclose this circle with an iron railing, take down this wretched abortion."

"MR. JOHN COCHRANE. I call for tellers on the Father of his Country. [Laughter]."

"MR. GARNETT. I withdraw the amendment. The amendment of the Senate was non-concurred in."

As showing his care for the purity of the English language, on another occasion he remarked: "I move to strike out the word 'donated' and insert the word 'given,' the word 'donated' not being properly a word in the English language in that sense."

"The amendment was agreed to."

Turning aside for the present from Mr. Garnett's political and economic speeches, we may glance at his private life. We have already stated that, after the death of his grandfather, Hon. James Mercer Garnett, he and his mother had removed from "Elmwood" and taken up their residence at "Fonthill," the home of his uncle, Hon. Robert M. T. Hunter. "Elmwood" meanwhile came into the possession of his mother and himself, and during the fifties considerable expense was incurred in its repair and improvement. (See cut.)

* This extraordinary statue has been transferred to the Smithsonian Institution.

It was a handsome brick dwelling of two stories and basement, containing wide halls running from front to back, that is, approximately, south to north, and from east to west, along the front of the house, the first floor containing, to the right of the main hall, a parlour and a very large dining-room, and to the left, a library and a large chamber. The second story contained a hall running from east to west over the front hall on the first story, and some half-dozen spacious chambers. A wide staircase to the left of the main hall connected the two stories.

When Mr. Garnett remodeled the dwelling about 1856-'57, he removed this staircase and placed it in a tower to the west, or left of the main entrance, which enlarged the upper hall and improved the external appearance of the house, although it destroyed the exact rectangular form. He also improved the porches both front and back, and at the east and west ends.

The estate contained about one thousand acres of low grounds and forest land, and was situated on the second rise from the Rappahannock River, some six or seven miles distant, and from the hill on which the house was built there was a beautiful view of the river, both up and down. A large garden, with a family burying-ground adjoining it, was back of the house.

The house was built by Mr. Garnett's great-grandfather, Muscoe Garnett, and was completed just before the Revolutionary War, all except the porches, the construction of which was interfered with by the outbreak of the war. It is said that the bricks were imported from England, but this will not be vouched for, as mistakes of this kind have been made in respect to the old colonial churches.

Vawter's Church, built in 1731, about three miles distant, was always attended by the family, and of this church the Hon. James Mercer Garnett was a vestryman, a delegate to the Diocesan Convention, and often a delegate to the General Convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church.

On July 26th, 1860, Mr. M. R. H. Garnett married Miss

Mary Picton Stevens, daughter of Edwin A. Stevens, Esq., of Hoboken, New Jersey. There were two children born from this marriage, James Mercer, born July 7, 1861, and Mary Barton Picton, born May 28, 1863.

The state of the country, however, did not long permit a quiet enjoyment of his married life.

The couple resided at "Elmwood" except during the session of Congress following their marriage, when they spent the winter in Washington.*

The election of Lincoln in November, 1860, increased the apprehensions already felt by the Southern people. It conclusively settled their exclusion from the territories, and rendered probable speedy interference with their domestic institutions. The Union would no longer be a union of States with equal rights, as intended by the Constitution, but a Union in which the numerically stronger would rule, and the weaker would have no security for their rights but the arbitrary will of the stronger.

South Carolina had already declared that the election of Lincoln would in itself constitute a sufficient justification for her withdrawal from a Union in which she could no longer enjoy her equal rights. She, therefore, repealed the ordinance adopting the Federal Constitution and took her position as an independent State on December 20th, 1860. Six other States speedily took similar action, Georgia, Florida, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana, and Texas, so that by February 1st, 1861, seven States had formally withdrawn from the Federal Union, in the exercise of their sovereign rights, as declared in the Virginia and Kentucky resolutions of 1798-'99, which had been for over sixty years the tenets of the Jeffersonian Democracy. These States, by the mouths of their delegates appointed for the purpose, assembled in Montgomery, Alabama, on February 4th, 1861, and formed a union of the Confederate States, choosing Jefferson Davis as President, and Alexander H. Stephens as Vice-President.

The Virginia Legislature invited a Congress of all the

* See Mrs. Clay-Clopton's book, "A Belle of the Fifties," p. 50.

States to meet in Washington on February 4th, 1861, the day of the meeting of the Congress of the Confederate States, to take into consideration the state of the country.

This Congress was presided over by Ex-President John Tyler, of Virginia, venerable from age, dignity, and official position, and it deliberated for about three weeks (February 4th-27th) on the present alarming condition of affairs.

The Crittenden resolutions, which had been proposed in the Senate by Senator Crittenden of Kentucky, or some similar terms, were approved by the Southern men, but the Northern men were opposed to all compromise of the questions at issue, so that the deliberations of the Congress resulted in nothing acceptable.

The Virginia Legislature also called a State Convention to meet on February 13th, and to decide upon the course to be taken by the State.

Virginia had voted for Bell and Everett, candidates of the Constitutional Union party, and when the Convention assembled, the majority was composed of Union men. Sentiment in the State, however, had greatly changed since the election in November, 1860, and when the Convention met on February 13th, 1861, many who had voted for Bell and Everett were now in favor of immediate secession. Mr. Garnett was not an original member of this Convention, but was chosen to fill a vacancy from Essex and King and Queen counties, caused by the resignation of the former member. He discharged his duties as Representative in Congress until the secession of the State on April 17th, 1861. He had, however, expressed his views on the questions at issue, which were in favor of immediate secession from the Union by Virginia and the resumption of her independent sovereignty. Along with other Southern Senators and Representatives he had signed early in January a paper indicating the course that the South should pursue. He delivered in Congress during this winter two speeches, one on January 16th on "The State of the Union," and the other on February 20th, on "The Bill for the Increase of Vessels in the Navy," which show clearly his position.

Events moved rapidly during the winter of 1861. One month later, on February 20th, Mr. Garnett delivered in Congress the last printed speech that has been preserved. It was on the bill for the increase of vessels in the navy, to which he offered the following amendment: *"Provided,* That the said ships shall not be used to execute the Federal laws, or aid other land and naval forces in executing the Federal laws, in States claiming to be without the Federal jurisdiction," which amendment he supported in a brief speech.

During this speech he engaged in a colloquy with certain other members of the House, one of whom, Mr. Anderson, of Kentucky, remarked: "I say that I am still for the Union, and I ask the gentleman whether he is or not," to which Mr. Garnett replied: "I am in favor of the State of Virginia seceding from this Northern Union at the earliest possible moment." He argued that "this executing the laws, as you call it, is coercion, and coercion is war"; "and while the sands of life are still running for this Congress, the question of peace or war is in your hands."

Mr. Garnett was very right in his position. The Southern States that had already seceded held that they were *out of the Union,* and that the Federal Government had nothing more to do with them. They had withdrawn their ratification of the Federal Constitution,—as they had a perfect right to do,—and were now foreigners as far as the Federal Union was concerned. Then was the time for the Virginia Convention to have withdrawn from the Union instead of talking for two months and then withdrawing *after* the policy of coercion had been determined upon. If Virginia and the other border States had *then* seceded, it is highly probable that there would have been no war, but their continual delay encouraged the Federal Government to think that they would not secede, and the policy of coercion was resolved upon. The firing upon Fort Sumter was *an act of self-defence,* but was seized upon as an excuse for a policy already decided on, and was used as a means of "firing the Northern heart," and of putting the South in a false position.

Mr. Garnett argued that, if the independence of the Confederate States were acknowledged, they might have peace, and might possibly keep the border slave States peaceably, but if not, Congress would inaugurate a war,—and *open* war, in which there was no doubt where the border States would stand. He repeated that he was in favor of the secession of Virginia, because he believed that it was "the best possible mode of preventing war and reconstructing a Union of equality." "But secession offers the best, if not the only chance for peace; and peace, the only hope of reconstruction." He concluded with the remark: "The Sibylline books are nearly destroyed. Only one-third remain, and they contain the issues of peace and war. Choose ye between them! We of the South desire peace, we desire friendship with you; but choose which you may, the people of the South, and their brethren on the Southern border—brethren in heart, if not in name, ay, and many brave lovers of justice in the North,—stand ready to meet you in the name of the God of battles and of our fathers."

The inaugural address of President Lincoln on March 4th, 1861, instead of allaying, only increased the apprehensions of war, which was finally declared by his proclamation of April 15th, calling for troops from each of the States. This caused the Virginia Convention to hesitate no longer, and the ordinance of secession was passed on April 17th, 1861.

The secession of Virginia compelled her Senators and Representatives to withdraw from the U. S. Congress, and Mr. Garnett retired at once.

As we have seen from the preceding speeches, he was in favor of the earlier secession of the State, but, as the majority of the Convention were Union men, they refused to take this action until troops were called for to coerce the seceding States,—a result that might have been foreseen,—when the State withdrew from the Union and cast her lot with the Confederate States. It is useless to speculate on what might have been, but the earlier secession of the border States might possibly have prevented war.

Virginia appointed as her representatives in the Provisional Congress of the Confederate States, then in session at Montgomery, Ala., the Hons. Robert M. T. Hunter, William C Rives, John W. Brockenbrough, Waller R. Staples, and George D. Camden. Mr. Hunter presented the resolutions of the Virginia Convention, adopted April 27, 1861, inviting the authorities of the Confederate States to make Richmond the seat of government of the Confederacy, which invitation was duly accepted, and on June 1st Richmond became the capital of the Confederate States and so continued until the end.

On the resignation of Dr. R. H. Cox, the member of the Virginia Convention from the counties of Essex and King and Queen, Mr. Garnett was chosen to succeed him, and took his seat in the Convention on June 15th, 1861. (See *Journal of Virginia Convention of* 1861, p. 246.) On June 19th he submitted an ordinance to prohibit citizens of Virginia from holding office under the U. S. Government. His name appears frequently in the votes on different measures, and he served on several committees. He was appointed on June 21st on a committee on the expediency of districting the State into Congressional districts; on June 24th, on the Committee of Elections; on a committee to which were referred an ordinance and a substitute providing for the organization of volunteers for special service in the northwestern part of the State; and on June 28th, on a committee to authorize absent voters in the military service to vote at encampments.

The Convention took a recess from July 1 to Nov. 13, 1861. On Nov. 16, 1861, Mr. Garnett voted for Robert L. Montague as President of the Convention to fill the vacancy occasioned by the resignation of Hon. John Janney. On the same day he offered a resolution to consider the proposed amendments of the State Constitution, which was laid on the table.

After Nov. 19th, 1861, his name does not appear again as voting until Dec. 4th, probably on account of absence, and the Convention adjourned *sine die* Dec. 6th, 1861.

While he was not a member of the Convention when the

ordinance of secession was passed, it is believed that he signed it later. We have seen that, in his speech in Congress of Feb. 20th, he had announced himself in favor of the secession of Virginia "at the earliest possible moment." He was not in favor of waiting until the inauguration of President Lincoln, for he knew that each day's delay only made more probable the coercion of the State. As stated above, unanimous action on the part of the South by Jan. 1st might have averted war, and even by Feb. 1st the North imagined that there would be no further secession, and that Virginia and the other border States would still cling to the Union. Little did they know the spirit of Virginia which was largely in favor of secession, except in the northwestern counties.

Mr. Garnett was elected in November, 1861, to represent the First Virginia District in the Confederate House of Representatives, and in the *Journal of the Confederate Congress* we find that on Feb. 21st, 1862, he qualified and took his seat. Also, Messrs. Pugh, of Alabama, Perkins, of Louisiana, and Garnett, of Virginia, were appointed on Oct. 2nd, 1862, a Committee of Conference on disagreeing votes of the two Houses, and later, on April 13th, 1863, Messrs. Kenner, of Louisiana; Lyon, of Alabama, and Garnett, of Virginia, were appointed a similar Committee of Conference on the bill to lay taxes for the common defence; on Dec. 7th, 1863, Messrs. Garnett, of Virginia, Chilton, of Alabama, and Swan, of Tennessee, were appointed a committee to wait on the President, and notify him of the organization of Congress.

On Feb. 25th, 1862, Mr. Garnett was appointed on the Committee of Ways and Means, but on April 5th he moved that he be excused from serving on that committee, and on April 9th he was appointed on the Committee on Military Affairs.

He reported from that committee a bill to allow commutation for deficiencies in rations, which was duly passed; and later a bill to allow commutation for clothing to militia "in actual service of the Confederate States," which was amended and also passed. Later still he reported the same bill as amended by the Senate, changing the rate of commutation, and it was passed.

It is not known why he preferred service on the Committee on Military Affairs to that on the Committee of Ways and Means, considering his familiarity with the latter subjects, but the facts are given as stated in the *Journals.*

At the election in November, 1863, he was defeated for re-election by the Hon. Robert L. Montague, his opponent having received the soldier vote, which was preponderating, as a large portion of the First District was in the hands of the enemy.

He continued to serve during his term, but in January, 1864, while attending the Congress in Richmond, he was seized with typhoid fever, received leave of absence on account of sickness Feb. 1st, and died at "Elmwood" not long after reaching home, on Feb. 14th, 1864.

The following resolutions were offered in the House of Representatives by one of his colleagues, Mr. Lyon, of Virginia, and duly adopted:

"Resolved, That we have heard with deep sorrow of the death of the Hon. M. R. H. Garnett, a member of this House, distinguished for his learning, ability, and integrity, and in testimony of respect for his memory, we will wear the usual badge of mourning for thirty days.

"Resolved, That we tender to his bereaved widow our sincere sympathy in her suffering for the great loss which she and our country have sustained in the death of her distinguished husband.

"Resolved, That the Speaker of this House communicate a copy of these resolutions to the widow of the deceased and to the Senate.

"Resolved, That, in further testimony of our respect for the memory of the deceased, this House will now adjourn."

The death of Mr. Garnett was announced in the Senate on Feb. 17th, 1864, by Mr. Dalton, and the following resolutions of Senator Caperton, of Virginia, were adopted:

"Resolved, That the Senate receives with sincere regret the announcement of the death of the Hon. Muscoe R. H.

Garnett, late a member of the House of Representatives from the State of Virginia, and tenders to the relatives of the deceased the assurance of their sympathy with them under the bereavement they have been called to sustain.

"*Resolved,* That the Secretary of the Senate be directed to transmit to the family of Mr. Garnett a certified copy of the foregoing resolution."

Mr. Garnett's remains were interred in the family graveyard at "Elmwood."

A portrait of him, presented by his daughter, Miss Mary B. P. Garnett, was unveiled in the Court House of Essex county at Tappahannock, on June 20th, 1898, on which occasion an address was delivered by his first cousin, Judge Theodore S. Garnett, of Norfolk, Virginia, commemorative of him, and of his uncle, Hon. R. M. T. Hunter. (See *Southern Historical Society Papers*, Vol. XXVII., 1899.)

These portraits hang on the walls of the Court-room alongside of many other portraits of members of the Garnett family and other worthies of Essex county*

The reviews and addresses, the reports and speeches, referred to above, give illustrations of the character of Mr. Garnett's mind and of his favorite studies. Like many other Virginia country gentlemen, he devoted his leisure to the study of history, literature, and political science, of all of which he was very fond, and having based his studies on a thorough private school, academic, and legal education, he became expert in these subjects. Few young men have ever qualified themselves so thoroughly for a political career, using the word "political" in its highest sense. His countrymen early appreciated his abilities and culture, sending him first to the Constitutional Convention of 1850, then to the State Legis-

* This custom of thus adorning the walls of the Court Houses in the several counties of his judicial district was inaugurated by Judge T. R. B. Wright, of Tappahannock, to preserve the memory of prominent men of the respective counties, and it deserves to be followed in every county in the State.

lature, and, as soon as a vacancy occurred, to the United States,—and after the secession of Virginia,—to the Confederate States House of Representatives. The highest political honors in the gift of his State were within his reach, and with the example of his distinguished uncle before him, it was reasonable to expect that he too would have represented the State in the Senate.

His abilities were pre-eminent, and his qualifications extraordinary, as acknowledged by all with whom he came in contact. Though but of medium stature, his personal appearance was exceedingly attractive. With light hair, almost white, blond complexion, bluish eyes, and clear-cut, regular and refined features, and a massive head in proportion to his size, showing great intellectual power, he would have attracted attention in any company. His disposition was gentle, and his temper quick, but under easy control. Having been trained at home until he went to college, he was very fond of domestic life, and was the companion of his widowed mother until he entered upon political life, the affection and intimacy that existed between the two being much greater than is usual between mother and son. This is remarkably illustrated in a series of letters that have been preserved, but the correspondence is of too intimate a character to allow of quotations. His married life was very happy, but of short duration, extending over but little more than three and a half years. Dying at the early age of forty-two, he had already distinguished himself in his short public life, and had attained a reputation second to but few in his State. An ardent Virginian and a strong Southerner, he showed on all public occasions his devotion to Virginia and the South, and did not hesitate to throw himself into the fray in defence of Southern principles. As may be seen from his speeches in Congress, he believed thoroughly in the right of secession, and thought, in the winter of 1861, that the time had arrived for the exercise of it. Like most public men of his time, he thought the subjugation of the South impossible, notwithstanding the inequality in numbers of men and resources. It is bootless to inquire into

the causes of that subjugation; it is sufficiently explained by the words of the great leader of the Southern army, "Overwhelming numbers and resources," and if we still push the inquiry one step further, we may say that the stringent blockade prevented the South from increasing those numbers and resources, and consequently from decreasing the inequality of four to one in the former and of at least ten to one in the latter.

CARTER GENEALOGY.

By DR. JOS. LYON MILLER.

THIRD GENERATION (*Continued from page* 58).

15. JAMES[3] CARTER (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) was not married when his father made his will in 1728, but Jan. 3, 1740, he and wife Hannah Carter were witnesses to the will of Moses Carter, and in 1744 they were the witnesses to a deed—having mislaid this note I cannot give the names of the parties to the deed. This is the last appearance in the Lancaster records of James Carter and his wife; they probably removed about this time to Frederick county, where a James Carter and wife Hannah were living in 1748. March 17, 1748, Robert Heaton of Bucks county, Pa., gave a letter of attorney to his friends James and George Hollingsworth of the county of Frederick in Virginia, to sell and convey his lands in that county, etc. Oct. 30, 1754, James Carter of Frederick had a grant of 300 acres of land in that county. His will was probated in Dec., 1758, names wife Hannah, and the following children:

99. Jane, eldest daughter.
100. James, eldest son.
101. William.
102. John.
103. Anne.
104. Ruth.
105. Hannah.

All except Jane and possibly James seem to have been under age.

17. PETER[3] CARTER (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) inherited a plantation in Kg. George county from his father, but the records do not show that he ever lived there. He may have died in Fauquier county at an advanced age, as Feb. 22, 1790, the inventory of the personal estate of Peter Carter amounting to £100.3. was recorded in that county; or he may have removed to that part of Albemarle that became Buckingham and Amherst as he had five sons who settled in Amherst, and his brother Charles Carter, of whom he had been the guardian after the death of their father, also settled and died in Amherst.

Peter Carter had at least five sons as follows:

106. Edward.

107. Henry.

108. Job.

109. Solomon.

110. Peter, Jr.

18. EDWARD[3] CARTER (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) inherited a plantation in Kg. George county, but the records do not show that he lived there. He may have lived in Richmond county as the census of 1783 names among the heads of families in that county Daniel Carter, William Carter, John Carter, Robert Carter and Mary Carter, all of which were family names in the Thomas Carter family. Or he may have been the father of Solomon Carter, who died in Stafford in 1760, and of Job Carter who was living in Lancaster in 1783 as the head of a family of five white and ten black souls, as these names are found in the family of his brother Peter Carter.

20. CHARLES[3] CARTER (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) was under age when his father made his will in April, 1728, and was left under the guardianship of his brother Peter Carter. He probably married in Stafford as the Overwharton Register gives the births of four of his children—1744 to 1753. About 1755 he removed with his brother Peter's sons to that part of Albemarle that later became Amherst, where he had four more

children born. June 21, 1766, Charles Carter, Sr., made his will, probated in Amherst Dec. 1, 1766. Wife Lucy executrix. He left to each of his five children then living two negroes, and the rest of the estate to "loving wife Lucy" during her lifetime. His personal estate amounted to £764.2.8. and included 14 negroes, 11 shillings worth of books, etc. Charles and Lucy Carter had issue:

111. Dale, born Aug. 9, 1744, in Stafford; settled on Clinch River 1773.

112. Judith, born Mar. 17, 1747, in Stafford; died Dec. 18, 1750.

113. Lucy, born Feb. 16, 1750, in Stafford; died Aug. 22, 1751.

114. Catharine, born Oct. 26, 1753, in Stafford; died before 1766.

115. Susannah, born in Amherst; made her will in Jan., 1781, in Washington Co. Left to brother Charles Carter all her property, which included two negroes devised to her by her father, Charles Carter of Amherst.

116. Elizabeth, born in Amherst.

117. John, born in Amherst; settled in Washington County.

118. Charles, born in Amherst.

22. JOHN[3] CARTER (Henry,[2] Thomas[1]) received by his father's will dated Mar. 21, 1732, besides other personalty "my ten shilling piece of gold my mother gave me to make him a mourning ring; my silver cup and one-eighth part of my cattle after miring time is over." And if he settled in that county to keep negro Jack by paying the others their part of his value.

John Carter married circa 1735 a Miss Lunsford (tradition), by whom he had two sons at least:

119. William Carter.

120. Lunceford Carter, died in Culpeper in 1795.

His wife died and he married (II) Mary Butler of Stafford Feb. 4, 1745, by whom he had

121 Gainey Harris Carter, named for John Carter's maternal grandfather Gainey Harris, Gent., who died in Lan-

caster in 1693; and probably they were also the parents of 122. Jesse Carter who was living in Stafford in 1790. Harris Carter was living in Stafford in 1785 with a wife and four children. May 12, 1749, John Carter and wife Mary, of Stafford, sold to brother Josiah Carter of Lancaster 95 acres of land on Corotoman River, part of a tract left by their father "Henry Carter Gent[1]." to his eldest son Ganey Carter, who died without issue and land descended to John Carter as next eldest son of Henry.

28. ROBERT[3] CARTER (Henry,[2] Thomas[1]) was not sixteen years of age when his father made his will Mar. 21, 1732. Subsequently he settled in Overwharton Parish, Stafford, and probably married there about 1746-'47.

In 1760 he was an appraiser of the estate of Solomon Carter; but does not appear in Stafford County in the census of 1785.

The Overwharton Register gives the births of four children of Robert and Winifred Carter as follows:

123. Robert, Jr., born Feb. 14, 1748.

124. Mary, born May 21, 1750.

125. Jedisiah, born July 29, 1752. He was living in Stafford without family in 1785.

126. Milly, born May 22, 1755.

29. JOSEPH[3] CARTER (James,[2] Thomas[1]), born in 1725 probably removed to Frederick county about 1750 and settled near his first first cousin James Carter. Oct. 30, 1754, "Mr. Joseph Carter" had a grant of 456 acres of land on the Ocoquon in Frederick "on which he now lives", and on the same date James Carter had a grant near it. March 26, 1760, Joseph Carter also had two other grants amounting to 714 acres near his first grant. Sept. 4, 1747, Joseph, George, and John Carter, sons of Mr. James Carter, Dec'd of Stafford had a grant of 1,137 acres in Stafford formerly "purchased by their father Mr. James Carter lately Deceased and his brother Mr. Joseph Carter of Lancaster County, Sept. 26, 1726". While the Stafford County records are mostly gone, there is an old general index that shows that Joseph Carter did not

appear in the Stafford records after 1750. The appraisement of his personal estate was recorded in Frederick county, Nov. 3, 1767. There is no will or settlement of estate to show how many children he had, but it is almost a certainty that he was the father of the first two of the following and probably of all:

127. Benjamin, died in Frederick in 1796.

128. Joseph, Jr., mentioned in brother Benjamin's will.

129. Josiah, who had wife and four children in census of 1782. He might have been a son of No. 22 John Carter of Stafford, and had removed to Frederick prior to 1782.

130. Thomas, who had a wife and two children in the census of 1782.

30. JOHN[3] CARTER (James,[2] Thomas[1]), born May 7, 1727, in Stafford; died in same county in 1790. He was a "House Joyner" by occupation in addition to his farming. June 12, 1759, Thos. Thacker, orphan of Thomas Thacker of King George apprenticed himself to John Carter, "Joyner" of Stafford, and bound himself not to "play at cards, or dice or any other unlawful games". The parish register records the birth of two sons of John and Leanna Carter as follows:

131. James, born July 17, 1752; he had wife and five children in 1785.

132. John, Jr., born June 1, 1754; died in Stafford in 1791 leaving six children under 21 years of age.

In the census of 1785 John Carter, Sr., was the head of a family of three.

In June, 1790, Wm. Edwards gave security as executor of the estate of John Carter, Sr., and in Sept., 1790, was summoned to settle the estates John and Leannah Carter, Deceased.

31. JAMES[3] CARTER (James,[2] Thomas[1]), born March 31, 1729, does not appear in Stafford records after the death of his father in 1743. He may have inherited the plantation of 549 acres in Kg. George, which was granted to his father, "Mr. James Carter of Stafford," Oct. 18, 1727; as in 1758 James Carter and wife Rachel of Caroline county leased to George Strother 100 acres of their plantation in King George County.

32. WILLIAM[3] CARTER (James,[2] Thomas[1]), born Jan. 11, 1731, died in Stafford in 1761. His will probated Dec. 22, 1761, mentions wife Catharine and brothers John and Joseph. No children mentioned.

33. GEORGE[3] CARTER (James,[2] Thomas[1]), born Jan. 11, 1731, was a twin brother of Wm. Carter. He was named in a grant in 1747 for land formerly owned by his father. In 1777 George Carter of Stafford paid Wm. Green of Culpeper £700 for 184 acres of land in the latter county. Sept. 14, 1778, George Carter and wife Sally of Stafford sold the same to Henry Field and Leonard Barnes. The Census of 1785 does not name George Carter among the heads of families in Stafford, so he probably died before that date. The old general index shows that a George Carter died in Stafford in 1813-1817. He was probably a son or nephew of the above.

34. CATHARINE[3] CARTER (James,[2] Thomas[1]), born April 1, 1735, married Nov. 27, 1755, William Davis.

35. CHARLES[3] CARTER (James,[2] Thomas[1]), born Oct. 10, 1743, in Stafford, died in 1781 in Culpeper. His inventory recorded Dec. 29, 1781, amounted to £138.2. and included about a dozen pieces of *china*, "six whole books and some pieces". The Culpeper records do not settle the names of his children positively, but he seems to have had issue as follows:

133. Sarah Carter, married Elliot Herndon Dec. 10, 1791.

134. Mary Carter, married Daniel Zimmerman, Feb. 6, 1794.

135. William Carter, married Susannah Googe, Feb. 26, 1795.

136. Charles Carter, Jr., married Susannah Tapp, Dec. 28, 1797.

41. JEREMIAH[3] CARTER (Joseph,[2] Thomas[1]) removed to Stafford prior to 1753, and was living in 1760 when he was an appraiser of the estate of Solomon Carter, but he does not appear in the census of 1785 so probably died before that date. Feb. 6, 1756, Jeremiah Carter, Planter, hired a negro woman and two boys to Richard Graham, Merchant, of Dumfries for

a year for twenty pounds. Signed his name "*Jere* Carter". Jan. 10, 1757, Jeremiah and Joseph Carter, Planters, of Stafford, sold land to Thos. Newman. July 20, 1759, "Joseph Carter, Gent." of White Chapel Parish, Lancaster, deeded a negro to Anne Carter, daughter of his son Jeremiah of Stafford. And in his will probated in 1765 he left to son Jeremiah 400 acres in Stafford. The loss of the will records prevents the giving a full list of his children, but other records give the following:

137. Anne, borne circa 1750, probably in Lancaster. Died unmarried in 1791.

138. Catharine, born Jan. 28, 1753, in Stafford; was unmarried in 1791.

139. Henry, born Sept. 1755, probably the Henry Carter living in Fairfax in census of 1782.

140. Tabitha, born Dec. 11, 1757.

141. Joseph, born ....., 1759; had wife and one child in 1785.

The old Jeremiah Carter house is yet standing among some fine old trees about two miles from Stafford Court House. It is a large two-story house with attic, and formerly had a two-story wing at the back, which opened into the upper and lower halls of the main building. At each end of the main house is a great hewn stone chimney, and at one side of the yard is another one that evidently belonged to the detached kitchen. Over the hall doors are beautifully designed transoms. About 1835 a Jeremiah Carter was living at this place. He was probably a grandson of Jeremiah, Sr., through his son Henry or Joseph. In 1844 this Jeremiah Carter married Elizabeth Wamsley, dau. of Benjamin C. Wamsley, as shown by a prenuptial contract recorded in Stafford.

42. JOSEPH[3] CARTER (Joseph,[2] Thomas[1]) lived for a time in Stafford where he married twice, as follows: (I). Margaret Mason on Nov. 27, 1746; she died March 12, 1752; and Feb. 5, 1755 he married (II). Lettice Lynton, daughter of Anthony Lynton. Oct. 12, 1753, John Peyton gave bond as guardian of Lettice Lynton orphan of Anthony Lynton, Dec'd.

Nov. 5, 1748, Joseph Carter, Gent. and wife Margaret of Overwharton Parish Stafford leased to John Delganie 172 acres in Dittengen Parish, Pr. William. On the margin of the record book in Pr. William the clerk drew a sketch of the Carter Seal—the head and shoulders of a talbot, or carriage hound, argent. July 1, 1755, Joseph Carter made deed of gift to his daughter Mary Anne Carter for a negro woman and three half grown boys. The Overwharton Register gives the birth of his children as follows:

BY 1ST WIFE.

142. Mary Anne, born Dec. 7, 1747; mar. Dr. John Bronaugh prior to 1770.

143. Margaret, born Mar. 11, 1752; died Oct. 11, 1754.

BY 2ND WIFE.

144. Anthony, born Dec. 14, 1755.

145. Alexander, born June 16, 1758.

145. Anne Pines, born in Lancaster, Mar. Samuel Haynes circa 1778.

146. Joseph, born in Lancaster.

147. Sarah Ellen, born in Lancaster.

148. Mary Page, born in Lancaster.

Joseph Carter inherited land from his father Joseph, Sr., in both Stafford and Lancaster, besides a chariot and three horses, watch and gold rings; and he also purchased land in Stafford and Pr. William. He made his will July 1, 1769, prob. July 18, 1771. He gave wife Lettice the use of half his estate; daughter Mary Anne Bronaugh 40 shillings as her portion had already been provided her; son Anthony tract of land in Stafford and all land in Lancaster; son Joseph watch and gold ring; Robert Brent, Esq., of Stafford 250 acres in that county; residue equally to all children save eldest daughter. Wife, cousin Dale Carter, son Anthony, and friends Thos. and Matthew Myers to be Executors.

The personal estate on his Pr. William plantation amounted

to £379.4. and included nine negroes; and on his Lancaster place amounted to £464.12.3. and included 14 negroes besides an excellent lot of furniture and a "parcel of books".

Apr. 24, 1781, James Gordon, Henry Towles, and Charles Rogers allotted to "Mr. Rodham Lunceford, who intermarried with the widow of Mr. Joseph Carter, Dec'd her share of his estate" vizt. 13 negroes and other personalty. This marriage took place Feb. 26, 1774, with Henry Carter as Security. The same commissioners allotted to Samuel Haynie, who intermarries with Anne Pines Carter her share of her father's estate. Lettice Carter's younger children probably went to their stepfather's home to live as the census of 1782 names Rodham Lunsford as the head of a family of 10 white souls and 30 black.

43. GEORGE[3] CARTER (Joseph,[2] Thomas[1]) in 1783 was the head of a family of five white souls and twenty-one black. Feb. 24, 1791, "George Carter of White Chapel Parish Gent." made his will, in which he speaks of being "very old". It was probated Dec. 19, 1791. He left entire estate to wife Ellen Carter for the rest of her life, after which the home plantation and 13 negroes to son Joseph; granddaughter Katy Chinn Carter to have one negro; 2 negroes, choice of beds, and large walnut table to daughter Jane Berry her portion having been given her; 9 negroes, desk and second choice of beds to dau. Ellen Phillips, to revert to her brother and sister if she died without issue.

149. Joseph Carter.

150. Jane Carter, mar. George Berry in Jan., 1783; living in Northumberland in 1784.

151. Ellen Carter, mar. * * * Phillips. No issue in 1791.

44. HENRY[3] CARTER (Joseph,[2] Thomas[1]) married Hannah Chilton Aug. 9, 1758. She probably was a daughter of Thomas and Winifred King Chilton, who were married in 1728. In 1783 Henry Carter was living in Lancaster the head of a family of 8 white souls and 16 black. The Lancaster records do not contain a record of his will or settlement of estate.

45. TABITHA[3] CARTER (Joseph,[2] Thomas[1]) married circa

1738-40 William Lowry and removed to Stafford where he died in 1745, leaving two children.

152. Judith Lowry, named for her aunt Judith Carter.

153. George Lowry, named for his uncle George Carter.

Tabitha Carter Lowry married 2nd *cir.* 1746-'47 Jeremiah Starke, 2nd son of James and Elizabeth Thornton Starke, who emigrated from Scotland to Stafford County, Va. He was born cir. 1725 and died in Stafford in 1805. A branch of the family in Tennessee has an old snuff box that once belonged to James Starke, which bears the date 1744 and the motto of the arms of the Starke family of Scotland—*"fortiorum fortia facta."* Nov. 8, 1757 Jeremiah Starke rendered an account of the estate of his stepchildren Judith and George Lowry.

Tabitha Carter had issue by second husband as follows:

154. John Carter Starke, born Nov. 16, 1748.

155. Henry Starke, born ..... 1751.

156. Mary Starke, born May 19, 1753.

157. Robert Starke, born ..... 1755.

The three sons are said to have all served in the Revolution.

Tabitha Starke died circa 1758-'60 and her husband married (II) Mary Elizabeth Green, by whom he had several children.

FOURTH GENERATION.

46. EDWARD[4] CARTER (Thomas,[3] Edward,[2] Thomas[1]) was married Jan. 14, 1751, to Mrs. Catharine Brent. She was probably the widow of James Brent, who married Catharine Martin July 27, 1727, as Edward and Catharine Carter named one of their sons Martin. She had a daughter Elinor Brent, who married Wm. Stamps, Nov. 15, 1750; and a daughter Catharine Brent, who married Chas. Rogers Mar. 20, 1762—consent of Edward Carter to marriage of wife's daughter. In the census of 1782 Edward Carter was the head of a family of eight white souls and twenty-one black. He inherited his father's lower plantation on Corotoman River, and in 1758 purchased one from his cousin John Carter. April 1, 1783, Edward

Carter of Christ Church Parish, made his will, probated Mar. 18, 1784. Wife Catharine and son Edward Executors. He left the home plantation, six negroes and a third of the personalty except negroes, to wife, and after her death to son Edward; to daughter Hannah Hunton, and her husband John Hunton, six negroes; to granddaughters Mary and Catharine Kirk, a negro each; to son Martin £1150 lawful gold and silver money due him by bond from James Gordon, "to purchase my son a plantation;" rest of negroes and other estate equally to sons Edward and Martin. The personal estate amounted to £1236.2.2. and included "a Large Bible £1.10., two Dictionaries £1.4., a Latin Dictionary 6/, and "a pcell of old Bookes £1.8."

The will of Mrs. Catharine Carter was probated July 21, 1788, son Edward and friend Peter Beam exrs. Mentions sons Edward, and Martin, daughter Hannah Hunton, granddaughters Mary Kirk, Catharine Kirk, and Catharine Beam. Son Martin to have her riding chair and horse.

Edward and Catharine Carter had issue:

158. Edward Carter, mar. Sally White, Feb. 16, 1786.

159. Hannah Carter, mar. John Hunton.

160. Lucy Carter, mar. James Kirk, May 19, 1768, and died prior to 1783, leaving two daughters and a son.

161. Martin Carter.

162. Thomas Carter, whose will prob. Mar. 15, 1781, left all estate to wife Anne, except saddle, bridle and wearing apparel to brother Edward.

47. Thomas[4] Carter (Thomas,[3] Edward,[2] Thomas[1]) appears in the census of 1783 as the head of a family of 13 white persons and 16 servants in Lancaster; and in 1785 as of but 10 whites so that three of his children had either married or died. The Lancaster records do not show the names of his children, but he had one son mentioned in his father's will in 1776.

163. Edward Carter.

48. George[4] Carter (Thomas,[3] Edward,[2] Thomas[1]) was born circa 1723 and when about twenty-one years old re-

moved to Spotsylvania county, where Dec. 6, 1743, "George Carter, Gent.," was commissioned a Cornet in a Troop of Horse under Capt. Jos. Hawkins. He later removed to Buckingham where he was living in 1776 when his father died. Sept. 18, 1766, George Carter of Buckingham sold to brother John Carter of Spotsylvania 95 acres in Spotsylvania. He received by his father's will a negro man, and a book called *"Becket on the New Testament."* The destruction of the Buckingham records makes it impossible to give names of George Carter's children, but he may have been the father of the following:

163. George Carter, who died in Fauquier in 1829 and in his will devised to son Presley a book called "Becket Explanatory of the Bible and New Testament."

164. Joseph Carter, who died in Russell County in 1809 leaving among other children a son Presley.

165. Presley Carter, who married in Caroline County Dec. 3, 1794, Elizabeth Pettus.

There were two other George Carters in Spotsylvania at the time George of Buckingham lived there. They were,—his cousin George, son of (No. 14) Joseph Carter, and a George Carter* not related to the Lancaster family so far as is known.

---

* This George Carter was from the Carter family of Middlesex, County and was a man of no education, as he made his mark to all deeds, etc. He was born April 22, 1692, in Christ Church Par., Middlesex, the son of Wm. Mary Carter. George Carter and wife, Elizabeth, had issue in Middlesex as follows: Frances, born Nov. 13, 1715: Henry, born May 13, 1718, died in Spotsylvania in 1773: Anne, born Aug. 8, 1720, married John Lea in Spotsylvania: George, born Feb. 27, 1722. George Carter, Sr., and family were living in Spotsylvania April 6, 1725, and for the next twenty-five years he appears frequently in the land record of the county. Henry Carter's will, recorded in Spotsylvania in 1773, mentions wife, Elizabeth, and children, Henry; Sally; Charles; John; Anne mar. (I) Stevens; (II) Dawson; Molly mar. Massie; Elizabeth mar. Davenport; George; and Frances mar. Ecuff. Elizabeth Carter, widow of Henry, died in 1780. Mar. 20, 1788, John Carter and wife, Jean, sold to brother Charles his share of his father, Henry Carter's estate as he was about to remove to Kentucky.

49. JOHN[4] CARTER (Thomas,[3] Edward,[2] Thomas[1]), born *circa* 1720-'22. Living in Spotsylvania May 3, 1743, when he purchased 140 acres of land there from Robert King and wife Mary of Orange county. Sept. 6, 1743, he purchased 150 acres from the same. Apr. 2, 1761, he purchased 320 acres from Rich'd Coleman and wife Anne; and in 1763 John Carter, Gent., had a deed for 594 acres from Rice Curtis, Gent. Oct. 25, 1758, John Carter was commissioned a Captain in the Spotsylvania militia; and Oct. 2, 1759, Capt. John Carter was a vestryman of St. George's Parish. He was a member of the county court July 17, 1772. In a list of slave owners in 1783 Capt. John Carter, Sr., owned 31 servants, Capt. John Carter, Jr., owned 9, and William Carter 10. Capt. John Carter was married twice (I) to a Miss Armistead of Caroline County (Keith); (II) Hannah Chew, daughter of Capt. John Chew and his wife Margaret Beverley daughter of Capt. Harry Beverley. By these two marriages he had issue thirteen children. Capt. John Carter, Sr., of Spotsylvania made his will May 9, 1778. Executor's bond given Dec. 18, 1783 by sons John and William, Thos. Colson, and Joseph Brock. Devision of lands Aug. 2, 1784.

In his will Capt. John Carter, Sr., bequeathed his estate as follows: Son Robert £100 for his education; son John two negroes in trust for use of granddaughter Sarah Kenyon Thomas; 300 acres of land to son-in-law Rice Curtis and wife Frances, "where they now live"; rest of estate to wife Hannah and all children, except if daughter Martha die without issue her portion to go to other children. In a codicil dated Oct. 13, 1783, he mentions that daughter Elizabeth Matilda has been born since the will was made and shall share equally with the five younger children. This probably signifies that the six younger children were by the second wife and the others by the first marriage. May 4, 1784, John Chew gave bond for £2000 as guardian of Robert and Matilda Carter; and June 1, 1784, Richard Stevens gave bond for £3000 as guardian of Lucy, Judith and Margaret Carter, orphans of John. John Carter, Sr., had issue, by first marriage:

166. William, Mar. Frances Curtis prior to 1761; died in 1802.

167. John, Jr., had wife Mary.

168. Frances, married Rice Curtis, Jr.

169. Martha, married Robert Goodloe, and no issue in 1778.

170. Anne, married William Heslop.

171. ..... married a Mr. Thomas and had daughter Sarah Kenyon Thomas.

172. Sarah married William Sutton.

Issue by second marriage:

173. Mary Beverly, married Capt. Richard Stevens.

174. Margaret Chew, married Capt. John Marshall.

175. Judith, married Joseph Sutton.

176. Robert.

177. Lucy.

178. Elizabeth Matilda.

The above names of Carter heirs and their wives and husbands is gotten from the partition of lands and from a deed given by them to Wm. Dicerson in 1796.

50. RAWLEIGH[4] CARTER (Thomas,[3] Edward,[2] Thomas[1]) was living in Amelia county when his father died in 1776, but was named as an executor of the will under which he inherited Thomas Carter's "Upper Plantation" in Lancaster. Sept. 5, 1765, he married in Lancaster Sarah Sharp with the consent of her guardian Mr. James Ball. Dec. 7, 1772, Rawleigh Carter, Planter, of Amelia county and wife Sarah sold to Burgess Ball, Gent., 117 acres of land in Lancaster, part of a tract of 468 acres left by Elias Edward to his sisters one of whom is the said Sarah Carter. She was probably a half sister. In 1777 Rawleigh Carter of Amelia sold to brother Edward Carter of Lancaster for £375. eighty acres which was part of the plantation of their father Thomas Carter. Rawleigh Carter was a Justice of the Amelia Court in 1782 and later. In the census of 1782 he was the head of a family of 8 white and 21 black; and in 1785 of 7 white—one child had probably married. A search of the Amelia records fails to show his will or settlement of estate, so cannot give names of his children.

56. MARY[4] CARTER (Thomas,[3] Edward,[2] Thomas[1]), married *cir.* 1750-'55 a Mr. Chilton, by whom she had two sons named in her father's will in 1776. In the census of 1783 Mary Chilton, widow was the head of a family of three white and six blacks. Her sons were:

179. Thomas Chilton.

180. Charles Chilton.

RECORDS OF COKE BIBLE.

Copied by R. T. TAYLOR, *Toano, Va.*

MARRIAGES.

John Coke & Sarah Hogg were married (date not given) grandfather & grandmother on one side.

John Brown & Judith Armistead were married Dec. 25, 1743.

Samuel Coke & Judith Brown were married July 17, 1760.

Richard Coke (son of Sam'l Coke) was married to Lucy Henley May 17, 1804.

Benj. Allen & Frances M. B. Coke were married Nov. 15, 1821.

John Coke & Sarah Hogg were married (date not given)

BIRTHS.

Judith Brown (daughter of John Brown & Judith his wife) was born May 25, 1745.

John Brown, Jr., (son of John Brown & Judith his wife) was born Octo. 4, 1750.

Sally Armistead Brown (daughter of John Brown & Judith his wife) was born Decr. 26, 1758.

John Coke (son of Saml. Coke & Judith his wife) was born Feby. 24, 1762.

Judith Coke (daughter of Saml. Coke & Judith his wife) was born July 26, 1763.

Sarah Coke (daughter of Saml. Coke and Judith his wife) was born August 27, 1765.

Susan Coke, daughter of Saml. Coke & Judith his wife was born March 5, 1768.

Elizabeth Coke (daughter of Saml. Coke & Judith his wife) was born June 11, 1770, and died Aug. following.

Richard Coke, son of Saml. Coke & Judith his wife was born June 7, 1772.

Frances M. B. Coke (daughter of Richard Coke & Lucy Henley his wife) was born Octo. 18, 1805.

Edward R. Coke (son of Richard Coke & Lucy Henley his wife) was born Jany. 15, 1807.

DEATHS.

John Brown, Sr., died June 23, 1768.
Judith Brown, Sr., died Dec. 26, 1768.
Judith Coke, Sr., died Novr. 4, 1772.
Sally Armistead Brown died July 13, 1765.
Saml. Coke died Feby. 7, 1773.
Lucy Henley, wife of Richd. Coke, died Octo. 28, 1810.
Frances M. B. Allen died June 11, 1830.

THOMAS LANE.

In April QUARTERLY there was given an account of Micajah Perry, the eminent merchant of London. Mr. Lothrop Withington, 30 Little Russell St., W. C. London, now sends the will of Thomas Lane, his partner (1710). It is suggestive in several respects. Susanna Bathurst mentioned as his wife's sister was probably wife of Lancelot Bathurst, of Virginia, son of Sir Edward Bathurst, of Gloucestershire, England. Lancelot Bathurst had a daughter Susanna, who married Lt. Col. Drury Stith. In the visitation of the County of Gloucester, England, 1682, by J. E. Fenwick and W. C. Metcalf, Exeter, 1884, Lancelot Bathurst is mentioned as "of Virginia, married there and living aet 36" (QUARTERLY, XII., 61). The mention of "Cousin Ann Maria, wife of Mr. Ralph Smith"

suggests a connection with Rowland Jones, first minister of Bruton Parish, Williamsburg, Va., who had a daughter Anna Maria, a wife Anne, a grandson Lane Jones, and bequeathed to his daughter Anna Maria silver marked A. L., supposed to be his wife's initials. QUARTERLY, V., 193.

Thomas Lane was one of the benefactors of the College and gave £50 to assist in founding it.

Thomas Lane of Bethnall Green, Parish of Stepney, county Middlesex, Merchant. Will 17 July 1710; proved 10 November 1710. To my wife Mary Lane £150 per annum for life, out of my tenements in Charwelton or elsewhere in County Northampton. To my nephew Valentine Lane of Dodford, county Northampton all my tenements in county Northants, failing his issue to Nephew John Hoath Lane his brother, failing him to my nephew Thomas Lane son of my brother Jonathan Lane. My third part of Chesters Key with warehouses etc on the River Thames in Allhallows Barking, London which I bought with Mr. Micajah Perry and Mr. Richard Perry his son, of Nicholas Lechmere; to my wife for life and at her decease to said Richard Perry of Leadenhall Street London, merchant, in trust for his son Micajah Perry when 24. To Micajah Perry the elder and Richard Perry £500. To St. Thomas Hospital Southwarke £70 having given £30 already to it. To Christs Hospital, London, workhouse Bishopgate St, nephews Valentine Lane, John Hoath Lane, my sister Sarah Smith, my brother Jonathan Lane and to his son Thomas Lane, my cousin Ann Maria wife of Mr. Ralph Smith £100 each. If my wife marry again then I give her sister Susanna Bathurst and her daughter Susannah £200 apiece. To my servants £10 each. Residuary Legatee and Executrix: Wife Mary. Witnesses: Giles Diston, Thomas Butler, Thomas Dewberry. 17 October 1710 Elianor Pell and Thomas Butler witnesses: I forgive my brother Valentine Lane's debts and my intention was to leave £1,000 to Micajah Perry and Richard Perry to be left in Stock in Trade.

Smith, 250.

SOME NOTES ON THE CHILES FAMILY.

Communicated by MISS JULIET FAUNTLEROY.*

The will of Henry Chiles, dated March 6, 1756, and admitted to probate July 6, 1756, is recorded in Lunenburg Co., Va., in Will Book No. 1, page 158. In it he names his grandmother, Mary Howl, and his daughter, Elizabeth. He also mentions his mother and his wife, but does not give their names.

The will of Malachi Chiles, dated January 25, 1770, and proved February 22, 1770, is recorded in Orange Co., Va. In it he provides for his wife, Frances Chiles, and the following children: Betty Jennings, Anna, Henry, John, Mary, Malachi, Agnes, William, Thomas, James, Susanna, and Franky Meeky.

"It is my desire that my sons which are under eighteen years shall not enjoy their negroes till they Arrive to Twenty Years. Its my Desire that my Daughters shall not possess their Negroes till they come of Age or Marry."

Will signed with a mark. Robert Johnson one of the witnesses.

In 1799 we find the estate of Malachi Chiles in account with Henry Chiles, Exor. (Orange Records.)

The will of William Chiles, dated January 13, 1801, and recorded in Orange Co., Va., mentions his brothers, Malachi and Thomas; his nephew, Thomas Chiles; and his niece, Betty Newton.

The will of Henry Chiles, dated April 5, 1811, and recorded in Orange Co., Va., names the following: son James; daughter Elizabeth; son Thomas; daughter Fanny Atkins; and granddaughter Peggy Atkins, the child of his daughter Sallie Atkins, deceased.

James Chiles and Jenny Land were married January 28, 1779. (Orange Records.)

The will of David Terrell, Sr., dated March 15, 1751, was

* Lynch Station, Virginia.

admitted to record in Caroline Co., Va., on April 12, 1759. In it he provides for his wife Agatha (Chiles) Terrell, and the following children: David, Henry, Micajah, Pleasant, Chiles, Christopher, Mary, Milicent, Ann, and Rachel.

There were two children, Susannah and Jonathan, born after the date of the will. Provision was made for them in the will of their uncle, Henry Terrell, Sr.

In the will of Henry Terrell, Sr., dated March 26, 1760, and admitted to record in Caroline Co., Va., after providing for his second wife, (Sarah Woodson), and his children by her,—Ursula, Charles, Judith, Abigail, and George— and his four children by his first wife, (Anne Chiles), Henry, Thomas, Betty Moorman, and Ann Lynch; and the two youngest chil-
father's will; Henry Terrell leaves to Menoah Chiles 183 acres
dren of his brother David Terrell, not provided for in their
of land, "part of the land I recovered of John Chiles, in consideration he, the said Menoah, his heirs and assigns, performing faithfully the agreement made with John Chiles, the 10th of June last, * * * which (agreement) is in my home."

He gives to John Chiles son of Micajah Chiles, deceased, 76 acres of land on condition that he "pay to my executors, for the use of my estate, all the expenses I have been or shall be at in preserving and securing the said 250 acres which is given to Menoah and John Chiles."

He gives to Micajah Chiles, deceased, his heirs and assigns forever, the 375 acres of land he recovered of him on condition that he pay the expenses incurred in preserving and securing the said lands. (This Micajah Chiles was probably the father of Agatha and Anne Chiles, wives of David and Henry Terrell.)

Manoah Chiles married first Elizabeth ————————, and had issue:

Susanna, born August 7, 1738, married Micajah Moorman; and Mary (?), married Joseph McGehee.

His second wife was Anne Cheadle. They had issue:

John, born July 14, 1747.

Anne, born Nov. 17, 1750, married Jeremiah Harris.

Henry, born July 22, 1752.

Patty, born March 9, 1757.

Samuel, born December 12, 1759.

And perhaps others.

(Manuscript Quaker Records preserved in Baltimore, Maryland.)

Manoah Chiles lived in Caroline Co., Virginia.

Any additional information on the Chiles and Terrell families will be gratefully received. The writer will be glad to correspond with descendants of these families.

ACCOMAC COUNTY NOTES.

G. C. CALLAHAN.

JOHN KENDALL.—Will dated March 12, 1738; probated June 6, 1738. Vol. 1737-43, p. 33 A. C. R.

Refers to wife, Mary Kendall; sons, Lemuel, John, Joshua, Theopholius, William; daughters Ann Kendall, Elizabeth Kendall, and Molly Kendall.

John Kendall to William Kendall (both are sons of Lemuel Kendall), Feb. 27, 1772; refers to will of Lemuel Kendall, their father, April 20, 1751. D. B. 1770-77, p. 87 A. C. R.

WILLIAM KENDALL.—Will dated April 17, 1758; probated June 27, 1758. Vol. 1757-61, p. 65 A. C. R.

Refers to wife, Mary Ann Kendall; sons, John Kendall (Estate at Oak Hall); daughter, Margaret Kendall; brother, Jabez Kendall.

JOSHUA KENDALL.—Will dated January 13, 1755; probated October 28, 1755. Vol. 1752-7, p. 316 A. C. R.

Refers to brothers Jabez, John and William; sisters, not named.

GEORGE ASHBY.—Will dated March 23, 1794; proved February 23, 1795. Vol. 1794-6, p. 104 A. C. R.

Refers to wife, Nancy; sons James, George; daughter Kate, and unborn child. Custis Willis Exr.

John Ashby.—Will dated January 16, 1792; probated February 1, 1792. Vol. Wills 1788-94, p. 468 A. C. R.

Refers to wife, Rachel; children, John, Samuel, Ezikiel, William, David, Elizabeth Ashby and Sally Ames. John Ashby Exr.

David Ashby.—Will dated .....; proved..... Vol. 1794-6, p. ..... A. C. R.

Mentions David Ashby, son of John, (Brush Creek, etc., Lands), George Ashby, son of George, Luther Mear, Ezikiel Ashby, William Ashby, John Ashby, Samuel Ashby, Ezekiel Beach.

Ezekiel Beach.—Will dated May 3, 1799; probated July 29, 1799; Vol. 1798-1800, p. 188 A. C. R.

Refers to wife, Anna; daughters, Sarah, Mary & Catherine; brother-in-law, James Spears.

Refers to suit vs. John Ashby, to recover certain land.

Tabitha Beach.—Will dated March 9, 1780; probated March 27, 1781. Book 1780-84, p. 121 A. C. R.

Refers to daughters, Ann Elliott, Susanna Ashby, Seymour Beach; granddaughter, Elizabeth Elliott.

Reuben Beach.—Will dated April 3, 1806; probated September 26, 1808. Vol. 1806-9, p. 615 A. C. R.

Mentions wife, Mollie Beach; sons, George and Abel; daughter, Elizabeth Collona. Witness, Samuel Ashby and John Harmon.

Reuben (above) was Samuel Beach. See Samuel's will of December 4, 1767.

Kendall Beach.—Will dated October 15, 1815; proved November 27, 1815. Vol. 1814-16, p. 370 A. C. R.

Refers to wife, Rossannah (Nock); sons, John, William and Joseph; daughters, Sophia, Peggie Ashby (? wife of Thomas Ashby and mother of Leah Ashby Callahan, born ...., died ....., 1895 ?), Esther Downing and Mary Coleburn. Rosannah Exr.

Kendall Beach Inventory.—December 15. Wills 1815-19, p. 8 A. C. R.

Rosannah, Executor of Estate. Refers to Sophia Beach, John Beach, Rose Beach, etc. See will of October 15, 1815.

ACCOUNT OF ISAAH BEACH.—Administrator of Frederick Beach; 1796-98, p. 449 A. C. R.

JOHN BEACH.—Will dated October 5, 1787; proved June 26, 1792. Vol. Wills 1784-94, p. 563 A. C. R.

Mentions wife, Amy; sons, Frederick and Isaac; daughters Rachael Beach and Leah Watson. Isaac Beach Executor.

JOHN BEACH AND AMY, HIS WIFE.—To ..... Guy; dated October 5, 1787. D. & W. 1783-8, p. 541 A. C. R.

EZEKIEL BEACH AND ANNA SPEARS.—Married November 26, 1785. M. B. A. C. R. Dated May 3, 1799. D. W. 1797-1800, p. 318 A. C. R.

JOSEPH BEACH.—Will dated September 12, 1818; probated October 26, 1818. Vol. 1818-19, p. 119 A. C. R.

Refers to wife, Elizabeth Beach (? nee Glenn, daughter of Duncan Glenn ?) daughters, Ann and Margaret; brothers, John and William.

BENJAMIN BEACH.—Will dated February 20, 1726/7; probated July 4, 1727. Vol. D. & W. 1715-29, page 275 A. C. R.

Mentions wife, Hannah; sons, Benjamin, Thomas and Luke.

KENDALL BEACH AND ROSINO HIS WIFE.—(St. George Parish) Deed dated October 5, 1779. D. B. 1777-83, page 171, &c., A. C. R.

WILLIAM BEACH.—Will dated July 22, 1769; probated September 26, 1769. Vol. 1767-72, page 351 A. C. R.

Mentions wife, Mary; son, Ezekiel; daughter, Margaret. John Ashby and Reuben Beach Executors.

SAMUEL BEACH.—Will dated December 4, 1767; probated December 29, 1767. Vol. Wills, 1767-1772, page 87 A. C. R.

Mentions wife, Sarah; sons, William, Reuben, Levin, Sacker; daughters, Ann Bennett, Eliza Young and Rachal Ashby.

Marriage—Griffin Callahan and Leah Ashby.—December 28, 1828, by Rev. Joshua Burton. See Marriage record, Accomac County, Virginia.

William Custis.—Will dated .....; proved June 25, 1765. Vol. Wills 1761-7, page 436 A. C. R.

Refers to wife Ann; son, John; daughters, Elizabeth, Leah, and an unborn child also; brother, Henry Custis.

Parker Barnes.—(Son of George P. Barnes, died September 4, 1850).

Left 75 pocket knives.
13 guns.
16 boats.
100 cats.
12 dogs.

It is said he had 100 cats and 200 kittens at all times; he called them his rat traps.

George P. Barnes was grandfather of John P. Barnes (1909) of Point Breeze, Mappsville, Va.

NORTHAMPTON COUNTY, VA.

Some Marriage Bonds.

By G. C. Callahan.

William Fisher—Rose Christian, September 25, 1776.

Dunton Michael, Jr.,—Peggy Griffin, December 13, 1791.

Dunton Michael—Sarah Bell (widow of Thomas), July 3, 1792.

John Dounell—Ann Teackle Smith (daughter of Isaac), October 8, 1798.

John Upshur, Sr.,—Margaret Michael (widow of William), March 17, 1781.

Robert James—Elizabeth Christian, December 15, 1753.

Edmund Joynes—Peggie Michael (daughter of John dec'd), December 28, 1792.

John Luker—Elizabeth Mapp (daughter of Howson), December 31, 1763.

Walter Luker—Sukey Hunt, December 24, 1791.

Thomas Michael—Comfort Watson, December 30, 1747.

John Michael (son of Joachim and Peggy)—Margaret Christian (daughter of William), February 16, 1767.

William Wainhouse Michael—Margaret Downing (daughter of Zerobabel Downing), February 11, 1772.

John Michael—Rose Wainhouse, January 23, 1771.

Smith Snead—Rosetts Christian, February 12, 1783.

Reuben Beach—Mary Wilkin (daughter of Patrick, deceased,), January 6, 1779.

William Christian—Keziah Blair (widow), June 1, 1750.

William Christian—Matilda Johnson (daughter of Kelly and Beautifier), January 6, 1761.

Michael Christian—Elizabeth Barlow, February 20, 1770.

Michael Christian—Susan Powell, December 3, 1722.

Susanna Christian—Luke Luker, Sept. 8, 1755.

LIBRARY OF CHARLES DICK.

Major Charles Dick, of Fredericksburg, Virginia, was appointed Commissary by Governor Dinwiddie during the French and Indian war. During the American Revolution he was appointed one of a board to carry on a powder factory at Fredericksburg. He had one son and two daughters—Alexander Dick, and Mary, who married first Sir John Peyton and second James Taliaferro, and Eleanor, who married on June 4, 1772 Hon. James Mercer. I have brief abstracts of the wills of father and son. *Will of Charles Dick,* 22 July, 1779; names only son Alexander, eldest daughter Mary Taliaferro, son-in-law James Mercer, niece Mollie Hill; has four grandchildren. *Will of Alexander Dick,* January 29, 1785; names friend James Mercer, Esq., made executor; sister Mary Taliaferro, nephew Charles Champe Taliaferro, nephew John Fenton Mercer. See QUARTERLY XVII, 209.

Moll's Geography 2 vols, Universal history 18 vols, Salmons' geographical grammar, Lockes essays 2 vols, Anson's voyages, Scott's Christian Life, 1 Bible, Life of King William, 2 sets 2s each; Bradley's Gardening, Longham's merchant, Salmon's Dispensatory, Shaftsbury's church work, 3 vols; Duchess of marlboro, Life of, 1 vol, Spectator 5 vols, Swifts

Orrery, Tour through Britain 3 do, Fielding plays, Don Quixote 1 vol, Hume's Essays 1 do, Modern History 4 vols, Pliny's Le[rs], 2 vols, Gordon's Geography, Guardian vol 1, Love Letters, do, Steel's miscellaneous 1 do, Gordon's accountant, Hales Husbandry 4 vols, Burns' Travels, 1 do, Epaminon's morals 1 do, Swifts works 10 do; grand tour 3 vols, 5 Spanish books, 4 old maps, Montague's Essays, 1 vol, Spectator 4 do, Pope's Homer 2 do, Dunham's Physic Theology, Jurist Letters 3 do, Pope's works 3 do, maps bound 1 vol, Turkish spy, 1 do, Neil's History of New England 2 vol, Adison's works 2 vols, abridgement of Virginia Laws, 7 odd volumes different authors 2 do, Burnett's Theory 1 vol, a parcel of pamphlets, an account of the cause of the rupture between France and England in 1754, Locke's works 1 vol.

PERSONAL NOTES.

Virginia Independent Chronicle, Richmond Va.

DEC. 6, 1786—

Last Thursday was married Mr. William Waller, merchant, to Miss Sally Macon, of Hanover county.

Yesterday died at Williamsburg, Mrs. Anne Nicholas, relict. of the late Honorable Robert Carter Nicholas, Esquire—November 6.

JAN. 24, 1787—

On the 10th instant died at Norfolk, Mr. James Cross, merchant, a native of Glasgow, and on Thursday, in this city the Reverend William Coutts.

JUNE 13, 1787—

On Friday died after a short indisposition Mr John Hunter Holt, of this city printer.

Tuesday, the 2d instant, died Mr. William Adams, third son of Col. Richard Adams.

Last Wednesday died Mrs. Ann Price, spouse of Mr. John Price, of Henrico.

OCT. 17, 1787—

Early on Wednesday morning departed this life Mr. James Buchanan, the oldest merchant of this city.

JAN. 30, 1788—

Mrs. Susanna Shields, spouse of Major James Shields, near Williamsburg, died, leaving a numerous offspring.

Early on Friday morning at his house in this city, the Hon. Bolling Stark died at an advanced age.

FEBRUARY 20, 1788—

Married Dr. John Cringer, of this city, to Miss Jane Stewart, daughter of Charles Stewart, Esq., of London.

Virginia Gazette.

JANUARY 15, 1802 (Friday)—

Married on 17 ult. by Rev. Mr. McRae Aaron Hoskins to Miss Ann Brackett.

Married Mr. William McKenzie, merchant, to Miss Jane Scott.

JAN. 26—

Died at St. Mary's, Georgia, on or about the first of October last, Mr. John Hay, late merchant from Richmond.

MAR. 5—

Married on Saturday evening last, William Munford, Esq., of Mecklenburg county, to Miss Sally Radford, daughter of William Radford, Esq., of this city.

MARCH 26—

Died, Miss Elizabeth Skipwith, eldest daughter of Col. Henry Skipwith, of Cumberland Co.

APRIL 24—

Died Saturday, 17th inst., Mrs. Alice Marshall, wife of William Marshall, Esq., of this city.

MAY 8—

Died on Tuesday morning Andrew Dunscomb in the 45th year of his age.

Died at his seat near this city on Thursday the 29th of the last month, Capt. James Price.

MAY 12—

Lewis Burwell, executor of the estate of Nathaniel Burwell, deceased, late of King William Co. Advertisements dated at Richmond.

MAY 29—

On Saturday the 22nd of May at 12 o'clock P. M., Mrs. Washington terminated her well spent life.

Died, yesterday morning, suddenly Mr. Zachariah Rowland.

JUNE 5, 1802—

Mr. Archelaus Hughes to Miss Nancy J. Clopton, of this city.

JUNE 9, 1802—

Died Major John Willis, of Spotsylvania county, in this city. Interred in the church yard.

A CAVALIER IN VIRGINIA—THE RIGHT HON. SIR WM. BERKELEY, HIS MAJESTY'S GOVERNOR.

By MARCIA BROWNELL BREADY.

When the Plantation of Virginia was under the control of the Virginia Company, many governors came and went. Lord Delaware arrived at the dramatic moment to lead ashore the despairing colonists who had embarked to abandon the scene of their suffering. Sir Thomas Dale founded new "hundreds" under "commissioners" in gold lace, established the beginnings of private property, converted Pocahontas, and assisted her union with John Rolfe. The charter, won for Virginia by Sir Edwin Sandys and the popular rights party in the Virginia courts—those great quarterly meetings of the company—was brought over by Sir George Yeardley, and he, Gov. Yeardley, presided over the first house of burgesses in America that unintentional gift of his majesty James I., through the liberty given to the great Virginia Company.

But James I. was jealous of the power of the great company of a thousand stockholders, and after a thrilling contest, brought about its downfall. He died and Charles I. reigned in his stead. The procession of governors of Virginia moved on for a while, but in the year 1642 an appointment that proved permanent was made, and Charles, involved in the struggle with parliament, gave the colony no more attention.

The man who came to rule over Virginia at this exciting time was Sir William Berkeley, scholar and author, courtier and cavalier. Born in 1610 of a distinguished family he became a graduate of one of the Oxford colleges in 1629. He gave a year to travel, making the grand tour, and lived at court for two years. This brings him to the year 1632 when he was appointed Commissioner of Canada. This post he could not have filled, for in that year Charles I., always in need of money and therefore desirous of the remainder of the dowry of Henrietta Maria, ceded back to France the infant colony of Quebec, a factory for pelts, which Gervase Kirke, a Devonshire seaman, with his sons, had captured three years earlier.

The new governor of the Virginians was a man after their own hearts. He was a Cavalier. To such, the Established Church offered the only religion for Englishmen. Other forms involved disloyalty. Sir William's courtliness added a charm, for he was as polished and agreeable as he was able. He lived at first at Jamestown, but after a while resided in a small manor house of six rooms at Green Spring, about five miles from Jamestown, where he had plate, servants, carriages, seventy horses and great orchards, and where in 1671 he installed as lady, Frances Culpeper, widow of Col. Samuel Stephens of Warwick county.

At home in England, the gay and happy exterior of silk and lace, of smiles and bows, of balls and hunts, had beneath it a passionate interior born of nearly half a century of English struggle. Charles I. had inherited his father's idea. The reformation had produced differing religious parties, and the old and new, both political and religious, strove for mastery. In

the days when Elizabeth allied herself with the Netherlands to escape the threatening grasp of Spain and her great patron the church of Rome, English churchmen of every name fought side by side for national existence, and in this unanimity the country flowered into its wonderful literature, while its glorious sea-kings spread abroad the English name as they chivalrously served a maiden queen.

But security achieved, the High churchman, the Scotch Presbyterian and Puritan drew apart. Moreover the Stuart kings introduced a new factor, an oriental claim—the divine right of kings—and used it unsparingly in their encroachments upon the ancient rights of English freeman. Calvinism, familiar with continental methods, was ready to resist Charles I., while the English church whose fortunes were inseparably bound with those of royalty, strove to maintain her national position. In parliament the demands of the Puritan party seemed radical to the Royalists, and in the year that Sir William Berkeley came to Virginia—1642—civil war broke out. More than thirty years later Virginia was to suffer similar violence.

A decade earlier, the House of Burgesses had taken measures to have all Virginians conform to the English church, and had required all new comers to swear allegiance to the king as its supreme head. But as many as a thousand Puritans were there and had received pastors from Boston. These latter found Governor Berkeley a "malignant courtier", when he expelled them from the country in support of a new act of assembly. They must go, but not far, for in Maryland Lord Baltimore waits to use them in settling his province and developing his revenues.

Now the Indian once more has the foreground. An old chief, Opekankano vents the accumulated anger of a score of years, and the horrors of 1622 are repeated. On the upper courses of the rivers three hundred whites are killed. Governor Berkeley with a body of horse drives the retreating savages in to the woods and captures Opekankano, who, carried in a litter, is soon shot by guard because of a grudge. Thus died the last "Powhatan" or chief of a confederacy. Al-

though large, the slaughter was not proportionately so great as in the massacre of 1622, for there were 15,000 Englishmen in Virginia at this date.

The imbroglio in England could not fail to involve Maryland. Ingle, representing the Parliament, took St. Mary's at the south. William Claiborne asserted his claim to Kent Island, but Leonard Calvert, who fled to Virginia, was reseated in his palatinate only by the aid of Gov. Berkeley and some armed Virginians.

Governor Berkeley too had been in London and had come back full of dread. The progress of civil war boded ill to the king to whom Sir William had given his youthful adherence and whom he served with all the ardor of an earnest nature. The blow fell and cavaliers mourned the shedding of a king's blood. The Assembly voiced the anger and horror of Virginia Royalists in a declaration that the slaying of Charles I. was an act of treason and in the recognition of Charles II. "as his Majesty that now is." No Virginian might speak in defense of the beheading of Charles Stuart under penalty of being deemed an accessory *post factum*. English cavaliers flocked to Virginia in response to Governor Berkeley's invitation: "They fled from their native country as from a place infested by the plague" and were in horror and despair at the bloody and bitter stroke of the king's assassination at his Palace of Whitehall. These royalists made a sort of progress through to colony receiving gifts of clothing and "mounts" from the hospitable planters.

Puritans on the other hand could not well express their feeling of joy and triumph in the face of the Assembly's threat; they therefore betook themselves to the number of one thousand from Nansemond, and Elizabeth City counties south of James river to the Eastern shore of Maryland where they named the River Severn and lived tumultuously in the county afterward called Ann Arundel, Lady Baltimore's name.

Nor it could be thought that the Commonwealth would long be defied by Virginia. On the contrary, trade with her was prohibited and in March, 1652, a fleet was dispatched

whose cannon would speak in support of the demand of the commissioners for surrender. It was a conciliatory demand, however, with full pardon for all who submitted, but war for rebels. Governor Berkeley and the Virginians were prepared to fight. Muskets were ready and some Dutch ships had been turned into forts. It is said that private interests turned the scale. One of the commissioners told a planter that his cargo was at stake in one of the ships. The planter became anxious to secure honorable peace and his influence prevailed.* The enemy was too powerful in fact and a treaty as between equals was made. Even the prayer book received lenient treatment. It might be used for a year save that "the things that relate to kingship be not used." Parliament agreed to all except the concession that no taxes should be levied without the consent of the assembly.

Governor Berkeley's rule was over temporarily, and the haughty cavalier accepted his fate, afterward saying, "They sent a small power to force my submission which, finding me defenseless, was quietly (God pardon me) effected." He sold the last of three brick houses that he had built in Jamestown and retired to Green Spring there to welcome all king's men during the next eight years. There was not much bad blood between cavalier and roundhead in Virginia and the change of government was quietly made. The Assembly was full of royalists, but they were willing enough to compromise in a universal subjection to the Parliament.

We must remember the phrase "Merry England" to appreciate fully the joy in Virginia when in 1660, the king came to his own again. The very aspect of a close-cropped black-coated Puritan had been distasteful to the beauty loving Virginians. Now gay clothes and graceful wigs would again gladden their eyes and the sound of revel would supplant nasal voices.

As Charles II. was recalled from The Hague, so was Gov-

[1] This planter was doubtless Col. George Ludlow, one of the Council, to whom his kinsman, Lt. Gen. Roger Ludlow, of Cromwell's army attributes the surrender.

ernor Berkeley recalled from Green Spring. The burgesses elected him and he accepted his old position in a provisional manner. The king soon sent him a new commission as "the Right Honorable Sir William Berkeley, His Majesty's Governor," and he was fully reinstated. This confirmation was to have been expected, for Berkeley had lately offered through Col. Richard Lee to raise the flag in Virginia, an act that got for her the title "The Old Dominion." Her shield bears testimony to her rank as one of the English Kingdoms.

As we pass through sixteen years to the last act of the drama of Sir William Berkeley's life, we must examine the scene and the dramatis personae. Practically all Tidewater Virginia, from the falls of the river to the sea comprised Virginia in 1676. In a report required of him at this time, the governor mentions himself and sixteen councillors, and a grand assembly of two burgesses from each county which met every year. Their work was both judicial and legislative and had the force of law till disallowed by the king. From the first the two "houses" had set together, but about 1628 the burgesses had disallowed the privilege to the governor and councillors and held separate sittings. The two bodies now occupied the two floors of the brick statehouse of Jamestown. Owing to the great influx of cavaliers, there were now 40,000 people in the colony, of whom thirty-two thousands, were freemen. The colony was still dependent on white labor, and there were six thousand white servants and only 2,000 negroes. From the cavaliers descended many of our most notable men, such as Washington, Pendleton, Mason, Randolph, Lee, Cary, Madison, Jefferson and Monroe. The question of felon-blood was later settled by Jefferson who allowed it but one-thousandth part in 1787. All freemen originally voted for members of the house of Burgesses, but in 1670 suffrage was restricted to householders and freeholders, because liberated white servants made tumult at the polls. But the restriction was merely nominal, and the number of voters in Virginia at the time of the Revolution was twice as great as in Massachusetts.

Each of the many descriptions of Virginia dwelt on her

natural beauty, her delightful climate and her fertile soil. Good living was pointed out, for a wild turkey sometimes weighed as much as sixty pounds. There were forty-eight parishes cared for by ministers, most of whom were graduates of Oxford and Cambridge. Brick and glass were made, and silk culture was encouraged, but not with any great success. Corn being very scarce the vast crop of tobacco caused that staple to be the money of the colony. Near each county court-house were pillory, stocks, whipping-post, and ducking stool, the last named being for women who caused "scandalous suits." Jamestown had a brick church, a brick statehouse, and about 12 brick residences, besides some framed houses. And in them resided about twelve families, who with their servants made probably a population of 150 persons. Most of the housekeepers kept ordinaries for the entertainment of strangers and the officials who attended the general assemblies and the different courts of the colony.

In this period, 1651 to 1676, the famous Navigation Acts were beginning their eventful history. Originally directed against Holland, they gradually crippled the colonies and antagonized loyal subjects of the crown. As applied to Virginia they meant that her tobacco must be sold to England only, carried there in English ships manned by English seamen. Cheap tobacco in England was the alleged object but freight charges rose, and the English merchants, thus encouraged, raised the price of all commodities. Holland would not buy in England but planted in the East Indies and the price fell lower yet. Revenue was raised by taxing tobacco in both countries. At Point Comfort an out going ship paid the "castle duty" and in England another heavy excise was taken. The planter paid both, and officials pocketed the money. The Virginians protested in vain. The crop was then reduced in an attempt to raise the price, but without avail. The result was hard times.

Nor was this all. Charles II. rewarded the faithful Virginians by granting their country to two favorites, the Earl of Arlington and Lord Culpepper! These were to be virtual proprietors. All crown lands were to be theirs and many an

honest Virginian in possession of "escheated" land must give it up.

The temper of the Virginians who were simply English in a new country may best be known by the acts of their burgesses. Had not these resisted Charles I. in his attempt to create a tobacco monopoly although he had given them their first royal recognition by addressing them as his "trusty and well beloved burgesses"? Had not they thrust out his governor, Sir John Harvey, for being "extortionate, arbitrary and furious"? Was not each burgess obliged to be a lawyer on his own accord to guard his rights against governors who leaned toward royal prerogative?

Such protection being necessary for the colonists in ordinary times, what can be thought of their case when, as now, their governor was an unparalleled instance of a royal devotee, and the Council and House were to a man of the same mind? In the joy of the restoration extreme royalists had been appointed to the governor's council. They were retained year after year. Strong king's men were also elected to the "Burgesses" in 1661 and Berkeley kept them in office for fifteen years by adjourning the house each year, and never issuing writs for a new election.

A strong opposition developed, and to poverty and discontent was added personal hatred of the governor. Sir William had paid a visit in 1661 to his brother Lord Berkeley of Stratton, a king's favorite called by Pepys "forward and hot-tempered." This influence is believed to have been largely responsible for the change in the governor who steadily lost his courtesy and became abusive. All his instincts were aristocratic. He had no sympathy with the people to make him right their wrongs. In his advancing years he lost his ambition and gave way to bitterness of spirit, and even to covetousness, a flagrant evil of the times.

Such were conditions when relations with the Indians precipitated rebellion. An expedition beyond the Blue Ridge gave offense. Frontier outrages were avenged and were repeated in barbarous fashion. In their wrath "five hundred house-

keepers" demanded a leader against the savages, but were refused by the governor who claimed that the forts were enough protection. Sir William was doubtless afraid, in the angry state of feeling to permit an army to discover its power. The Indians once punished, others might suffer at the hands of the offended Virginians.

This was in May, 1676, just one hundred years before that other great rebellion which by its success became a revolution. Portentous "signs" were not lacking; for a comet, an endless flight of pigeons and a devouring swarm of locusts foretold to seventeenth century people the great rebellion that is called by Nathaniel Bacon's name. Bacon had but lately come. He was but eight and twenty years old. He was well connected and a member of the governor's council. His temper prepared him for the emergency that awaited him, a burning ardor at times consumed him, while at others ceremonious courtesy controlled. His gift of oratory, added to tremendous activity of mind and body, made him an ideal popular leader. He had studied law and was fitted for the friendship of two progressive spirits—William Drummond, once governor of North Carolina, and "thoughtful Mr. Lawrence," an Oxford graduate—who are said to have stimulated him in his meteoric career.

Bacon lived with his wife on his estate at Curls Plantation up the James. He had, besides, land near the present Richmond. Indians attacked and killed the overseer of this upper estate. When the news came to Bacon, his wrath rose high. "Damn my blood but I'll harry them; commission or no commission," he said. Armed planters rallied around him, and the governor was urged to grant a commission as commander. Berkeley parried and Bacon, thanking him for the commission which he assumed was forthcoming, led his followers. The governor's proclamation soon overtook the party, ordering all to disperse. The more cautious obeyed but the majority went on and dealt death to the Susquehannocks.

The governor hot with indignation pursued Bacon with a party of horse, but was obliged to hurry back on learning that

the whole peninsula had risen against him. At this crisis, Berkeley to save his authority, redressed a grievance by issuing writs for a new assembly, and Henrico county returned Nathaniel Bacon to the "house." When the new Burgess appeared at Jamestown in his sloop with thirty followers, the High Sheriff arrested him and his party. Brought before the governor, he was asked: "Mr. Bacon, have you forgot to be a gentleman?"

"No, may it please your honour," was the reply.

"Then I'll take your parole," said Berkeley, discreetly mindful of the new assembly, and Bacon went to lodge in the "ordinary" of Richard Lawrence.

Nathaniel Bacon had an old kinsman who would fain set the young man right with the governor. An apology was therefore written and Bacon persuaded to read it. We have the scene from the pen of an eyewitness. On June 5, in the brick statehouse at Jamestown, the Burgesses on the second floor are sent for by the governor. They appear in the lower room where Berkeley and his councillors are in session. After a formal opening, and a lament for the slaying of some Indians under a flag of truce, the governor announces a penitent among them and calls for Bacon. The young man kneels and reads his confession, making promise of amendment. The governor solemnly says: "God Forgive you; I forgive you," and Bacon is reseated in the Council, the Burgesses going upstairs.

Soon "Bacon is fled" is the cry and search proved it true for the old kinsman is said to have sent word to his "uneasy cousin" "that his life is in danger." The ferment of war was in Bacon's brain and before long he appeared on the green near the statehouse at the head of five hundred men. He approached with a guard of fusileers and the furious old cavalier, standing in his doorway, bared his breast of the lace that was no whiter than his hair and cried: "Shoot Me. 'Fore God, a fair mark." The young leader asked for a commission only, and the governor turned to his council. But Bacon becoming enraged, stormed outside and his men aimed their fusils

at the windows above, the Burgesses calling down: "You shall have it," while crowds of people stood near to gaze and listen.

The next day the assembly voted the fateful commission, and a memorial in his favor to the king was also prepared, and Governor Berkeley was obliged to sign both. The triumphant Bacon was now general-in-chief, and he returned to Curls to prepare for a new expedition against the Indians. He was on the eve of going out a second time, when news arrived that Berkeley was over in Gloucester trying to raise the train bands against him. This caused him to give up his expedition and to direct his march to Gloucester, where being arrived he found the Governor had fled to Accomac.

Bacon was "vext to the heart." He was tall, dark and had melancholy eyes. We may imagine his sufferings as looking forth from those eyes. Action was his forte, and he retaliated upon his adversary by a manifesto indicting Berkeley and his favorites. He marched from his headquarters on the York to Middle Plantation now Williamsburg and on August, 1676, held a great meeting there, calling for a rising against Berkeley and even against king's troops if necessary. It was a most exciting scene. Bacon would brook no hesitation, but all day and a part of the night passed before his daring eloquence forced the notables to his wishes. Then the gunner of Fort York rushed into the crowd with a tale of Indian attack upon his fort. The governor had removed all guns. The fort was full of poor people who had fled from Gloster for protection. Startled, Bacon's auditors took the oath and signed the paper Aug. 3, with the reservation it was not to "affect their allegiance" to the king.

After this his next move was to lead his troops against the Pamunkeys whom he discovered and defeated in the recesses of the Dragon Swamp, somewhere in King and Queen county.

He was not as fortunate in the attack made on the government in Accomack. Bacon sent Bland and Carver with some ships, but, chiefly through the address of Col. Philip Ludwell, they were outgeneralled, and the whole armament captured. Then Berkeley raised a large force to invade the western shore

of the Bay from which he had been driven. By the promise of the estates of the gentlemen with Bacon, and the assurance of their masters' estates to servants and by enlisting longshoremen, he mustered one thousand men. These he brought in seventeen ships to Jamestown and occupied it. From West Point, named in honor of Lord Delaware's family, Bacon marched to meet him and made the governor's own home, Green Spring, his headquarters. The old general had fortified the neck leading to the mainland and the young one built a corresponding entrenchment. Bacon resorted to a device at this point which brings a smile inspite of disapproval. He protected his men while erecting the breastwork by placing there several ladies in white aprons. These were the wives of Berkeleyans who were thus made to stand guard. "The poor gentlewomen were mightily astonished nor were their husbands void of amazement at this subtle invention." Four of these were Madam Bray, Madam Page, Madam Ballard and Madam Bacon, Sr., wives of members of the council, who with their companions were called by their amazed husbands "Dear white guards of the Devil," the epithet being directed at Bacon.

The assault of Berkeley's men is quickly told. They were not soldiers and had no heart in the cause. When Bacon finished his harrangue in these words, "Come, on, my hearts of gold, he that dies in the field lies in the bed of honour" and led the repulse, a dozen of dead on the neck were all that showed Sir William's attack.

In "extreme disgust," Sir William lost heart and sailed away in the night for Accomac, his haven of refuge, while Bacon and his officers burned Jamestown that "the rogues should harbor there no more." Drummond and Lawrence set fire to their good houses with their own hands and the town that Captain John Smith had founded was laid low.

During the war there was much violence and disorder, and though Bacon took but one life and tried to prevent outrages, his followers plundered estates not excepting that of the elder Bacon who is believed to have striven to make a peaceable citizen out of his turbulent cousin by the offer of all his prop-

erty. But he loved liberty and honor better than peace, and he spoiled only because armies had no commissary department in these times and lived from hand to mouth.

But the trenches at Jamestown had caused a deadly malarial illness to attack the fiery young general, and the while he strove to bring the "men of Gloucester" to his subjection, on October 16 he "surrendered up that fort he was no longer able to keep, into the hands of the all-conquering captain Death." Whether his body was buried in a deep wood or weighted in to the deep river is not disclosed, for "no man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day." Four months therefore saw the length of civil war in Virginia, a war in which Bacon was the Cromwell and Berkeley the King Charles I. The "Long Assembly" was too one-sided to have the wholesome contention of parties that the "Long Parliament" had.

With the collapse of the rebellion which followed Bacon's death, Berkeley received the submission of the Virginians. It was the day of vengeance to him and he waited not to cross the bay but began in Accomac the swift and cruel executions that stain his name. There he had three of Bacon's officers hanged, Col. Hansford, Captain Wilford and Captain Farlow. There also the wife of Captain Cheesman* offered to die for him because she had overruled him. Berkeley not only refused her supplication but dishonored his memory by offering her an insult. Possibly chagrin for this lapse may have caused him to permit Cheesman to languish in prison until death relieved him.

In York it took a little time to bring in the fugitives from the swamps and forests. "Thoughtful Mr. Lawrence" escaped but Drummond was dragged in to hear his fate. "You shall be hanged in half an hour," said the governor.

"What your honour pleases," was the undaunted reply.

When by Feb. 20 twenty had been hanged in the various counties the assembly begged the governor to cease. By this time commissioners from England had arrived to examine into

---

[2] Lydia, wife of Capt. Edmund Chisman (pronounced Cheesman), was niece of Capt. Farlow.

affairs. They with Berkeley sent for Giles Bland as one of the prime movers, for it was known to them that James Duke of York had devoted Bacon and Bland to death. They confiscated the land of some fifty leaders who were refused pardon and deprived Sarah Drummond and her children of house and home; but her complaints reached the ears of Charles and her land was restored.

As for the old cavalier, he had overleaped his saddle and had fallen to the ground. Not only disaffection at home but disgrace in England; bonfires burned in Virginia. He went alone, doubtless to explain matters to the king, for the Lady Frances remained behind. He drew a fair picture of her in his will leaving his all to "this dear and most virtuous wife." Lady Berkeley saw him no more, for disappointed of his audience with the king, Sir William sickened and died July 13. His widow found consolation in marrying his leading supporter, Col. Philip Ludwell.

The transformation of an honorable, earnest and courteous gentleman into a tyrannous and cruel ruffian must be laid not only to his devotion to the idea of monarchy, but to that idea as shown forth in the Stuart kings. When a courtier Berkeley had known the young son of Charles I. as an attractive prince ten years his junior. His devotion once given, his natural constancy made loyalty a matter of course. The prolonged opposition of the Puritan can have but intensified his conservatism until from liking the "charm of habit" he became the extreme type, a "bigoted dotard."

The last state of the Stuarts was worse than the first in a way. Charles I. and the Puritans doubtless fought for what they believed to be principles, but at the restoration, the cavaliers received not only indemnity, but preferment in office, and while the church was busy putting down schism, corruption ran riot not only in England but in Virginia, whose Governor was contaminated. But if the king could say of Berkeley, "That old fool has slain more men in that naked country than I did for the murder of my father," the forsaken old cavalier might have rejoined as did Wolsey,

"Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal
I serv'd my king, he would not in mine age
Have left me naked to my enemies."

Sir Herbert Jeffryes, who succeeded Berkeley, did all he could to heal the wounds of the unfortunate colony, and among the laws made by the Legislature was one which may be commended to our own times. A fine of 400 pounds of tobacco was imposed upon any person who, by the use of such provoking terms as "traitor," "rogue," or "rebel," should "renew the breaches, quarrels and heartburning among us," and delay the restoration of the colony to its "former condition of peace and love."

REGISTER OF ST. STEPHEN'S PARISH. NORTHUMBERLAND COUNTY.

(Extracts)

(*Continued from Vol. XVII., p.* 244.)

BIRTHS.

John Hobson, son to Thomas, March 4, 1701.
Eliza Hobson, daughter to Thomas, Oct. 14, 1698.
Lety Sina Hobson, daughter to Thomas, May 22, 1712.
Juda Harding, daughter to William, July 16, 1721.
Eliz: Hickman, daughter to Thomas, Nov. 25, 1719.
Uraga? Hayne, son to Maximillian, Feb. 14, 1721.
Max: Hayne, son to Maximillian, Oct. 21, 1723.
Winifred Hayne, daughter to Thomas, Feb. 21, 1718.
Mary Hayne, daughter to Thomas, Nov. 20, 1720.
Matt^{w} Haynie, son to Thomas, Nov. 4, 1723.
Spencer Hayne, son to Thomas, March 9, 1728.
Jo^{n} Haynie, son to William, July 22, 1727.
Max: Haynie, son to Henry, Jany. 9, 1719.
John Haynie, son to Henry, May 26, 1723.

Winifred Haynie, daughter to Henry, March 27, 1725.
Elizabeth Haynie, daughter to Max^{m}, July 20, 1725.
William Haynie, son to William, Oct. 21, 1729.
Sarah Hobson, daughter to William, May 29, 1725.
Judith Hobson, daughter to William, Dec. 9, 1727.
John Hobson, son to William, April 13, 1730.
Mary Anne Hickman, daughter to William, June 17, 1732.
Thomas Hickman, son to Thomas, April 9, 1732.
Mary Anne Hobson, daughter to William, June 17, 1732.
Jemayma Haynie, daughter to Thomas, Sept. 4, 1730.
Jedayde Haynie, daughter to Thomas, Dec. 10, 1733.
Hannah Haynie, daughter to William, Dec. 25, 1731.
John Haynie, son to John, April 26, 1733.
Peter Haynie, son to Isaac, Dec. 17, 1733.
Henry Haynie, son to Henry, Nov. 21, 1730.
Abner Haynie, son to Henry, Jany. 11, 1730.
Sinna Haynie, daughter to Thomas, Dec. 16, 1734.
Bridger Haynie, daughter to Thomas, Jan. 12, 1734.
John Harding, son to Thomas, April 21, 1734.
Alex^{r} Haynie, son to Jacob, Dec. 13, 1734.
Francis Haynie, son to Joseph, Jan. 15, 1736.
Bettie Hobson, daughter to William, Feb. 8, 1736.
Thomas & Francis Harding, twins to Tho^{s}., Sept. 9, 1737.
Richard Hull, son to Richard, April 13, 1717.
Wm. Haynie, son to Isaac, Sept. 29, 1737.
Jesse Haynie, son to Benjamin, March 2, 1738.
Ann Hull, daughter to Richard, Jany. 14, 1739.
Eliz: Haynie, daughter to Stephen, Dec. 20, 1739.
Grace Haynie, daughter to Isaac, Nov. 4, 1740.
Richard Hull, son to Richard, Dec. 14, 1741.
John Hobson, son to Adcock, Oct. 31, 1742.
William Haynie, son to Stephen, Sept. 14, 1742.
Thomas Hobson, son to Adcock, June 11, 1746.
Elizabeth & Thomas Hull, twins to Richard, May 1, 1745.
William Hobson, son to Adcock, Sept. 7, 1748.
Jamma Harding, daughter to Thomas, May 3, 1739.
Mary Harding, daughter to Thomas, April 6, 1741.

Samuel Harding, son to Thomas, March 6, 1744.
Judith Harding, daughter to Thomas, July 18, 1745.
Hattie Harding, daughter to Thomas, April 5, 1748.
Caleb Hobson, son to Adcock, July 13, 1751.
Sarah, Hull, daughter to Richard, Sept. 7, 1747.
Hannah Hull, daughter to Richard, Dec. 26, 1749.
John Hull, son to Richard, Sept. 2, 1752.
Thomas Hickman, son to Thomas, Dec. 31, 1755.
Brereton Jones, son to Robert, Jany. 4, 1716.
Betty Jones, daughter to Robert, Jany. 9, 1718.
Robert Jones, son to Robert Jany. 26, 1721.
Wm. & Thomas Jones, sons to Robert, Oct. 15, 1723.
Rodham Kenner, son to Richard, Mch. 22, 1671.
Richard Kenner, son to Richard, March 3, 1673.
John Kenner, son to Richard, Dec. 27, 1677.
Francis Kenner, son to Richard, Dec. 18, 1681.
Eliza Kenner, daughter to Richard, Mch. 19, 1682.
Hannah Kenner, daughter to Richard, March 13, 1684.
Wm. Keen, son to William, Sept. 11, 1665.
Eliza Keen, daughter to William, May 16, 1669.
John Keen, son to William, Aug. 12, 1671.
Hannah Keen, daughter to William, Feb. 4, 1676.
Sarah Keen, daughter to William, Oct. 7, 1678.
Rodham Keen, son to Francis, Sept. 28, 1707.
Eliza Kenner, daughter to Francis, Feb. 16, 1709.
Howson Kenner, daughter to Francis, May 10, 1712.
Hannah Kenner, daughter to Rodham, Aug. 31, 1695.
Rodham Kenner, son to Richard, Jany. 2, 1717.
Richard Kenner, son to Richard, April 6, 1722.
Elenor Keene, daughter to John, Sept. 29, 1710.
Eliza Keen, daughter to John, Mch. 26, 1715.
Brereton Kenner, son to Winder, Febry. 8, 1730.
Richard Kenner, son to Winder, Feby. 29, 1733.
Eliza Keene, daughter to Newton & Sarah, Mch. 4, 1750.
Thomas Keen, son to Newton & Sarah, March 5, 1756.
William Keene, son to Newton Keene, Dec. 4, 1753.
Sarah Keen, daughter to Newton Keene, Octob. 28, 1751.

John Keene, son to Newton Keene, gent & Sarah his wife, May 18, 1758.

Betty McAdam Keene, daughter to Thomas Keen & wife, Feb. 2, 1786.

John McAdam Keene, son to Thomas Keene & wife, Aug. 9, 1788.

Ann Keene, daughter to Thomas Keen & wife, Octo. 5, 1789.

Janetta Keen, daughter to Thomas Keen & wife, April 19, 1791.

John Newton Thomas Gaskins Edward Keene, son to Thomas, Sept. 13, 1796.

William Keene, son to Wm. & Anne Keene, Dec. 10, 1695.

Hannah Keen, daughter to Wm. & Anne, June 28, 1699.

Elizabeth Keen, daughter to Wm. & Anne, May 2, 1701.

Elizabeth Keen, son to Wm. & Eliz: Sept. 23, 1722.

Newton Keen, son to William and Eliz: Sept. 6, 1725.

Captain Newton Keene's children's ages:

Elizabeth was born March 4, 1749-50; Sary was born Octo. 28, 1751; William was born, Dec. 4, 1753; Thomas was born March 5, 1756; John was born May 18, 1758; Anne was born June 2, 1760; Mary was born April 30, 1762; John was born Febr. 15, 1764; Hannah was born April 6, 1766; Newton was born Mch. 9, 1768; Catherine was born April 13, 1770.

James Lane, son to James, Jan. 17, 1686.

Alex^{r} Lunsford, son to William, May 23, 1697.

Eliza Lawson, daughter to John Lawson, April 30, 1707.

John Oldham, son to James Lawson, Oct. 17, 1708.

Lindsey Opie, son to Lindsey Opie, Mch. 5, 1714.

Fielding Nash, son to Kerych, May 24, 1706.

John Nelms, son to John, June 20, 1711.

Samuel Nelms, son to Richard, Mch. 9, 1712.

Sarah Nelms, daughter to John, March 4, 1713.

Richd. Nelms, son to Richard, Nov. 4, 1714.

Wm. Nelms, son to Richard, March 12, 1714.

Nane Adams, daughter to Richard, March 23, 1717.

Mary Nelms, daughter to William, Sept. 27, 1710.

Hannah Nelms, daughter to William, Feb. 21, 1712.

Jo^{n} Neel, son to Rod^{m} Neel, Jany. 13, 1716.
Mary Newton, daughter to Christopher, March 3, 1687.
Ann Newton, daughter to Christopher, May 6, 1697.
Richard Nutt, son to Richard, Jany. 17, 1694.
Abner Neel, son to Daniel, May 5, 1696.
Nathan Neel, son to Daniel, Mar. 3, 1699.
Eliz: Nelms, daughter to Charles, Oct. 19, 1692.
Charles Nelms, son to Charles, June 27, 1694.
Ann Nelms, daughter to Charles, Nov. 8, 1696.
Wm. Nelms, son to Charles, April 23, 1699.
Eliz: Nelms, daughter to William, Dec. 22, 1702.
Samuel, son to William, June 19, 1699.
Christopher Neel, son to Chr^{o}., June 23, 1671.
Daniel Neel, son to Chr^{o}., July 26, 1673.
Mathew Neel, son to Chr^{o}., Feb. 6, 1677.
Richard Neel, son to Chr^{o}., Aug. 28, 1682.
Rodham Neel, son to Chr^{o}., Oct. 8, 1685.
Patience Newton, daughter to Chr^{o}., Aug. 6, 1693.
Thos. Newton, son to Chr^{o}., Nov. 17, 1690.
Eliza Newton, daughter to Christopher, April 23, 1699.
Christo Newton, son to Chr^{o}., Oct. 14, 1701.
Daniel, son to Daniel Neale, May 29, 1677.
Lucretia, daughter to Daniel Neale, Sept. 5, 1680.
William, son to Daniel Neale, July 1, 1682.
Hannah, daughter to Daniel Neale, July 12, 1684.
Winifred Nelms, daughter to Wm., Aug. 11, 1705.
Moses Nelms, son to Richard, Mar. 30, 1704.
Wm. Nelms, son to Richard, May 11, 1704.
Lucretia Nelms, daughter to Richard, Feb. 16, 1705.
Winifred Nelms, daughter to Richard, April 5, 1719.
Lucretia Nelms, daughter to Richard, Sept. 15, 1723.
Wm. Neel, son to Abner Neel, Sept. 21, 1724.
Judith Nelms, daughter to Charles, July 24, 1717.
Ann Nelms, daughter to Charles, Oct. 31, 1719.
Alice Nelms, daughter to Charles, June 5, 1726.
Daniel Neel, son to Abner, Jan. 25, 1727.
Abe Nelms, daughter to Charles, May 12, 1728.

Abner Neel, son to Abner, Feb. 2, 1729.
John Nelms, son to Joshua, April 26, 1736.
Presley Nelms, son to Charles, Oct. 5, 1730.
Rodham Neel, son to Peter, March 30, 1727.
Lucke Neel, daughter to Abner, Mar. 3, 1731.
Richard Nutt, son to Farnefold, April 23, 1725.
John Nutt, son to Farnefold, Feb. 12, 1728.
Moulder Nutt, son to Farnefold, Sept. 19, 1729.
Farnefold Nutt, son to Farnefold, Sept. 14, 1731.
William Nutt, son to Farnefold, Dec. 6, 1733.
Elizabeth Nelms, daughter to Joshua, July 16, 1734.
Joshua Nelms, son to Joshua, March 24, 1732.
Sarah Nelms, daughter to Joshua, Aug. 27, 1736.
Chr°. Neale, son to Abner, April 8, 1737.
Farnefold Nutt, son to Farnefold, Sept. 28, 1736.
John Neel, son to Abner, Feb. 28, 1739.
Peter Neel, son to Abner, Dec. 5, 1740.
Nine Nutt, daughter to Farnefold, Aug. 20, 1740.
Lettie Nelms, daughter to Joshua, Nov. 14, 1738.
Edw. Northern Nelms, daughter to Joshua, March 6, 1741.
Rodham Neel, son to Abner Neel, Feb. 24, 1743.
Sarah Ann Nutt, daughter to Farnefold, May 1, 1743.
Mary Neele, daughter to Abner, May 27, 1745.
Daniel Neel, son to Daniel, June 3, 1727.
Judith Neel, daughter to Shapleigh Neale, Oct. 4, 1742.
Hannah Neel, daughter to Shapleigh Neale, June 5, 1746.
Jeremiah Nelms, son to Joshua Nelms, Sept. 16, 1743.
Wm. Nelms, son to Joshua Nelms, Oct. 25, 1746.
Nansy Nelms, daughter to William Nelms, Oct. 20, 1748.
Chr° Neel, son to Daniel Neel, Sept. 25, 1749.
Daniel Neel, son to Daniel, Jany. 14, 1751.
John Nutt, son to Farnifold & Mary, Feb. 16, 1749.
Thomas Nutt, son to Farnifold, Jan. 25, 1753.
William Nash, son to John & Mary, May 24, 1758.
Katy Nutt, daughter to Rich'd & Alice Nutt, April 9, 1759.
Winny Nutt, daughter to Richard & Alice Nutt, June 8, 1760.
John Nash, son to John & Mary, May 10, 1761.
Dickey Nutt, son to Rich'd & Alice Nutt, Jany. 9, 1762.

Betty Nash, daughter to John & Mary Nash, June 25, 1764.
James? Nutt, son to Richard & Alice Nutt, May 9, 1773.
Mary Griffin Neale, daughter to Richard & Jeane his wife, Mar. 11, 1776.
William Neale, son to John & Martha his wife, May 10, 1764.
Sally Kenner Neale, daughter to John and Martha, Nov. 29, 1772.
John Neale, son to John and Martha, April 1, 1777.
James Neale, son to John and Martha, Sept. 24, 1778.
Winifred Nash, daughter to George & Lucy, Oct. 27, 1779.
Thomas Neale, son to John & Martha, April 9, 1780.
Mary Satchell Neale, daughter to Presley Neale & Susan, July 26, 1781.
Matthew Neale, son to Presley Keene & Susan, Jany. 13, 1783.
Sarah Presley Neale, daughter to William, Aug. 1, 1784.
Elizabeth Neale, daughter to John & Amey, March 8, 1786.
Tho. Opie, son to Lindsey, March 25, 1716.
Lindsey Opie, son to John, March 5, 1714.
Thos. Opie, son to John, Feb. 25, 1716.
Susanna Opie, daughter to John, Feb. 5, 1719.
John Oldham, son to John, Feb. 28, 1664.
Abig'l Oldham, daughter to John, March 27, 1666.
Rich'd Oldham, son to John, May 27, 1671.
James Oldham, son to John, Aug. 11, 1669.
Spencer Mottrom Pickerell, son to Spencer & Judith, April 17, 1763.
Mary Ann McCormick, daughter to Francis, Sept. 10, 1711.
Eliza McCormick, daughter to Francis, Oct. 31, 1713.
George, son to Adam & Phebe Menzies, Sept. 16, 1755.
Samuel Peachy, son to Phebe Menzies, Sept. 23, 1759.
Wm. Pickrell, son to Wm., Mch. 6, 1694.
George Valandingham, son to Henry & Eliz: Febr. 11, 1770.
Lucy Valandingham, daughter to Francis & Sarah, Aug. 3, 1798.
John Pickrell, son to Spencer & Judith, Nov. 28, 1753.
Charles Pickrell, son to Spencer & Judith, Dec. 23, 1755.
Jane Rodgers, daughter to Richard, Apl. 12, 1686.
John Rodgers, son to Richard, Dec. 18, 1676.

William Rodgers, son to Richard, Feb. 12, 1679.
Ann Rice, daughter to Richard, Jany. 9, 1686.
Sarah, daughter to Richard, Dec. 22, 1739.
Charles Rice, son to Richard, Jan. 4, 1742.
Isaac Rice, son to John, Apl. 21, 1734.
William Rice, son to John, July 31, 1736.
John Rice, son to John, March 23, 1741.
Winy Rice, daughter to John, Feb. 9, 1739.
Betty Rice, daughter to John, July 4, 1748.
Sarah Ann Rice, daughter to John, Aug. 1, 1743.
John Rice, son to John, March 23, 1741.
Judith Rice, daughter to Isaac & Sarah, Sept. 26, 1763.
Winny Rice, daughter to Isaac & Sarah Rice, Apl. 21, 1766.
Joseph Rice, son to Isaac & Sarah, July 22, 1768.
Molly Rice, son to Isaac & Sarah, Nov. 5, 1771.
Richard Rice, son to Richard & Judith, April 28, 1777.
Samuel Rice, son to William Pendly Rice & Hannah, Mch. 6, 1778.
William Rice, son to Isaac & Sarah, Sept. 19, 1778.
Betty Rice, daughter to Richard & Judith, Nov. 28, 1778.
John Rice, son to Charles & Sarah, May 11, 1780.
Judith Rice, daughter to Richard & Judith, Sept. 16, 1780.
William Rice, son to Wm. P. Rice & Hannah, June 16, 1781.
Sally Rice, daughter to Richard & Judith, April 25, 1782.
Caty Rice, daughter to Charles & Sarah, Nov. 5, 1791.
John Span, son to Cuthbert, Feb. 26, 1686.
Richard Spann, son to Cuthbert, June 15, 1684.
Samuel Smith, son to Samuel Smith, June 12, 1692.
John Shapleigh, son to Philip, Jany. 23, 1687.
Hannah, daughter to Philip, Oct. 2, 1690.
Judith, daughter to Philip, Sept. 13, 1692.
Sarah, daughter to Philip, July 14, 1695.
Richard Spann, son to Cuthbert, Jany. 19, 1741.
Sarah Thornton, daughter to Thomas, May 23, 1699.
Francis Valendingham, son to Mich'l, Dec. 13, 1666.
Richard Valendingham, son to Michael, Aug. 6, 1672.
Ann Valendingham, son to Michael, Dec. 3, 1668.
Benjamin Valendingham, son to Michael, June 31, 1672.

George Valendingham, son to Francis, Oct. 1, 1718.
Elizabeth Valendingham, daughter to George Valendingham, Sept. 30, 1786.
Benjamin, son to Benjamin Valendingham, Nov. 23, 1756.
George Valendingham, son to Benjamin & Susannah, Aug. 6, 1758.
Thomas Valendingham, son to George & Mary, Jany. 18, 1759.
Ezekiel, son to George & Mary Valendingham, June 1, 1762.
Francis Valendingham, son to Benj. & Susan, Nov. 4, 1763.
Richard L. Valendingham, son to Benj. & Mary, Aug. 6, 1767.
William Wyatt, son to James Wyatt, Sept. 26, 1746.
John Wyatt, son to James Wyatt, Febry. 24, 1749.
Jas. Wyatt, son to James Wyatt, Jany. 10, 1752.
Presley Neale, son to Matthew & Rebecca, Oct. 22, 1802.
Matthew Neale, son to Matthew & Rebecca, Feb. 4, 1805.

DEATHS.

William Keene, son to Wm. & Eliz: Oct. 4, 1700.
Farnifold Nutt, the elder, died May 4, 1762.
Mary Hickman, March 8, 1757.
Capt. Griffin Fauntleroy, Oct. 28, 1755.
John? Fauntleroy, Sept. 24, 1756.
Capt. Ellis Gill, Oct. 27, 1760.
Thomas Gill (Potomack river), Oct. 12, 1765.
Jesse Gaskins, June 27, 1757.
Hannah Eskridge, daughter to Samuel, Oct. 6, 1754.
George Eskridge, son to Samuel, Nov. 1, 1754.
Charlotte Foushee Eskridge, daughter to Samuel, May, 1756.
John Conway, Sept. 27, 1755.
Capt. Edward Coles, Nov. 21, 1764.
George Berry, Jan. 3, 1756.
Charles Betts, the elder, March 14, 1756.
William Berry, July 25, 1761.
Samuel Blackwell, gent, Oct. 17, 1761.
John Rice, June 6, 1762.

DOWNMAN FAMILY.

William *Dowman*, Gent., came to Virginia in the Second Supply in 1608. Then in 1624 there were living in Virginia John and Elizabeth Downman, aged 35 and 25. They resided in Elizabeth City which John Downman represented as a burgess in 1629.

An old manuscript published in Hayden states that the first emigrant—William Downman—went from Plymouth to Barbadoes and from Barbadoes to Virginia. In a letter of 11, William[4] Downman to 12 Raleigh[4] Downman, dated May 16, 1752, he states that the belief is expressed by his aunt Mrs. Pinkard (b. 1688) that his great-grandfather lived in Plymouth, England. (QUARTERLY III. 17.)

In 1652 I WILLIAM[1] DOWNMAN, who might answer to the "great-grandfather," was in Lancaster County with his wife Dorothy. He was dead in 1655. He was probably father of 2 WILLIAM[2] DOWNMAN, who married Million Travers, daughter of Capt. Rawleigh Travers, of Rappahannock County. (QUARTERLY, IV., 16.) There is a deed recorded in Middlesex County, dated Oct. 1, 1694, from William Downman, (as attorney for Rawleigh Travers, Samuel Travers, William Ball and Thomas Jones) and Million his wife, to make release to Hon. Christopher Wormeley of the County of Middlesex, Esq., in behalf of our children Rawleigh, William, Robert, Willmoth, Million and Elizabeth, legatees under the will dated November 12, 1693 of Elizabeth Wormeley late wife of the said Christopher Wormeley (Mrs. Wormeley was sister of Mrs. Downman and married I. John Carter; II. Christopher Wormeley.)

The will of William Downman was proved in Richmond County in 1712. The will of his wife was proved in 1728.* They had issue (North Farnham Parish Register) 3, *Rawleigh* born April 24, 1680; 4, Willmoth born Dec. 14, 1681; 5, Million born Novr' 21, 1683, married Col. George Glass-

[1] See QUARTERLY, XVIII., 186, where the will is given as that of *William* Downman, by mistake for *Million*.

cock; 6, *William* born Oct. 19, 1685; 7, Robert born Jan. 2, 1886, died without issue in 1716; 8, Elizabeth born Jan. 26, 1688, married Capt. Thomas Pinkard; 9, Travers born March 19, 1700, died April 25, 1730; 10, Priscilla married Capt. George Heale.

3 RAWLEIGH[3] DOWNMAN (William,[2] William[1]) married Margaret, daughter of Col. William Ball, who was son of Col. William Ball, the immigrant. She was first cousin of Mrs. Washington. His will was proved in Lancaster County in 1719, and his wife's in 1758. (Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies*, 73.) Issue: 11, *William;* 12, *Rawleigh;* Mrs. Downman married probably a second time a Downman, and had also (named in her will): 13, Charles; 14, Christopher; 15, Elisha.

11, WILLIAM[4] DOWNMAN (Raleigh,[3] William,[2] William[1]) married June 12, 1747, Ellen Chichester, daughter of his uncle, Col. William Ball and Hannah Heale his wife, and widow of Richard Chichester. He had charge of his brother's estate while he was in Europe, and died in 1765. Issue: 16, *Rawleigh*, who was born in 1748 and was living in 1787, when he was a party to a suit against Joseph Ball Downman and Rawleigh William Downman. (Chancery Papers in Clerk's Office, Williamsburg, Va.) See QUARTERLY, III., 173; XII. 181; Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies*, 92, for two letters in 1752 of William Downman.

12, RAWLEIGH[4] DOWNMAN (Rawleigh,[3] William,[2] William[1]) married Frances Ball, Oct. 23, 1750. He died March 18, 1781. His wife was daughter of Col. Joseph Ball, a lawyer, half brother of Mrs. Mary Washington, and who lived at Stratford by Bow near London. About 1750 Rawleigh Downman went over and courted his daughter. They had issue: 17, Margaret born 1751; 18, Sarah born 1754; 19, Joseph Ball born 1756; 20, Frances born 1758, married Col. James Ball of Bewdley; 21, Million born 1760; 22, Rawleigh Williams born 1762, married May 29, 1783, Priscilla Chinn (daughter of John and Sarah Yates Chinn). (See Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies*, 102, where this line is carried out.) Rawleigh Downman in

his will proved in Lancaster, April 19, 1781, leaves his wife his chariot and four horses, his son Joseph Ball Downman his gold watch and his son Rawleigh William Downman his second best diamond ring.

6, WILLIAM[3] DOWNMAN (William,[2] William[1]) married Anne ———— had issue (North Farnham Parish Register): 23, *Robert,* born May 21, 1720; 24, *James* born July 29, 1722; 25, William born February 14, 1725; 26, *Travers* born March 16, 1726; 27, Elizabeth born August 20, 1728, married Billington McCarty in 1756 (QUARTERLY V., 186.) 28, Jabez born Sept. 12, 1730. William Downman's will was proved August 3, 1744. QUARTERLY XVII., 186, Va. Mag. VII., 52.)

23, ROBERT DOWNMAN (Rawleigh,[3] William,[2] William[1]) married Elizabeth ——— and his will was dated 1769. He had issue: 29, William; 30, Mildred, born March 6, 1749, married Thomas Ball in 1766, (Marriage Bond—QUARTERLY V., 19), and had Eliza Porteus Ball and Anne Ball; 31, *Robert Porteus* born May 6, 1744; 32, Elizabeth born Feb. 21, 1752.

Mrs Elizabeth Downman was probably a daughter of Robert Porteus, Esq., of the Council, by his wife, Mildred Smith, of Purton, Gloucester, whom he married August 17, 1700. (QUARTERLY IV., 48.)

31, ROBERT PORTEUS[2] DOWNMAN (Robert[1]) married Elizabeth ——— and had issue: 32, Fany Porteus born January 10, 1772; 33, Elizabeth Porteus. Will proved Jan. 6, 1774.

24, JAMES[4] DOWNMAN, Rawleigh,[3] William,[2] William[1]) will proved in 1761, married Lucy, daughter of Anthony and Elizabeth Sydnor, and had issue: 34, Betty born Jan. 10, 1750; 35, Lucy born Aug. 30, 1752; 36, Winny born Dec. 26, 1753; 37, Ann born Dec. 29, 1755; 38, Fanny born April 18, 1757; 39, Rawleigh, born Sept. 20, 1758; 40, Travers born January 20, 1760; 41, Priscilla born March 5, 1762.

26, TRAVERS[4] DOWNMAN (William,[3] William,[2] William[1]) lived in Northumberland, married I. Grace Ball, and had issue: 42, Ann born Sept. 21, 1748; 43, Grace Ball born Sept. 26 1756. He married II. Anne Conway, of Lancaster, in 1764.

NOTE—Papers belonging to the old clerk's office of the Chancery Court of Williamsburg in 1797 show that William Downman died in 1765, leaving a son Rawleigh, aged about 17, and a wife Ellen Ball, the widow of Richard Chichester. That Rawleigh his brother, who went to Europe returned, and was the father of Joseph Ball Downman and Rawleigh W. Downman. It is also shown that Chilcot Symes died in England and left a large estate to Richard Chichester, whom he appointed executor. After Richard Chichester's death, Richard and John Tucker, Esquires in London were administrators with Chilcot Symes' will annexed. Richard Chichester left issue Richard, John, Jean married John Payne, Elizabeth married William Glasscock, Ellen married Andrew Robertson, Hannah and Mary. Ellen Chichester, their mother, married 2dly. William Downman (11 William[4] Downman above) and had issue Raleigh b. 1748. The emigrant Richard Chichester, grandfather of Richard Chichester who married Ellen Ball is spoken of in the records as Esquire indicating that he was probably an alderman or the son of a Knight.

TRAVIS FAMILY.

Partial accounts of this family have been published in the Magazine from time to time, and the facts may be now collected here in a more connected statement: John Johnson, "yeoman and ancient planter," was living at Jamestown Island in 1624, with his wife Anne, son John, aged one year; daughter Anne aged 4 years; and maidservant. He patented 15 acres on the East side of the Island. 1, EDWARD[1] TRAVIS married Johnson's "only daughter and heir" before 1637, as proved by a patent for land at Chipoak's Creek, in James City County (now Surry County). Burgess for James City County in 1644, patented 326 acres at east end of Jamestown Island in 1653, which was confirmed to "his son and heir," 2, *Edward Travis* in 1663. (*Land Register* and Hotten's *Immigrants.*)

By other patents obtained from time to time the Travis interests was increased to about 838 acres in all, located at the East end of Jamestown Island. In the course of time the west end became the property of the Ambler family. It was not until 1831 that the Travises and Amblers parted with their interests on the Island.

2, EDWARD[2] TRAVIS married, it is believed, Elizabeth Champion, for a power of attorney was recorded in 1678 in Surry County by Edward Travis and Elizabeth, his wife, witnessed by John Champion and William Harrison. (Surry Co. Records.) This John Champion was probably the John Champion, who was living in Isle of Wight County about 1687. (QUARTERLY, VII., 244.) His tombstone is in the Travis burial ground at the East end of Jamestown Island, according to which he was born November 10, 1660, and died December 16, 1700. He was doubtless a brother of Mrs. Travis, Edward Travis according to his tombstone which lies by John Champion's died November 12, 1700.

There succeeded at Jamestown Island 3, EDWARD[3] TRAVIS, who appears as the grantor in a deed in 1717, and was a purchaser at the sale of John Brodnax's effects in 1719. Soon after which his widow, Rebecca ———, born 1677, (Cradle of the Republic, 134), and died December 19, 1723, married William Brodnax. She had issue by first husband (QUARTERLY XIV., 52, 135): 5, Rebecca Elizabeth who married John Tucker, of Norfolk Co., whose will was proved December 16, 1762, and names sons Henry, John, Travis, daughters Frances Calvert, Rebecca Elizabeth, Jane, wife Rebecca Elizabeth and executor Edward Champion Travis. 6, *Edward Champion Travis.*

By her second husband, William Brodnax, Mrs. Travis had William, Edward and Elizabeth Rebecca.

6, EDWARD CHAMPION[4] TRAVIS who died in his 59th year in August, 1779, was born in 1721 (Ibid, XII., 26). He was a burgess for Jamestown Island, from 1752 to 1765, and held the rank of colonel in the militia of James City County. He married Susannah Hutchings, (daughter of Col. Joseph Hutchings of Norfolk), who died aged 32 October 28, 1761. (Tombstone in Travis burial ground.) Issue: 7, Elizabeth; 8, Amy; 9, John (all three children died infancy—tombstone) 10, *Champion;* 11, Susanna H., who married William Armistead, of New Kent Co., 12, Edward; 13, *John.* These last four are named in Edward Champion Travis' will which was proved

in York County, Sept. 20, 1779. He left land in Brunswick County to Son Edward; the tract at Timson's Neck in York County (now called Travis' Neck) purchased of Orlando Jones and others containing 578 acres to son John then under age; his silver cup, purchased of William Drummond, to daughter Susanna Hutchings Armistead.

10, CHAMPION[5] TRAVIS (Edward Champion,[4] Edward,[3] Edward,[2] Edward[1]) was a member of the conventions of 1774 and 1775, colonel of a State Regiment in 1775, Naval Commissioner in 1776, justice, sheriff, &c. He married Elizabeth Boush, daughter of Capt. Samuel Boush, of Norfolk, and had issue: 14, Susan, who married Edmund Ruffin, noted agriculturist; 15, Catherine Boush married Dr. Jesse Cole; 16, Betsy married William I. Cocke, of Surry; 17, Edward Champion; 18, *Samuel;* 19, John; 20, Robert—four last named in will of grandfather Samuel Boush.

18, SAMUEL[6] TRAVIS (Champion[5] Travis) was appointed justice of York in 1802, and served in the House of Delegates from James City County in 1818, 1819, 1820, 1821. He was captured by the British in a naval battle in the York river in which he behaved gallantly. He died in Williamsburg July 8, 1821. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Capt. Francis Bright of the Virginia Revolutionary Navy. He had issue: 22, Francis B., only son, who died Feb. 13, 1818, aged 17 years; 23, Susan H., married Richard Channing Moore; 24, Elizabeth married (I) Henry Edloe (2) Dr. Jesse Cole, of Williamsburg in November, 1842 (his second marriage); III. Samuel Travis Bright; 25, Virginia F., who married Albert G. Southall; 26, Catherine, who married John M. Maupin (He Maupin, married 1st. Matilda E. Cole her first cousin); 27, Julia, who married Robert H. Armistead, formerly an attorney-at-law in Williamsburg, father of Robert Travis Armistead now living in Williamsburg.

12, EDWARD[5] TRAVIS (Edward[4] Champion) Captain in the Revolutionary Navy married I. Betsy Tate in 1772; II. Feb. 2, 1779 Clara (born Sept. 2, 1759) daughter of Benjamin Wal-

ler, by whom 28, Joseph H. married Patsey, widow of Montague Williams and daughter of John Waller of "Enfield;" 29, Edward.

13, JOHN[5] TRAVIS (Edward[4] Champion) under age in 1779 at time of father's will, married Judith (Langhorne) and had issue 30, Champion; 31, Judith; 32, Mary; 33, John. John Travis, the father, was dead before 1787, leaving the widow Judith and the children named surviving him. At this time (1787) Benjamin Carter Waller sued Maurice Langhorne, administrator of the deceased. (Chancery Papers in Williamsburg.)

As is seen the Travis pedigree is by no means a complete one. We cannot yet connect Robert Travis, the hero of the Alamo. The will of a William Travis was made in Overwharton Parish, Stafford County, May 1, 1765, proved August, 1765, names wife Margaret, children Lucy, Mary, Eleanor. Overseer of will William Smallwood. Witnesses Alexander Doniphan, John Grigsby, Jr., James Garrett. The following statement is sent me: George Travis, born February, 1778, in Virginia (died August 8, 1829), married Margaret Johnson Timblin (born March 12, 1781, in Armstrong County, Penn., died May 2, 1855). They had issue Robert Travis, born in Butler County, Penn., died in infancy; John M. Travis, born in Butler Co., Penn., Dec. 12, 1803, married Mary; Martin B. Travis, born in Lee Co., Va., July 22, 1805, died in Hinton, Shelby Co., Ill., 1860, married (1st) Isabel Brown, (2nd) Kate Redding; Frances M. Travis, born in Lee Co., Va., Aug. 18, 1807, died January 12, 1872 in Rensselaer, Indiana, married Stephen M. Travis; William Beatty Travis born Lee Town (now Jonesville) Lee Co., Va., Nov. 29, 1809, died Aug. 24, 1863 in Hinton, Shelby Co., Ill., married Mary Galiagan; Polly G. Travis, born Jan. 29, 1813 in Lee Co., Virginia, died in Johnson, Pa., in 1870 or 1871; George W. Travis born in Lee County, Va., Jan 25, 1815, died in Indiana Co., Pennsylvania, married Eliza Dodson.

JUST ISSUED

294 Pages Octavo
Price, $3.00

The Cradle of the Republic

Jamestown and James River

1908

BY LYON GARDINER TYLER, LL.D.
President of William and Mary College

Second Edition, Rewritten, Enlarged and Copiously Illustrated

Sent to any place in the United States free of postage

CONTENTS

I. New Foundland and Roanoke. II. Colonies of the London and Plymouth Companies. III. The Indians along James River. IV. The Island of Jamestown. V. The English at Jamestown. VI. The Fort. VII. The Church. VIII. The Block House. IX. The Glass House. X. The Governor's House. XI. The State House. XII. Social Conditions. XIII. Political Conditions. XIV. Origin and History of Places along James River.

¶ A detailed history of Jamestown Island and accounts of the origin of the other James River settlements—Hampton, Newport News, Martin's Hundred, Brandon, Westover, Shirley, Curls, &c. The beginnings of English civilization upon the American continent.

Address LYON G. TYLER,
Williamsburg, Va.

Just Issued *285 Pages Octavo Price $2.50*

WILLIAMSBURG

THE OLD COLONIAL CAPITAL

Copiously Illustrated

BY LYON GARDINER TYLER, LL. D.

President of William and Mary College

AS Jamestown and the James river settlements were the beginnings of English civilization upon the American continent, Williamsburg, which succeeded Jamestown as the capital of Virginia, was the CRADLE of the AMERICAN REVOLUTION. Here, in the old capitol at the east end of Duke of Gloucester street, were passed the resolutions against the stamp act, the resolutions for the committees of correspondence, and the resolutions calling on Congress to declare the American colonies free and independent States. Here is William and Mary College, where Jefferson, Marshall, Monroe, the Randolphs, Dabney Carr and a host of other great men studied. Here was the first American theatre and the first hospital for the insane. *Here was concentrated all the glory of Colonial Virginia.* This work is the first serious effort to give a detailed account of this ancient town, which may be described as *a very small place with a very great story.*

Sent to any place in the United States for $2.50, free of postage, by

LYON G. TYLER, Williamsburg, Virginia

Vol. XVIII., No. 3. January, 1910

William and Mary

College Quarterly

Historical · Magazine.

Editor: Lyon G. Tyler, M. A., L L. D.,
President of William and Mary College.
William and Mary College, Williamsburg, Va.

Copy of this Number, $1.00. $3.00 Per Year
[Entered as second-class matter at the Post Office in Williamsburg.]

William and Mary College

Quarterly Historical Magazine.

VOL. XVIII. JANUARY, 1910. No. 3

CONTENTS.

The Leadership of Virginia in the War of the Revolution, ... 145

The Honor System at William and Mary College,..... 165

John Quincy Adams and Illinois,..... 171

Letters of John Tyler, ... 172

Hungars Parish Records for 1660-1661,..... 178

Robinson Family, ... 181

Robinson and Potter Family Connections,..... 190

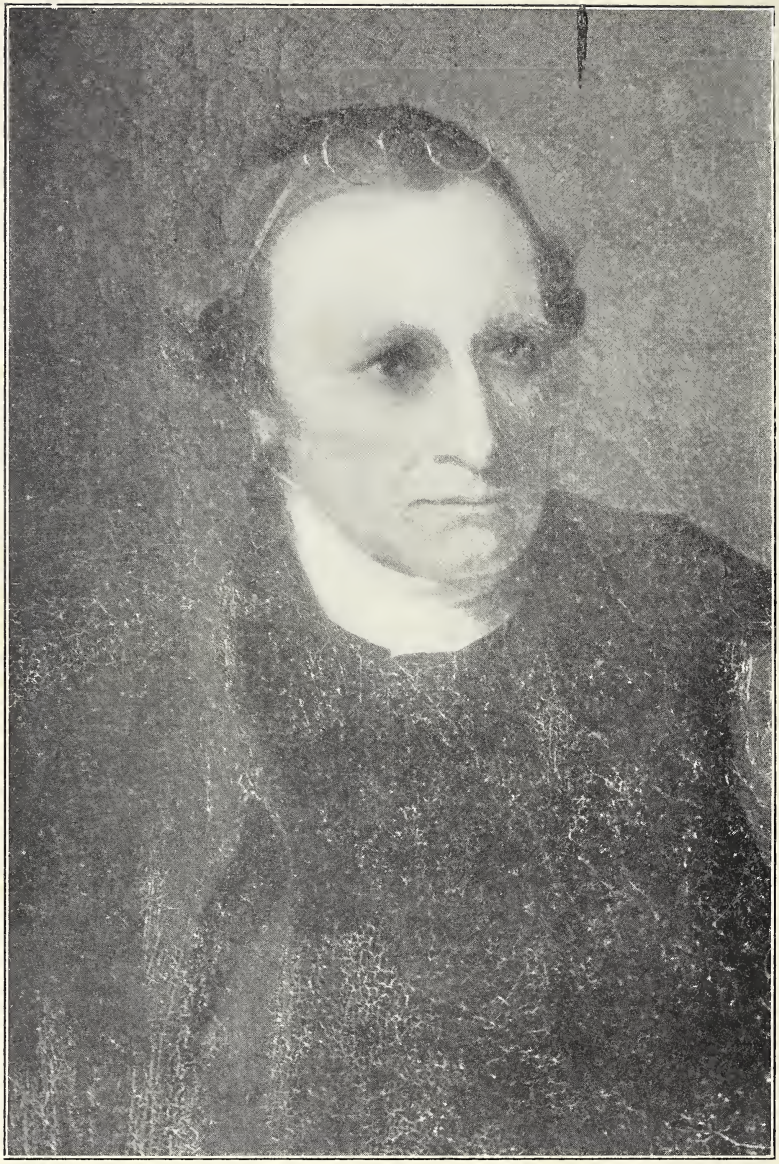
Abstracts from the Records of Middlesex County,..... 192

Roane Family, ... 193

The Carlyle Family, ... 201

Historical and Genealogical Notes,..... 212

Book Reviews, ... 215



Patrick Henry.
"The Pillar of Fire."

William and Mary College
Quarterly Historical Magazine.

Vol. XVIII. JANUARY, 1910. No. 3.

THE LEADERSHIP OF VIRGINIA IN THE WAR OF THE REVOLUTION.

Part I.

Period of the Stamp Act.

The following paragraph occurs in a very interesting history entitled "The United States and Its People," which is now going through the press. "More than one historian has so told the story of the American Revolution as to leave the impression that the earlier phases pertained almost exclusively to England and New England." The author of the work , Dr. Avery, has too generous a mind to sympathize with such narrow opinions, and uses very different language when referring to the part played by the other States.

Nevertheless, in Volume V. of his work, page 47, occurs the following: "In this crisis, the aggressive leadership of Massachusetts was natural; for it was there more than in any other colony, that the spirit of colonial independence had been fostered, and encroachments of the royal prerogative resisted; there that Otis's assertion of the principles of English liberty had found the warmest welcome," etc. He adopts the portrait of Samuel Adams as his frontispiece, thereby making him the representative of the whole interesting epoch which preceded the American Revolution. I do not mean to be a partisan, but I think the facts of history show that Virginia was the leading spirit of the preliminary stages, and that either George Washington or Patrick Henry and not Samuel Adams

has the undoubted right to have his portrait as the frontispiece of Dr. Avery's beautiful volume.

Is it true that Massachusetts more than any other colony fostered the spirit of colonial independence and resisted the encroachments of the royal prerogative?

No one will ever question the fact that the colony of Massachusetts had a jealous regard for liberty; but there was often in the affairs of Massachusetts a contentious and tyrannical spirit, which sometimes resulted in the extreme of persecution and cruelty. Long before the American Revolution there was a distinct Paris mob present in Boston and in other New England towns, that sometimes brought disgrace to the colonies and were a distinct setback to the cause of liberty. And yet while the Massachusetts people carried a high head in the troubles under Charles I, the very humble letter which they wrote on the accession of Charles II in 1660 proves that the spirit of policy was not unknown to them. After all the wranglings and threats to set up an independent government in Massachusetts, from 1660 to 1686, it is somewhat surprising to observe the submissive way in which the colonists yielded to the revocation of their charter, involving the loss of their General Assembly and for several years this very right of taxation.

On the other hand, there is nothing in colonial history more inspiring or spectacular than the action of Virginia in 1635, when the council and Burgesses united in arresting and sending Governor Harvey back to England, and her action in 1676 when Nathaniel Bacon, Jr., "General with consent of the people," drove Sir William Berkeley from his government. The first affair was pronounced by King Charles himself "an act of regal authority," and the latter is famous for giving birth to papers which breath a love of liberty only equalled by those of this Revolutionary epoch.

On the question of taxation, the point at issue, no colony could possibly have been more aggressive than Virginia. In the assertion of the principle that no taxes could be imposed without the consent of the legislature, the Virginia people pre-

ceded Massachusetts by many years. In the year 1624 the first formal assertion was made of this right, and it was repeated many times afterwards.[1]

In surrendering to Parliament in 1652, Virginia guarded this right of taxation carefully. Subsequently the people protested against the navigation act; and in the discussion between their own agents and those of the Crown for an application for a charter in 1676 there may be seen the ablest and fullest assertion of colonial rights that is contained in the colonial records of the 17th century.[2] In 1686, the House of Burgesses promptly rejected the application of the Governor and council to be permitted to lay a tax, and when a post office was established by Parliament for America, while all the other colonies immediately submitted, the Virginia Assembly were fearful of the precedent.[3] In the matter of the Pistole fee and the Two Penny Act during Dinwiddie's administration, the spirit of the Assembly was thoroughly republican, and the complaint of the royal governors was that the Virginians were on "all occasions" *invading* the acknowledged authority of the king.

And, indeed, this charge is not altogether without foundation; technically Virginia was wrong in the case of the Pistole fee and of the Two Penny Act.

Spotswood and Dinwiddie were eternally in hot water. The former complained[4] in 1713 that the Assembly, elected by the "mob of this country," would lay no tax on the people, "let the occasion be what it will," and the other wrote[5] to

---

[1] Hening, *Statutes at Large* I., 124, 171, 196, 244, 320.

[2] Hening, II., 540.

[3] In the fall of 1717, the Postmaster General for America proposed to establish a post as had been done in the Northern Colonies. Says Governor Spotswood: "No sooner was this noised abroad but a great clamor was raised against it. The people were made to believe that Parliament could not levy any tax (for so they call the rates of postage) here without the consent of the General Assembly." Spotswood, *Letters* II., 280.

[4] Spotswood, *Letters* II., 1.

[5] Dinwiddie, *Letters* I., 128.

Governor Glen of South Carolina in 1754 that the Virginia Assembly was "too headstrong to be under any direction but from their own opinions and arguments: what influence you may have over your assembly I know not, but I frankly tell you I have none over this here."

The astonishment of Dinwiddie was great, when in May, 1756, the mace bearer of the House of Burgesses appeared within the bar of the Supreme Court in which the Governor sat as Chief Justice, and carried off some of the officials of the court, on the plea that they were members of the House of Burgesses: "an unprecedented step," said Dinwiddie, and one of "great indignity."[6]

In the address of the House of Burgesses to the Governor against the Pistole fee in 1753, this haughty language was used:[7] "The rights of the subject are so secured by law, that they cannot be deprived of the least part of their property but by their own consent." As these words occur, word for word, in Bland's "A Modest and True State of the Case," edited by Worthington C. Ford in his "Virginia Tracts," the address was clearly Bland's work. Bland in this "True State" compared the Pistole fee with the ship money exacted by Charles I. Over in England Lord Worthington, representing the colony, insisted before the Board of Trade that the fee was a tax, and demanded of Lord Mansfield, who acted for Dinwiddie how he could fix a real tax upon the people of Virginia without the assent of the legislature, but Mansfield returned no direct reply. The Privy Council after hearing the argument on both sides ordered a compromise, without reflecting, as Chalmers says, "that every disputed right is relinquished by concession."

The plain fact is that the imposition of the Pistole fee, lawful or not, interfered with the natural right of the people to dispose of their own money. Dinwiddie claimed that it was only such a fee as was usual in other colonies, but the Virginians were right in regarding it as a form of taxation.

---

[6] Ibid II., 403.

[7] Ibid I., 46.

This was also the point in the Parsons' Causes. By act of 1758 (called popularly the "Two penny Act") which made the salaries of the ministers payable in money at two pence the pound of tobacco, a previous act fixing the amount at 16,000 pds. of tobacco, which had the royal approval, was repealed. As the repealing act had not the formality of the royal assent, the parsons in opposing it as invalid had technically the right on their side, but after all it was the people's money with which the ministers were paid, and the people felt they had a right to decide the mode of payment.

In his old age that noble spirited but sometimes wrong-headed and deeply prejudiced old patriot John Adams, stirred by the claim made for Patrick Henry by William Wirt, put the name of James Otis to the front, and since that time Massachusetts writers have laid great stress on the speech which he delivered in 1761 on the "Writs of Assistance," representing it as "the opening, or, at any rate the prelude of the Revolutionary Drama." But is not this greatly over estimating the importance of the speech? In the first place we can't trust the memory of Mr. Adams after the lapse of fifty-six years in regard to the words, or even the general character of Otis' speech. Next, the speech had no effect upon the Court, which went on and quietly executed the writ. Then, the writ itself had nothing to do with the revenue question which brought about the American Revolution, and concerned only a law regarding the regulation of trade.

We have seen the stand taken in the case of the Pistole fee, but passing this by, may we not deem the action of the Virginia House of Burgesses in the Two Penny Act "the prelude"? They disallowed a royal act in 1758, and this event took place three years earlier than the dispute over the writs of assistance. The question, which was one of taxation, ran over a long period of time and involved a hot contest between pamphleteers and newspaper writers, becoming a factor which was mixed up with the agitation of the stamp act and even affected political discussions as late as 1769. In these discussions Landon Carter (1759) and Richard Bland (1760) assumed the ground that the royal instructions could not stand

in the way of the *salus populi.* As to the speech of Patrick Henry, in 1763, in support of the act, its incendiary character rests on far more certain grounds than Otis'; for we have contemporary statements of his words of treason.[8] In one of John Camm's replies to Col. Landon Carter,[9] occurs the following paragraph:

"If so old and deep a Politician as the Colonel, so able a writer, a man so acute at Demonstration, can express himself in this ungarded manner in print on the subject of the prerogative, pronouncing the freedom he takes with the Power of the Crown as an Expression of Regard to his Sovereign, no wonder that an obscure lawyer, the other day, when a court had previously adjudged the Two Penny Act to be no law, and a jury was summoned on a writ of enquiry to settle the damage which the plaintiff had sustained by the said act, should tell the jury that the King, by disallowing the said act, had forfeited the allegiance of the people of Virginia, and that the Parsons instead of obtaining damages deserved to be severely punished."

Moreover, unlike the question of the writs of assistance, which was settled against Otis and the people of Massachusetts, this question of the Two Penny Act was settled in favor of the people of Virginia. The juries of Virginia decided against the parsons, and the privy council of the king to whom they took their appeal evaded giving them any relief.

There were three things which promoted the spirit of independence among the Virginians, (1) *Rural life,* which scattered the people and encouraged individuality. (2) *The character of the suffrage,* which had always been considered a right in Virginia, not a privilege as in New England. Indeed, Dr. J. Franklin Jameson, in a letter to the New York *Nation* for April 27, 1893, showed that at the time of the American Revolution more people voted in Virginia than in Massachusetts.[10] (3) *Negro slavery,* which made race and color, not wealth or social influence, the fundamental distinction in society. The importation of whites voluntarily bound

[8] Henry, *Life, Correspondence and Speeches* I., 40.

[9] *A Review of the Rector Detected or the Colonel Reconnoitered,* 1764.

[10] See also QUARTERLY, VI., 7—*Virginians Voting in the Colonial Period.*

to service had since 1705 almost entirely ceased,[11] and the menial services were performed wholly by blacks and some convicts who came over in the ships. If the rich man by means of his slaves was independent of his poor neighbors, they had necessarily nothing to ask of him. As a consequence, in 1792 when Virginia had control of her own destinies, she became the headquarters of the Democratic Republican Party—the party of popular ideas.

Rev. Andrew Burnaby, an English traveller, touches off the character of the Virginia people in 1759. "The public or political character of the Virginians corresponds with their private one: they are haughty and jealous of their liberties, impatient of restraint, and can scarcely bear the thought of being controlled by any superior power. *Many of them consider the colonies as independent states not connected with Great Britain, otherwise than by having the same common king and being bound to her with natural affection.*" The words of Edmund Burke, with reference to the Southern people, at the time of the American Revolution, have often been quoted: "Freedom," said he, "is to them not only an enjoyment but a kind of rank and privilege. . . . In such people the haughtiness of domination combines with a spirit of freedom, fortifies it and renders it invincible."

With this record for jealousy of prerogative, it may be said at least, that Virginia had quite as many qualifications as Massachusetts to lead in a contest affecting her fundamental rights.

Preludes aside, the war of the Revolution, according to Dr. Avery, had its beginning in the policy of the English government to raise a revenue from America without its consent. But to get a full view of the subject we must get back to the origin of this suggestion. There had, long before been colonial governors to suggest a tax, but it took the war between France and England, known as the "French and Indian War" to give the proposition a real vitality. Hitherto, the war for dominion between the two countries had its beginning in Europe and had affected only the extreme ends of America—New England

[11] Dinwiddie, *Letters*, I., 153.

and South Carolina. The advance of the French down the Ohio involved the great middle colonies and brought about a continental question for the first time. Virginia struck the first blow, and the first English blood to be spilled was that of a Virginian. Of the true significance of the war, William Makepeace Thackeray has caught the idea better than any other writer. He says:[12]

"It was strange that, in a savage forest of Pennsylvania, a young Virginian officer should fire a shot, and waken up a war which was to last for sixty years, which was to cover his own country and pass into Europe, to cost France her American colonies, to sever ours from us, and create the great Western republic; to rage over the Old World when extinguished in the new; and, of all the myriads engaged in the vast contest, to leave the prize of the greatest fame with him who struck the first blow."

Viewing the matter in a broad sense, therefore, the American Revolution began in 1754 and ended with the year 1783, and, the true representative of this great epoch was neither Samuel Adams nor James Otis, nor even Patrick Henry, but George Washington, who was in at the start and came out at the finish the most prominent man of all. But assuming a narrower period, that from 1763 to 1776, the moving figure of the drama was Patrick Henry, as the following, I think, will show:

Promptly after the Peace in 1763 George Grenville, chancellor of the exchequer, took up his scheme for raising a revenue to support an army in America. On March 9, 1764, he suggested in the House of Commons that a revenue from indirect taxes should at once be raised, and gave notice of his purpose to bring in a bill a year later for levying stamp duties in the colonies. The declaratory resolves to this effect were agreed to in committee, and the next day, March 10, formally accepted by the house. April 5, a bill, called the "sugar act," received the royal approval. This bill was, in form, the same as that adopted in 1733, with its rates on sugar and molasses reduced so as to encourage importation, and it was accompanied with rigorous provisions for its enforcement.

[12] Thackeray, *The Virginias—A Tale of the Last Century.*

The agents of the colonies in London promptly advised their respective governments in America, and the trouble soon began. Agitation in Boston commenced with a popular meeting held May 24, 1764, at which instructions drafted by Samuel Adams were approved, addressed to the representatives of Boston in the Provincial Assembly, summoned to meet May 30th. The question was taken up in the House of Representatives and, on June 13th, a "memorial" and instructions to the agent in London, drawn by James Otis were adopted. Then on June 15 a committee was appointed to draft a circular letter to the other colonies. At a subsequent meeting of the Assembly, in October, the governor, council and representatives united in an address to the House of Commons. In July appeared a pamphlet from James Otis entitled, "The Rights of the British Colonies Asserted and Proved": and two months later Oxenbridge Thacher published "The Sentiment of a British-American." This represented pretty fully the steps taken by Massachusetts in the initial stages.

An examination, however, of these papers do not in the writer's opinion, entitle them to the credit assigned to them by many writers, including Dr. Avery. The papers deal almost wholly with the provisions of the Sugar act, with an only incidental and distant reference in any of them to the Stamp act. In the formal address of the Massachusetts Provincial Assembly, in October, which must be taken as the voice of the province, the argument for exemption from taxation was not placed on the ground of right, but on the ground of what was fair and just, which was taking distinctly a step backward. In Otis' pamphlet the legislative supremacy of Great Britain was admitted in the strongest terms, and as to the resolutions of Samuel Adams of May 24, 1764, they had not the remotest reference to the Stamp act. "The sole occasion of colonial alarm," says Dr. Avery, "seems to have been the passage of the Sugar bill in April." [13]

This statement of Dr. Avery is certainly true of Massa-

[13] In this view, Dr. Avery has the concurrence of Dr. Charles Elliott Howard, *Preliminaries of the Revolution*, p. 115, (in Hart's *American Nation*, Vol. VIII) and Dr. Moses Coit Tyler, *The Literary History*

chusetts, but it is not true of Virginia, nor of the other Southern States. The Sugar act cut very little figure in any of them.

The Sugar act was not a measure on which the colonies—not even the New England colonies—could have been marshalled to rebellion for the following reasons: (1) The Sugar act was only an enlargement of a previous act passed in 1733, and, except for its increased stringency and the revenue purpose proclaimed in the preamble of the bill, there was nothing about it, in appearance at least, to take it out of the catalogue of laws regarding commerce which England had been passing for a hundred years. (2) The act bore heavily upon New England trade, but the other colonies, especially the Southern colonies, had few ships and it did not materially affect their condition for the worse.

The New Englanders wanted molasses from the West Indies to make rum for the American slave trade, but a strong sentiment against the continuance of this slave trade had already sprung up in Virginia.

In Virginia the only thing in the Sugar bill that had to any one the aspect of a new hardship was the restriction on the importation of Madeira wine, which however concerned only the richer classes, and not the masses of the people, who drank cider and apple brandy. The people were far more concerned about the restrictions on salt of several years standing, and thought it an injustice that England allowed the Northern colonies to get salt from Europe in general and confined the Southern colonies to England.[14]

---

of the American Revolution, I., 61. And yet, this is a comparatively new view of the question. In the excitement over the Stamp act, the sugar bill was nearly forgotten, and history has been written as if the Stamp Act was the whole issue. John Adams in his *Novanglus* turns the agitation in Massachusetts, in 1764, on the Stamp Act; and Mr. Henry, in his life of his grandfather, was so imposed upon by Bancroft and the other current historians, as to suppose that Samuel Adams' resolutions of May 24, 1764, was a protest against the Stamp Act. See Henry's *Henry,* pages 61, 103.

[14] Letter of the Virginia Committee of Correspondence, March 29, 1763, *Virginia Magazine,* XI, 132, 137.

But how stood the menace of the Stamp act? Here was a measure wholly unprecedented—a measure which proposed for the first time the principle of inland taxation. It came to the fireside of every man on the continent, since it proposed to require a stamp on all wills, deeds and every species of writing. Here was a basis for a union of colonial opposition, on which all Americans could stand. Now, it is in the early appreciation of what the Stamp act meant to the continent that Virginia undoubtedly leads Massachusetts.

Owing to the loss of the *Virginia Gazette* for 1764 and the meagerness of the other sources of information, I cannot determine the exact date when the first news reached Virginia of the Sugar bill and the proposed Stamp act. The letter of Montague the Virginia agent in London, was dated March 10, the day Grenville's plan was favorably accepted by the House of Commons. It is probable that it did not arrive in Williamsburg till the middle of May.

That the news was abroad in the colony before May 31, 1764, is shown by a letter of Richard Henry Lee, dated thus at Chantilly in Westmoreland County. In this letter Lee writes:

"Many late determinations of the great, on your side of the water, seem to prove a resolution, to oppress North America with the iron hand of power, unrestrained by any sentiment, drawn from reason, the liberty of mankind, or the genius of their own government. 'Tis said the House of Commons readily resolved, that it had a right to tax the subject here, without the consent of his representative; and that in consequence of this, they had proceeded to levy on us a considerable annual sum, for the support of a body of troops to be kept up in this quarter. Can it be supposed that those brave adventurous Britons, who originally conquered and settled these countries, through great dangers to themselves and benefit to the mother country, meant thereby to deprive themselves of the blessings of that free government of which they were members, and to which they had an unquestionable right? * * * Possibly this step of the mother country, though intended to oppress and keep us low, in order to secure our dependence, may be subversive of this end. Poverty and oppression, among those whose minds are filled with ideas of British liberty, may introduce a virtuous industry, with a train of generous and manly sentiments, which, when in future they become supported by numbers, may produce a fatal resentment of parental care being converted into tyrannical usurpation."

Montague's letter was directed to the committee of correspondence of Virginia. This was a committee which sat during the recess of the General Assembly, and had a discretionary power in dealing with the agent of Virginia in London.

A meeting was held at the capitol in Williamsburg, June 15, 1764, when the following members were in attendance: John Blair (President of the Council), William Nelson (next in dignity in the Council), Thomas Nelson (Secretary of State), Robert Carter (Member of the Council), John Robinson (Speaker of the House of Burgesses), Peyton Randolph (Attorney General), George Wythe, Robert Carter and Lewis Burwell, of Kingsmill, leading members of the House of Burgesses.

The resolution passed by this committee on the Stamp act on June 15, shows how widely the alarm had already spread in Virginia and evidenced very fully the resentment of the people:

"Ordered that Mr. Montague be informed that the Colony is much alarmed at the Attempt in parliament to lay a duty on the sev[l] Commodities men. (mentioned) in their Votes, a Copy of which he sent to y[e] Com. (Committee) particularly on Madeira Wine & the proposal for a Stamp Duty. That he be desired to oppose this with all his influence, & as far as he may venture insist on the Injustice of laying any Duties on us & particularly taxing the internal Trade of the Colonies without their Consent."

Pursuant to this resolution,[15] George Wythe and Robert Carter Nicholas were appointed to draw up a letter to the Virginia agent.

When the committee met again on July 28, Messrs. Wythe and Nicholas, who had received news of the passage of the Sugar bill, laid before them their letter [16] to the agent, which was read and approved. This letter went over the matters of interest to the colony, cautioned the agent as to the appeal taken by the Parsons to the Privy Council, and lamented the failure of Parliament to pay attention to their petition on the

[15] It may be seen in *Va. Magazine,* XII, 6.

[15] It may be seen in *Va. Magazine,* XII, 6.

salt tax. Regarding the sugar act, so far as the tax on Madeira wine contained in it was concerned, they expressed themselves as "very uneasy about it," but as it had passed into law they thought it inexpedient to say anything farther upon that head. By far the weight of the letter lay in its earnest discussion of the Stamp act.

"The proposal to lay a stamp duty upon paper and leather is truly alarming." It would impose an additional heavy burden upon the people already laden with debt, . . . "but what makes the approaching storm still more gloomy is that if it should be suffered to break upon our heads, not only we & our children but our latest posterity may and will probably be involved in its fatal consequences." "That no subjects of the king of Great Britain can be made subservient to laws without either their personal consent or their consent by their representatives we take to be the most vital principle of the British constitution." The committee was candid enough to admit that Parliament, "out of the plentitude of its *power,*" had made restraint upon colonial trade, and even "imposed some duties upon our exports." But said they: "To fix a tax upon such a part of our trade and concerns as are merely internal appears to be taking a long and hasty stride, and we believe may truly be said of the first importance." The idea of co-operation suggested in Massachusetts by Samuel Adams, was also present to the committee, and Montague was instructed to adopt the course resorted to on other occasions, which was to enlist the agents of other colonies in a common opposition; "for," said they, "we are of the opinion that their aid and assistance in all probability can never upon any occasion whatever be more reasonably asked."

The letter was marked by that profoundly respectful style, in which the colonies were accustomed to make known their wants to the mother country, yet, in its clear and emphatic claim of *right* and its grave and earnest remonstrance, the notes of liberty are unmistakable.

There was doubtless a hope lingering in the breast of the committee that such a course as direct taxation would not be

seriously prosecuted, but when at the same meeting the President, John Blair, of Williamsburg, laid before the committee a fresh letter from the agent [17] informing them that "Parliament seemed determined to carry their intentions of taxing the colonies at pleasure into execution," their spirit rose indignantly, and a postscript having a sharper ring was immediately penned at the table:

"Since writing the foregoing Part of this Letter, we have received your last of 11th of April; Every Mention of the parliaments' intention to lay an Inland Duty upon us gives us fresh apprehension of the fatal Consequences that may arise to Posterity from such a precedent; but we doubt not that the Wisdom of a British parliament will lead them to distinguish between a Power and Right to do any act. No man can say but that they have a power to declare that his Majesty may raise Money upon the people of England by Proclamation, but no man surely dare be such an Enemy to his Country as to say that they have a Right to do this. We conceive that no Man or Body of Men, however invested with power, have a right to do anything that is contrary to Reason & Justice, or that can tend to the Destruction of the Constitution."

The proposed action of Parliament in regard to the Stamp act was general talk at the meeting of the Assembly on October 31, for other letters had arrived in Williamsburg which "threw most people into a violent flame." [18]

On the day the Assembly met, October 31, the speaker, John Robinson, who was absent from the committee of correspondence in July, laid before them the letter from the House of Representatives of Massachusetts regarding the Sugar bill, which he had received some time before, addressed to him as speaker of the House of Burgesses. On November 14, resolutions drafted by Richard Henry Lee, protesting against the Stamp act and directing three remonstrances to be drawn up, to the King, Lords, and Commons respectively, were adopted.

[17] Montague's letter is printed in *Va. Magazine,* X., 3, 4. It does him great credit as it shows how fully alive he was to the necessity of prompt and resolute action on the part of the Colony.

[18] Journals of the House of Burgess of Virginia, 1761-1765, liv-lviii.

The petition to the king and address to the House of Lords were written by Richard Henry Lee; the remonstrance to the House of Commons by George Wythe, a strong paper though toned down from its original form to please the more conservative members.

"The word right or an express denial of Parliament to tax," which found no place in the petition of Massachusetts rang out over and over again in these patriotic papers. The right of taxation was called "their ancient and inestimable right," "a right which, as men and descendants of Britons they have ever quietly possessed," "this invaluable birthright," "their just and undoubted right as Britons," "their sacred birthright and most invaluable inheritance," "a right of which they cannot now be deprived," &c.

"Your memorialists," runs the address to the House of Lords, "conceive it to be a fundamental principle of the British constitution,

> without which freedom can nowhere exist, that the people are not subject to any taxes but such as are laid on them by their own consent, or by those who are legally appointed to represent them. Property must become too precarious for the genius of a free people which can be taken from them at the will of others, who cannot know what taxes such people can bear, or the easiest mode of raising them; and who are not under that restraint which must be the greatest security against a burthensome taxation, when the representatives themselves must be affected by every tax imposed on the people. Your memorialists are therefore led into an humble confidence, that your lordships will not think any reason sufficient to support such a power in the British Parliament, where the colonies cannot be represented, a power never before constitutionally assumed, and which, if they have a right to exercise on any occasion, must necessarily establish this melancholy truth, that the inhabitants of the colonies are the slaves of Britons from whom they are descended, and from whom they might expect every indulgence that the obligations of interest and affection can entitle them to."

These demonstrations of public sentiment were insufficient to shake the purposes of the ministry, as we know. The Stamp act was approved by the king on February 17, 1765, but it was not to go into effect till November 1, 1765.

In America the intelligence of the passage of the bill caused the deepest despondency. In all the Colonies, unmistakable signs were given of submission. In Massachusetts where the attention of the public had been taken up with an unvailing protest against the Sugar act, there was no decided opinion on the Stamp act. Nothing was heard from Samuel Adams; and James Otis, who was the commanding spirit of the colony, said:[19] "It is the duty of all humbly and silently to acquiesce in all the decisions of the supreme legislature; nine hundred and ninety-nine in one thousand of the colonists will never once entertain a thought but of submission to our sovereign and to the authority of Parliament. In all possible contingencies they undoubtedly have the right to levy internal taxes on the colonists." With a full knowledge of these sentiments the town of Boston re-elected Otis to the Assembly in May, and that body re-elected Thomas Oliver as councillor, although he had been appointed stamp distributor.

When the Massachusetts Provincial Assembly met in May, 1765, nothing better occurred to Otis than a congress of the colonists for consultation, to be held in October. The time of holding the meeting, the language of the resolutions, and the political views of the author in regard to the legislative supremacy of Parliament, showed that he expected nothing more than "a united, dutiful, loyal and humble representation of their condition to his Majesty and to Parliament." To this congress Otis, who was surely submissive enough, was appointed a delegate, and there were associated with him two friends of the royal prerogative, Oliver Patridge and Timothy Ruggles. Hutchinson, the chief justice, wrote to the ministry: "The stamp act is received among us with as much decency as could be expected; it leaves no room for evasion and will execute itself."

It was a supreme moment, liberty hung trembling in the balance and Virginia sprang to the front and saved the day. On May 29, 1765, Patrick Henry offered in the House of

[19] Bancroft, *History of the United States.*

Burgesses a series of resolutions, in vindication of the rights of the colony, and in his speech hurled defiance to the British Crown. The grandfather of the present writer, while a student at William and Mary, stood in the lobby of the House, and heard his speech, and afterwards reported it to William Wirt, Henry's biographer:

"Caesar had his Brutus, Charles I his Cromwell and George III"—and here the presiding officer, John Robinson, interrupted him by shouting "treason, treason, treason:"—"may profit by their example. If this be treason make the most of it."

The Virginia resolutions were printed and published in the newspapers. Otis pronounced them "treasonable." Nevertheless, the spirit of resistance spread like wild-fire, the mob broke lose in Boston and looted Hutchinson's house, and all the stamp distributors were forced to resign in all the Colonies. The flames traversed the Atlantic and burned in the English cities. The English government was recalled to its senses, and the result was seen in the repeal of the Stamp act on March 22, 1766.[20]

Dr. Avery lays much stress upon the proceedings of the Stamp act congress called by Massachusetts, and no doubt its papers, though tame, were praiseworthy, but does he catch the true significance of the times? It is very doubtful whether, without the Virginia resolutions, the Stamp act congress would ever have met. There can be no doubt that without the Virginia resolutions this congress would have represented but a few colonies, and in this event it is certain that its proceedings would have been very different from what they actually were. Governor Bernard wrote from Massachusetts: "Two or three months ago I thought that this people would submit to the Stamp act. Murmurs were indeed continually heard, but they seemed to be such as would die away. The publishing the Virginia resolutions proved an alarm bell to the disaffected."

In fact, had it not been for the Virginia resolutions, there

[20] Henry, "Life and Speeches of Patrick Henry," I., 65-106.

is every reason to suppose that the Stamp act would have gone into quiet execution, like so many other acts of Parliament which had met colonial opposition.

While the Virginia Assembly acted under the leadership of a comparatively new man, the division among its members was not a radical one. The opposition to Mr. Henry proceeded not so much on account of hostility to his resolutions as because of the belief that further time should be given to Parliament to reply to the remonstrances which had been sent to England in December before. For this reason R. H. Lee did not attend the session, and Peyton Randolph, George Wythe, and Richard Bland were the chief opponents of Patrick Henry. Peyton Randolph was afterwards first President of the Continental Congress. Richard Henry Lee offered in Congress the resolution for Independence.[21] George Wythe

[21] On one occasion, Lee, however, did some quick politics. At the beginning of the session of 1764, he applied for the position of stamp collector. In a few days he saw his error and changed ground. The excuse he gave was that he knew nothing of the stamp act until the session began in October, and being solicited to apply, he did so without due consideration. How, then, would he have reconciled his letter of May 31, quoted from in the text? James Mercer says that Williamsburg was in a "flame" before the session began, and the facts given in the text undoubtedly confirmed his position. The plain fact seems to be that Lee was tempted by the beneficial monetary consequences of the office, and yielded to these influences; but in a very short space of time—in a few days—his nobler nature shook them off. He was, perhaps, censurable, too, for keeping his change of opinion concealed. George Mercer accepted the office and was afterwards burned in effigy at Westmoreland Court House, and the Mercers regarded R. H. Lee as the instigator.

The following is from a letter of John Camm, July 24, 1766: "One of our most active, flaming and applauded sons of liberty, Col. Richard Henry Lee, who burnt poor Mercer in effigy, raised a mob on Archey Ritchie etc., etc., has been lately blown up in the public print, it is said by Mr. James Mercer. It appears that Lee previous to his patriotism had made interest to be made Stamp Master himself, from letters it seems now in possession of Col. Mercer, so that Lee will find it difficult, hereafter, to deceive anybody into an opinion of his patriotism." See Lee, *Life of Richard Henry Lee,* I, page 40; *Virginia Magazine,* X., 1-12; WILLIAM AND MARY QUARTERLY, II., 238.

stood with John Adams on the floor of Congress in support of them, and Richard Bland assumed a most radical position in the prints.

Toryism in Massachusetts on the other hand had a much stronger hold in the divisions of the Provincial Assembly, and went to much greater lengths in opposition.

Among all the patriotic manifestations which succeeded the action of the Virginia Legislature in May, 1765, one, having its *locus* in Virginia in the early part of 1766, had perhaps the most important bearing on succeeding events.

This consisted in the publication in the early spring of 1766 of a pamphlet by Colonel Richard Bland entitled, "An Enquiry into the Rights of the British Colonies." A pamphleteer in the controversy over the Pistole fee, and in the quarrel with the Parsons, Bland had long before discussed the question of Parliamentary power. In a pamphlet composed in October, 1763, he used this language:

"As all power, therefore, is excluded from the colony of withdrawing its dependence from the mother kingdom, so is all power over the colony excluded from the mother kingdom, but such as respects its external government. I do not deny but that Parliament, as the strongest power, can force any laws it shall think fit upon us; but the inquiry is not what it can do, but what constitutional right it has to do so; and if it has not any constitutional right, then any tax respecting our internal polity which may hereafter be imposed upon us by act of Parliament is arbitrary as depriving us of our rights, and may be opposed. But we have nothing of this sort to fear from those guardians of the rights and liberties of mankind."

Now in this new Essay he announced the doctrine that the British Colonies in America were united to the empire only through the British Crown, and not at all through the British Parliament, and that to the acts of the latter they owed no more obedience than did the king's dominion of Hanover. The doctrine thus advanced is declared by Dr. Tyler [22] in his "Literary History of the American Revolution,"

[22] With all due respect for the memory of Dr. Moses Coit Tyler, who did a most valuable work for posterity, these volumes may be more appropriately styled, "A Literary History of New England in the

"a prodigious innovation," for which few Americans were then ready, though it was "a working theory, first, for the preservation of the union of Great Britain, and afterwards as it proved, for the dissolution of that union."

"A prodigious innovation" it may have been in New England, but not so in Virginia, since it is shown by the extracts quoted above from Burnaby, that it was an opinion held by "many people" in Virginia as early as 1759, seven years before the publication of Bland's pamphlet.

This pamphlet was nevertheless the first explicit and elaborate exposition of the doctrine to appear before the public; and Bland's arguments had great effect on making the doctrine become a general American doctrine. They had their effect undoubtedly upon Jefferson in his "Summary View of the Rights of the British Colonies," and on John Adams in his "Essay of Novanglus."

American Revolution." Patrick Henry is hardly mentioned in the whole work, while James Otis is prominent as orator, as politician, and as essayist. Otis' oration on the Writs of Assistance is described at length, but good Dr. Tyler says nothing of Henry's Stamp act resolutions, or any of his great speeches. He gives no account of Landon Carter's pamphlets in the Parsons' Causes, or Richard Bland's Essays, except in respect to his great pamphlet, "An Enquiry into the Rights of the British Colonies," to which he gives a page or little more. He passes by these statesmen, and others like them of the South, and devotes whole pages to the sermons of long forgotten New England preachers. What is the explanation of this? I am far from believing that it is due to hostility to the South in the past or present. What then? Is Dr. J. Leslie Hall correct in saying that Dr. Tyler's failings arise from "an *unfortunate habit* that Northern historians have of looking to New England, and away from all Southern commonwealths, for all that is great, illustrious, potential in our history." QUARTERLY, VI., 262.

THE HONOR SYSTEM AT WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE.

Extracts from addresses of Judge Nathaniel Beverley Tucker, Professor of Law in that institute.[1]

From An Address to His Law Class in November, 1834.[1]

Before I conclude, give me leave to offer a few remarks on a subject in which every member of the faculty has an equal and common interest. If there be any thing by which the University of William and Mary has been advantageously distinguished, it is the liberal and magnanimous character of its discipline. It has been the study of its professors to cultivate at the same time the intellect, the principles, and the deportment of the student, laboring with equal diligence to infuse the spirit of the scholar and the spirit of the gentlemen. He comes to us as a gentleman. As such we receive and treat him, and resolutely refuse to know him in any other character. He is not harassed with petty regulations; he is not insulted and annoyed by impertinent surveillance. Spies and informers have no countenance among us. We receive no accusation but from the conscience of the accused. His honor is the only witness to which we appeal; and should he be even capable of prevarication or falsehood, we admit no proof of the fact. But I beg you to observe, that in this cautious and forbearing spirit of our legislation, you have not only proof that we have no disposition to harass you with unreasonable requirements; but a pledge that such regulations as we have found it necessary to make, will be enforced. If we did not mean to execute our laws, it might do little harm to have them minute and much in detail on paper. It is because we do mean to enforce them that we are cautious to require nothing which may not be exacted without tyranny or oppression, without degrading ourselves or dishonoring you.

[1] Judge Tucker had been United States Circuit Judge in Missouri, and this was his first address to his law class on returning to his native State. These addresses are to be found in the *Southern Literary Messenger.*

The effect of this system, in inspiring a high and scrupulous sense of honor, and a scorn of all disingenous artifice, has been ascertained by long experience, and redounds to the praise of its authors. That it has not secured a regular discharge of all academical duties, or prevented the disorders which characterize the wildness of youth, is known and lamented. But we believe and know, that he who cannot be held to his duty, but by base and slavish motives, can never do honor to his instructors; while we are equally sure that such a system as keeps up a sense of responsibility to society at large, is most conducive to high excellence. We think it right, therefore, to adapt our discipline to those from whom excellence may be expected, rather than to those from whom mediocrity may barely be hoped. Such a system is valuable, too, as forming a sort of middle term between the restraints of pupilage and the perfect freedom and independence of manhood. Experience shows that there is a time of life, when the new born spirit of independence, and the prurience of incipient manhood will not be repressed. They will break out in the airs or in the graces of manhood. Between these we have to choose. The youth of eighteen treated as a boy, exhibits the former. Treated as a man, he lays aside these forever, and displays the latter. This system is thus believed to afford the best security against such offences as stain the name of the perpetrator. Of such our records bear no trace; nor is there, perhaps, a single individual of all who have matriculated here, that would blush to meet any of his old associates in this school of honor.

From His Address to the Students of William and Mary on the 3rd of July, 1847.

Of all the associations which have connected me with life one only now remains, which has endured so long as my relation to this institution. No spot on earth can call so many recollections of the distant past as that where I now stand.[1]

[1] Judge Tucker's father, St. George Tucker, had been Professor of Law from 1790 to 1804. The son was a student there in 1801.

The sports and strifes of my boyhood, the emulations of youth, the labors of declining age—this room is the scene of all. It was my grammar school.

About the time I passed into the higher classes it became the lecture room for these. It was the chamber of our debating societies; and here have I heard the first essays at eloquence from men whose voices have since influenced the destinies of nations, and whose names are famous in the world's history. The cogent reasoning of Johnson;[1] the fervid eloquence of Leigh;[2] the acuteness of Stanard;[3] the logic of Barbour;[4] the sound good sense of one whom it may not become me to name,[5] but who even then united the simplicity of the boy, which he has never lost, with the wisdom and prudence of age, all these rise up before me in their accustomed places, as my eye glances around the room. Jurists, statesmen and warriors—here was the nursery of their greatness; here was the arena of their first struggle for fame. The most distinguished ornaments of the bar and bench; the men who have been prominent in the councils of the State and of the Union; the chieftain[6] whose triumphant banner now hangs, like a thunder-cloud, on the brow of the Sierra Madre, threatening destruction to the City of Montezuma, all were my compeers here. How can the scene of such recollections be other than a hallowed spot to me? How can the institutions, around which they cluster, ever cease to be an object of deep and unabating interest?

Why else am I here? I who had made myself a home in a distant land, and identified myself with the rising fortunes

---

[1] Chapman Johnson, a famous lawyer.

[2] Benjamin Watkins Leigh, afterwards U. S. Senator.

[3] Robert Stanard, Judge of the State Supreme Court.

[4] Philip Pendleton Barbour, Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States.

[5] Henry St. George Tucker, President of the Supreme Court of Virginia.

[6] Gen. Winfield Scott.

of a State now great and prosperous—Why am I here? It is that I had left behind me here, the scene of all these reminiscences, and also something yet dearer to my heart than these, and something for which I looked in vain elsewhere.

What was that?—Gentlemen, there is a peculiarity common to the character of this Institution and to that of the State of Virginia, which has often attracted observation, and provoked the enquiry which of these might be considered as the cause of the other? To my mind the answer is found in the history of the events which were passing in the mother country just 200 years ago. It was then that the banner of loyalty, which, in the beginning of the great rebellion, had waved triumphant over the enemies of the crown, began to droop—ere long to be trailed in the dust—trampled down and dishonored. It was then that multitudes of gallant men who knew no compromise of honor, who could not learn how to palter in a double sense, to unswear allegiance, and to show their fidelity to their king by warring against his life, was borne down in the strife, and, driven from their native land, sought shelter in the ever loyal colony of Virginia. More than half the inhabitants came over about that time and they brought with them all the chivalrous gallantry, all the self renouncing generosity, all the unwavering fidelity to plighted faith, to which they had sacrificed every thing at home. They had their faults, but falsehood was not among them. They had their weaknesses, but fickleness and fear were not of the number. They kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit, of an exalted freedom—deeply imbued with "that sensibility of honor which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage while it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness."

Gentlemen; it was by these men and for the education of the sons of these men that William and Mary College was founded. That it might not disappoint their wishes, it was indispensable that, whatever else was taught, it should be a school of HONOR. Without this it might have wasted its

resources in the hopeless attempt to impart the benefits of education to the Indian; but it could receive no countenance from that class of men whose confidence is indispensible to the success and usefulness of an academic institution. Thus did William and Mary College receive the impress of their character, and take the lead in that great experiment in the discipline of the youthful mind, which substitutes candid appeals to the better feelings of the pupil, and a frank reliance on his honor, for espionage, severity and the restraints of the cloister. The experiment has succeeded so well that the example has to a certain extent been every where followed.

But William and Mary still kept in advance of all the rest. Emboldened by success, she went on steadily, to establish a system altogether her own. You, Gentlemen, need not be told what that system is. You need not be told of the unreserved confidence reposed in the honor of the Student who is thereby made a co-worker with his preceptors in the moral training and discipline of his mind. While nothing is required of him but attention to his studies, nothing is forbidden but duelling, which might be fatal to his life, and gambling and drunkenness and tavern-haunting, which must be pernicious to his health, his intellect and his morals. To his own sense of duty and interest, fortified by his plighted word, the enforcement of this scanty but important code is committed, while academic censures are only resorted to in extreme and rare cases.

How faithfully the Professors fulfil the implied engagement on their part, to rely confidingly on the honor thus pledged, is known to all who have come under their discipline. Were they so disingenuous as to establish covertly a system of espionage—did they themselves act, in any degree, the part of spies,—did they not even wink hard, lest they might seem to doubt the honor on which they profess to rely, they would have had no right to complain if their plan had proved a complete failure. But while they openly and in good faith acted on the professed conviction, that the son of a Virginia Gentleman must be incapable of forfeiting his plighted word, they had a right to feel assured that their reliance on his honor would not be disappointed.

Gentlemen, it has not been disappointed. It is not given to all to do credit to their instructors by their attainments in Literature and Science—but when have the sons of William and Mary dishonored her, by dishonoring themselves? Which of them has at any time shown himself base, false to his word, treacherous to his friends—dishonest in his dealings? The result of the experiment has been as brilliant as its conception was grand and noble.

But, Gentlemen, I repeat that William and Mary is not to be accounted the author of this experiment. In making it she did but become the exponent of the character of the People to which she owed her existence. She could not do otherwise; nor, while Virginia remains what she was, can she do otherwise.

Some sort of preparation is required to qualify a Student to enter any academic Institution. In some it is a smattering of the Classics—or a knowledge of the rudiments of Mathematics. William and Mary true to her original vocation, demands only a love of truth, and a sense of honor. These are all she asks. To him who comes thus prepared, she holds herself ready to afford all the benefits of Education. All not so qualified mistake their place, when they enter an institution founded on such principles. They can get nothing here but disgrace and ruin of body, mind and purse. But God be thanked, the spirit of the Gentlemen reigns, as it ever has reigned, paramount in the minds of Virginians; and far—far from us be the day, when fathers shall cease to imbue the minds of their sons with principles and sentiments which shall make a breach of faith,—the forfeiture of the plighted word,—an abuse of confidence,—or any other form of baseness possible to the Youth of this proud old State.

Should that day ever come, the glory of Virginia will have passed away forever; and William and Mary must then govern herself by those grim maxims which make up the code of all power "not standing on its own honor and the honor of those subjected to it." No longer a school of Honor, she must be given over to prying Yankee pedagogues, with their

spies and domiciliary visits, and their petty regulations extending to the down-lying and the uprising—the cut of the coat and the color of the hat, and all those vexatious minutiae which are meant to make the Student sensible of his mistake, if at any time he should fancy himself a gentleman.

Gentlemen;—William and Mary is what Virginia made her. Virginia continues what she is in the part because the spirit of her ancient chivalry continues to act on her through William and Mary. Each is at once cause and effect, and each is necessary to the other. William and Mary is the palladium of Virginia, to be guarded as the ark of her safety.

JOHN QUINCY ADAMS AND ILLINOIS.

The following is extracted from a sketch of Hon. Meredith P. Gentry, by Hon. Alexander H. Stephens, of Georgia, in Gentry, *The Gentry Family in America*:

"It may be doubted if any Congress since the first has presented so many new members [as the Twenty-Eighth Congress] who subsequently obtained such distinction; indeed it was said before the expiration of that Congress that there were at least twenty candidates for the Presidency in the number. It was thought that the Illinois delegation had at least three, perhaps more, aspirants for that high office. Upon all occasions when any new subject of debate was started nearly every member of the Illinois delegation would speak, and they all spoke well. This gave rise to a rather amusing incident in the House as to the proper pronunciation of the name of that State. Mr. John Campbell, of South Carolina, a most accomplished and scholarly gentleman, who had been for many years a representative from that State, pronounced the name "Ille-noi." Others insisted that the right pronunciation was "Ill-nois." Mr. Campbell appealed to the venerable gentleman from Massachusetts, Mr. John Quincy Adams, who was considered the highest authority in the House upon all such questions. Much interest was manifested as to what would be

the decision of the authority appealed to, and all eyes were directed to Mr. Adams, when, with a smirking smile upon his face, he rose and spoke in substance as follows: "Mr. Speaker: Non nostrum inter vos tantas componere lites" (quoting the reply of Palaemon to Menalcas and Damaetas, from Virgil's "Third Eclogue": It is not for me to decide so great contests between you). "If I were to judge of the proper pronunciation of the State from the demonstrations of its delegations in the present Congress, I should say it ought to be 'All-noise,'" emphasizing with great effect the last syllable. A roar of laughter was the result.

The leading members of that state who were thus figuring in those debates and who were thought to have aspirations for the Presidency even at that early date, were Mr. Douglas, who subsequently became so famous, John J. Hardin, who gallantly fell at the head of his regimental column at the battle of Buena Vista, one of the most agreeable and brightest men of his day, and Mr. John A. McClernand, who then and subsequently acted so important a part in the legislation of the country and figured so conspicuously in command of a corps during the late war."

LETTERS OF JOHN TYLER.[1]

John Tyler to Daniel Webster.

Chas. City, County.
May 22, 1843.

My Dear Sir:—

I have read and now return the private despatches which you favored me from Mr. Everett and your letter in reply. L'd Aberdeen must certainly be under great mistake in relation to what passed between you on the right of visit and of search. Most certainly but one language has been held

[1] These letters, now first published, were copied some years ago from the originals in the possession of Mr. C. P. Greenough, of Boston.

in all our Cabinet Consultations, which was uniformly in negation of any such right.

When I left Washington, being much straightened for time, I desired Mr. Spencer to answer for me in regard to the Bunker Hill celebration, and, since I have been here, he sent me in a draft of a letter which I approved. I presume ere this the committee has received it. I certainly propose to be with you upon that occasion.

I received a letter a few days since from Mr. Legaré making known to me your objections to the appointment of Doctor Martin as Chief Clerk in the State Department.[1] I was not aware before that you had any personal objections to the Doctor, and it occurred to me that his appointment to that place would leave me more at liberty upon the subject of the Head of the Department. I had not perceived either that the *Spectator* had taken any personal grounds. Most certainly, if such had been known to me, I would not for a moment have encouraged the idea of his appointment. I have desired Mr. Cushing, who has just left me, to converse with you on this subject, and if your feelings remain unchanged, I must look out for another place for Doctor Martin.

Be assured of my constant regard and esteem.

John Tyler.

Mr. Webster.

John Tyler to Daniel Webster.

Sherwood Forest,
Chas. City County, Virginia.
Nov. 6, 1851.

My Dear Sir:

I am greatly obliged to you for the pamphlet copy of your addresses at Albany, the Capon Springs and at Washington. I had read them at the time in the newspapers of the day with

[1] Mr. Webster resigned the office of Secretary of State, May 9, 1843, and Hugh S. Legaré was appointed Secretary *pro tempore*. See Tyler's letter to Hugh L Legaré, May 21, 1843, in regard to Dr. Martin.

much pleasure, and I am happy to receive them in the more lasting form in which they have now reached me; and shall place them in my small library as rich gems to be studied and admired by those who are to come after me. The country has, I trust, passed the fearful crisis which threatened it, and all men concur in conceding to you an important part in effecting its deliverance. I rejoice in the addition which your exertions in the cause of the constitution and the Union have made to your fame, and trust that you may live long to enjoy the luxury of having rendered to your country and I may say to the world a great service.

Here I might conclude but for an address which is bound up in the same pamphlet with your address to the young men at Albany and is the prelude to your dinner speech on the same public occasion. I allude to the speech of Mr. Jno. C. Spencer. In portraying the difficulties which surrounded you in the negotiation of the Ashburton treaty he places in the lead of all others that you had to deal with a *weak and wayward President.*[1] I have no comment to make on an expression so

---

[1] Mr. Spencer's criticism of Mr. Tyler in connection with the Ashburton treaty is in marked contrast with his letter to Lewis K. Faulkner, and others, in 1843, published in Niles' Register, lxiii., p. 143.

"It is bare justice to the President to say that, in the negotiation of the various and some of them exceedingly complicated provisions of the recent treaty, his suggestions and advice were frequently of the most important character, and facilitated the labors of the distinguished negotiator on the part of the United States, and that to those suggestions and to the readiness with which he devoted himself to the task of assisting in the removal of difficulties, and to the constant, steady, and firm support which he rendered to the American representative, may justly be ascribed much of the success which crowned the negotiations." Mr. Webster himself expressed similar opinions. *Letters and Times of the Tylers,* II., 226.

John C. Spencer was appointed Secretary of the War, after the resignation of the Whig Cabinet in September 1841, and Mr. Tyler afterwards appointed him Secretary of the Treasury. His change of feeling to the President was due to a terrible domestic incident that soured and embittered him. His son, a midshipman in the Navy, was accused of mutiny, and was hanged by order of Captain Alexander Slidell Mackenzie, in November, 1842. President Tyler says, "When

gratuitously and unnecessarily introduced. It may be considered by others as coming with ill-grace from one whom I raised to positions which may serve to give currency to any illnatured statement he may make concerning me, but this I mean to say that his expression in one of its branches is wholly unfounded. Mr. Spencer shall be permitted to consider me weak if it so pleases him. He doubtless esteems himself fully competent to judge of other mens' abilities I take no appeal from his decision as to my own—but I do deny that any difficulty existed between you and myself or was thrown in your way by me in the negotiation of the treaty. My *waywardness* if as active as Mr. Spencer represents it was at the time and for the time lulled into complete repose. From first to last, and I may go still further and say that in all that related to the controversy with Gr. Britain, there was a coincidence of views and a coincidence of feeling existing between us. By night and by day I dreamed and thought only of a fair and an honorable adjustment of our difficulties and contributed all in my power to bring about a happy termination to the negotiation.

And now my Dear Sir: I have a request to make of you. Your speeches are destined to survive me and all of us, who have been actors in the busy drama of politics. They will be embodied in an imperishable form. I say this not to flatter

---

Capt. Mackenzie arrived & reported the case, a naval court was ordered for his trial & a thorough investigation of the whole case. There never was assembled in this country a more dignified or able naval court. Its sentence acquitted Capt. Mackenzie, & I could do nothing but approve the sentence. If it had ordered Mackenzie to be shot, I would not have interposed to save him. Spencer, then still Secretary of War, was very urgent with me to set aside the trial, & to order another for the slayer of his son. But I answered that it would be contrary to the general rule of law, that when a man had been once fairly tried, & acquited, he should be tried again upon the same charges & evidence." Quarterly XVI., 211.

Mr. Spencer who was an able and efficient officer, resigned from the Cabinet May 2, 1844, on the ostensible ground of opposition to the annexation of Texas. For Mr. Tyler's important part in the negotiation of the Ashburton Treaty, see *Letters and Times of the Tylers,* III., 205, 206. The chief credit is his, not Webster's.

you. It will be so. Your dinner speech at Albany must cohere to that of Mr. Spencer or that to yours as its prelude or exordium. I would not have his mistatement go down to posterity without an antidote. I design this to be the antidote, and as such I wish you to file it away with the pamphlet copy you yourself may retain, so that it may appear that instead of having difficulties thrown in your way by a *wayward Prcsident,* you had his full concurrence and approval and earnest co-operation in all that had relation to that important negotiation. I shall make a similar disposition of a copy of this and the pamphlet you have sent me. And having now disposed of a disagreeable matter, I beg to say that your disappointment in not meeting me in my Northern trip has been fully reciprocated by me. Besides the great pleasure of seeing you I should have had the additional one of presenting to you two other adjuncts to the boy you saw in Richmond—another boy the co-rival of his brother, and a darling girl, who is the light, next to its mother, of the whole house. Mrs. Tyler unites with me in cordial greetings to Mrs. Webster and yourself.

I am, dear Sir,

Truly and faithfully yours,

John Tyler.

Hon. Dan[l]. Webster.

LANCASTER COUNTY MARRIAGES.

A list of marriages by the REV. HENRY TOLER, in the years 1793, 1794, 1795.

1793.

July 21—David Dungan & Nancy Branhan Demeril.

1794.

March 31—Aaron Pinn & Mary Kelly Weaver.

Dec. 4—Ransdell Peirce & Ann Graham.

Dec. 5—Richard Sheardoch & Ann Pinn.

1795.

June 10—Benjamin Bowles & Charlotte Haney.

By Rev. Rawleigh Tapscott.

1795.

January 29—George Doggett & Judith Davis.
Febry. 20—Thomas Webb & Milly Boatman.
April 16—Thomas Kent & Priscilla Doggett.
March 8—William Nash & Mildred Moore.
May 21—Henry Towles, Jr., & Alice Chilton.
Oct. 15—Charles L. McTyre & Elizabeth Davenport; Benjamin Cundiff & Alley McTyre.
Nov. 19—William Goodridge & Ann Flint.
Dec. 10—James Doggett & Betsy Doggett.
Dec. 17—Edward Payne & Sally Davenport; James Jones & Winifrid Boling.

By Rev. Benjamin Bowles.

1795.

Aug. 9—David Jones & Rhoda Jones.
Aug. 11—Epaphroditus Lunsford & Chloe Yapp.
November 7—Gardiner Clarke & Judith Beane.

By Rev. John Sutton.

1796.

Feby.—William Swaine & Charlotte Leha.

A list of marriages solemnized by the Reverend Isham James in the year 1794.

Febr. 15—Joshua Spilman & Barbara Dameron; John Lawson & Mary Tunstall Digges.
April 10—William Dounton & Sally George.
April 16—Absalom Isle & Betsy Webb.
May 12—Thomas Mason & Lenna Cornelius.
June 10—Thomas Shearman & Molly Bailey.
June 13—Daniel Jones & Rachel Harris.
July 3—William Sullevant and Caty Ward.
July 7—Thomas Weaver & Eliza Lawes.
July 8—Rodham Lunsford & Sally Cox.
Sept. 1—Milton Selby & Lucy Chilton.
Sept. 27—John Dameron & Molly Brown.

A list of marriages solemnized by the REV. BRYANT PHILIPS—according to law.

June 18—Alexander Elliott & Judeth Davis.
Aug. 28—William Carpenter & Sally Bailey.
Sept. 18—Epaphroditus Robinson & Betsy Everett; William Warrick & Eleanor Garner.
Oct. 30—Peter Bush & Alice Rivers.
Dec. 4—Joseph Davis & Winifred Warrick.
Dec. 16—Reuben Bonnawell & Grace Wallace.

1795.

July 15—John D. Everett & Martha Berryman.
July 22—John Carter & Grace B. Conway.

A Register of Marriages solemnized by the REVD. ARMISTEAD SMITH, recorded according to law.

Aug. 15—William Digges & Katherine King.
Jany. 2—William Settle & Nancy Blakemore.

HUNGARS PARISH RECORDS FOR 1660-1661.

Northampton County, Virginia.

Communicated by THOMAS B. ROBERTSON,

Eastville, Va.

The following list of the births, deaths and marriages in Hungars Parish, for 1660-61, will be of interest to many of the descendants of those mentioned. The items are taken from the Records in the Clerk's office here, Book of Orders, Deeds, &c., for that date. The old Parish Register has been lost many years.

"A true account of such persons as have been baptised, married and burried in Hungars Parish from ye 25th. of March anno. 1660 unto ye 25th. of March 1661.

Persons Baptised—

Ann Whitehead daughter of John & Susanna Whitehead, Apr. ye 1st.

Lettuce Granger daughter of Nicholas & Jane Granger Apr. ye 17th.
Hanna Major daughter of Christopher & Mary Major (age 1 yr. 6mo) May ye 6th.
Eliza Whittington ye daughter of William & Eliza Whittington May ye 16th.
Ann Meridith ye daughter of George & Jane Merideth May 16th.
Samll Jones ye sonne of Samll & Mary Jones Apr. 22nd.
Issabel pettyJohn daughter of Jas & Issabel pettyJohn May 16th.
Robt. Bury ye sonne of Robt. & Lidia Bury May 20th.
Will Robinson ye sonne of John & Joan Robinson June 3d.
Mary Grey ye daughter of James & Katharine Grey June 10th.
Rachel Walley daughter of Thomas & Eliza Walley June 29th.
Richd Hill son of Robt. & Jane Hill Aug. 12th.
Ann Richards ye daughter of Michael & Ann Richards Sept. 16th.
Mary Bell daughter of Thomas & Mary Bell Sept. 16th.
Ann Long, Daughter of Daniel & Eliza Long, Sept. 16th.
Mary Cotton daughter of John & Hanna Cotton 8br 21st.
Ann Ffurs daughter of John & Mary Ffurs 9br. 18th.
Richd Elligood sonne of Thomas & Mary Elligd 9br 25th.
William Wilcocks sonne of John & Ann Willcocks Febr. 17th.
Eliza Barnaby daughtr of James & Mary Barnaby Febr. 18th.
Mary Robins daughter of Saml & Mary Robins Febr. 17th.
Eliza Quellian daugh Daniel & Lidia Quillian Mar. 24th.

Persons Married—

Gilbert Hinders & Mary Major March 25th.
William Marshall & Mary Parker May 12th.
John Evans & Joan Munes May 13th.
John Townsend & Eliza Wheatly May 20th.
Mr. William Spencer & Mrs. Eliza Whittington June 14th.
Daniel Ishan & Margaret Howell July 14th.
John Thergettle & Dorothy Wilkison Aug. 26th.
John Buddan & Barbary Hudson Aug. 29th.
Heinrich Waggaman & Winnefred Schyn Aug. 21st.

Christo[r] Stanley & Ann Turner Sept. 4th.
John Nuthall & Jane Johnson Sept. 12th.
William Starling & Margt. Edwards Sept. 20th.
Timothy Coe & Eliza Teague Sept. 29th.
Geo. Smith & Ann Ware Sept 23rd.
Thomas Foakes Stockley & Ann Waddelow Sept. 30th.
John King & Jane Bishop 8br 8th.
Hugh Kunneloe & Marian Hary 8br 14th.
Ralph Doe & Mary Custis 8br 29th.
John Savage Dorothy Jordan 9br 18th.
Robt. Hayes & Ann Draiton 9br 20th.
Richd Buckland & Charity Coulston 9br 26th.
John Goldsmith & Mary Longo 10br 13th.
William Chase Sarah Hewitt 10br 16th.
Simon Foscoat & Ann Cook Jany. 30th.
Will Bosman & Eliza Mallocks Febr. 5th.
Roger Walford & Mary Denwood Mar. 1st.
Mr. Edw. Littleton & Mrs. Francis Robins Mar. 7th.
John Mickall and Helen Cornah Mar. 24th.

Persons Burried—

Argal Smith June ye 7th.
Thomas Edwards sonne of John & Margaret Edwards June ye 23rd.
Mary Sanders daughter of James & Virlinda Sanders July 15th.
Bridget ye wife of William Bosman July 19th.
Mary daughter of Abram Vansalt July 30th.
Robert ye sonne of Robert & Lidia burry July 30th.
Richard Teague Aug. ye 6th.
Ann daughter of Gabriel & Helen Powel Aug. ye 6th.
John Hinnian Aug. 29th.
John Crew Aug. 29th.
James Boone 7br 8th.
Mary ye wife of Robt. Windey 7br 15th.
Isaac Vansalt servt Edw Smith 8br 7th.
Eliza ye wife of Adolph Johnson 8br 22nd.
Thomas Harrison 8br 28th.

Eliza daughter of Jeff & Fran Manchall Nov. 23rd.
Eliza wife of Simon Foscoat 9br 28th.
Wm. Bowen Decbr 5th.
Ann daughter of Giles & Margaret Copes Decbr 22nd.
Eliza wife of John Townsend Decbr 26th.
Mary Ther servt John Vines Jany 5th.
Francis Harrison servt Henr Armtrading Jany 10th.
Robt. Luddington Feb. 3d.
William Andrews seaman to Henry Voss (drowned) Feb. 25th.
Ann daughter of John & Barbary Winberry Mar. 24th.

True Copy,

JOHN LAWRENCE,
Clerk of Hungars Parish."

ROBINSON FAMILY.

CHRISTOPHER [1] ROBINSON, born in 1645 at Cleasby in Yorkshire, and elder brother of John Robinson, bishop of London, came to Virginia where he was member of the Council and Secretary of State. He died in 1690. He was father of Col. Christopher Robinson,[2] eldest son, naval officer of the Rappahannock River and member of the Council, of John of Urbanna, President of the Council, and Benjamin of "Moon's Mount," Essex County.

Of these CHRISTOPHER [2] married October 12, 1703, Judith, daughter of Christopher Wormeley, member of the council from Virginia, relict of William Beverley and before that of Corbin Griffin, both of the same place. He had issue: *Christopher*,[3] Judith died about 5 years of age, *John*,[3] Benjamin, Judith born about 1711, Frances, William, *Peter*.[3]

In connection with the valuable pedigree of the family, now going through the *Virginia Magazine*, the following with reference to the three brothers, Christopher, John and Peter, may be useful. The family chart in my possession appears to come from the same sources as that published in the *Virginia Magazine* XV., 445, but is fuller and differs from the latter in some particulars.

A.

CHRISTOPHER[3] ROBINSON, eldest son, lived at "Hewick," near Urbanna, Middlesex county, served for many years in the Legislature. He was born about 1705, and died July 18, 1768. His will names son Christopher, wife Sarah, daus. Mary and Betty.

Issue by first wife, Mary Berkeley, daughter of Col. Edmond Berkeley, of "Barn Elms," Middlesex County:

1. Mary,[4] died 1775 (chart).

2. Judith,[4] died 1757, married Carter Braxton, signer of the Declaration of Independence and had issue (1) Mary Robinson Braxton who married Robert Page of Hanover. They had issue Judith Page who married Brooke and had Walter Brooke (U. S. Senator from Miss.) (2) Judith, who married John White of King William, son of Rev. Alexander White, and they had Judith who married Judge William Brockenbrough, and had Sarah Jane who married Edward Colston, (*chart*). Carter Braxton married, secondly, Miss Corbin, of "Laneville," King William County, and had Carter, Corbin, John Tayloe and William Braxton. (3) Lucy,[4] dau. of Christopher and Mary Robinson, died Mch. 7, 1737 (*Register*).

Issue by second wife, Sarah Wormeley, daughter of John Wormeley, of "Rosegill," who survived her husband. Her will was dated Dec. 6, 1771, proved February 26, 1772, and names daughter Elizabeth and son Christopher.

3. Christopher,[4] eldest son, died unmarried in 1775; made his will 1775, which was proved in 1784. Leaves all his property to his sister Elizabeth.

4. Elizabeth,[4] who heired "Hewick," married on May 19, 1782, William Steptoe (*chart* and parish register) and had (1) Elizabeth who married Allen Christian. Issue: Mary married Fitzhugh, William, Elizabeth *m.* Huntington, Martha (2) Sallie Steptoe married Philip Grymes,

second William Burke, who had a daughter who married Perkins. (3) Martha married James Stamper, and then George Heale and then Boulware (4) Thomas, (5) James, (6) George (7) Walter.

B.

JOHN[3] ROBINSON (born about 1708), in the chart in the *Virginia Magazine* XV., 445-450, is represented as having only two wives, but in the chart in my possession he had three, which is certainly correct. The former account does not distinguish as to the issues, while the latter does. Then, in the *Virginia Magazine* XVII., 206, the abstract of the will of John Robinson errs in making Matthew Whiting's wife Elizabeth, sister of John Robinson, whereas she was his daughter, as shown by two certified copies of his will in the records of the old Williamsburg Chancery Court. He had a large estate and is called "Major" in various wills. He made his will in 1785, and it was proved in 1787.

Issue by first wife, Anne Reade:

1. Judith,[4] "daughter of John and Anne Robinson," born Sept. 14, 1736 (*register* and *chart*). She never married. She made her will December 8, 1805, and it was proved February 24, 1806. In it she names brothers Peter, William and Robert Robinson, "Judith Robinson daughter of my brother Robert Robinson." Her brother William, whom she made her chief legatee, was made executor.

2. Christopher,[4] "son of John and Anne Robinson," born April 2, 1738 (*register* and *chart*), died without issue, as in 1791, according to the Surveyor's Book of Gloucester County, his land on the Pianketank River was divided among his brothers and sisters and their children to-wit: "Priscilla Elliott's part, John's, William's, Peter's, Judith's, Robert's, Elizabeth Whiting's, Thomas Wyatt's orphan's part, Christopher Robinson's part, and Mary Robinson's part."

3. Elizabeth[4] (*chart*) married Matthew Whiting, Jr.,

(marriage bond March 31, 1764, John Robinson, security. QUARTERLY VII., 192.) Issue two or more children: Mary Robinson Whiting, married William Curtis on June 5, 1790, (*register*) and Matthew Whiting, Jr., named in his Aunt Mary Robinson's will (1803).

Issue by second wife Frances Yates, daughter of Rev. Bartholmew Yates, and widow of Rev. John Reade of Middlesex and King William Counties.

4. Mary[4] unmarried (*chart*). Her will, dated March 10, 1803, was proved July 4, 1803, she freed all her slaves, the males at 21 and the females at 18 years. Names niece Frances Yates Robinson, daughter of her brother John Robinson; nephew Matthew Whiting, and the other children of my late sister Whiting. Major James Ross and nephew Matthew Whiting executors.

5. William[4] Robinson, probably the "son of John Robinson and Frances his wife, born April 11, 1749" (*Register*). He married (*Family Bible*) Elizabeth Lilly, (daughter of Thomas Lilly, captain in the Virginia State Navy during the War of the Revolution, and Lucy Burwell,* his wife) on May 15, 1806, and another daughter, Lucy Burwell Lilly, married (1) Thomas E. Churchill, of Middlesex, (2) John Darby (see *Churchill Family* in QUARTERLY VIII., 50). In his will dated in Middlesex County, November, 1807, William Robinson names his wife Elizabeth, daughter Lucy Lilly (born January 1, 1807), mentions wife with child, and makes Carter B. Berkeley and wife executors; witnesses: Lucy B. Churchill, Needler Robinson, Henry Heffernan, Will Wake, Tom Stiff. His inventory shows that he had a posthumous child Judith Willantina F. Robinson, and the Bible shows that she was born March 9, 1808. She married John R. Taylor; her sister Lucy Lilly Robinson married Benjamin Temple (Meade, *Old Churches,* &c., I., 382; QUARTERLY XIII., 140); and had

* Lucy Burwell was a daughter of Carter Burwell and Lucy Ludwell Grymes. She was born October 23, 1750.

twelve children (1) Elizabeth Lilly, (2) Virginia Nelson, (3) Molly Brooke, (4) Robert Henry, (5) Charles Wellford, (6) Benjamin Brooke, (7) Judith Willantina, married Dr. J. P. Harrison, (8) John Taylor, (9) William Skyren, (10) Bernard Moore, (11) Ludwell, (12) Lucy Lilly, (the last now living in Richmond, unmarried). Elizabeth Lilly Robinson married, 2dly, Mr. Chowning of "Locust Grove."

6. Robert,[4] "son of John and Frances Robinson, was born August 29, 1750" (*register* and *chart*). He was student at William and Mary in 1780, and went away with his cousin Christopher to join the British army in New York, where he had another cousin Col. Beverley Robinson (Sabine's *Loyalists*). He had (1) Judith mentioned in the will of her aunt Judith. (2) John Robinson of Nova Scotia, born in 1786, and father of Mr. T. M. Robinson, now living in St. John, New Brunswick. (3) Other children. (See Sabine's *Loyalists.*)

7. John[4] Robinson (*chart*) married Deborah Dunlop, (daughter of Rev. William Dunlop and Deborah his wife) on April 17, 1784. He died at "Green Branch," Middlesex County (a place devised to him by his father). His will, dated Sept. 15, 1818, and recorded in Middlesex County, names son William D. Robinson, daughter Deborah E. C. Robinson, sons Benjamin F. Robinson and Christopher Robinson, wife's father William Dunlop. His daughter, Frances Yates Robinson, named in Mary Robinson's will, was probably dead at this time.

8. Catherine[4] (*chart*) married Thomas Wyatt July 2, 1785, had one child.

Issue by third wife Miss Churchill. She was probably Priscilla, daughter of Col. William Churchill, who made his will in 1782.

9. Peter[4] (*chart*) married first ————; second, in 1818 Milly Humphreys.

10. Priscilla [4] (*chart*) married ——— Elliott. From a bill in Chancery in the Williamsburg District it appears that Seaton and John Elliott were her heirs.

C.

PETER [3] ROBINSON, youngest son of Col. Christopher Robinson, was born March 1, 1718-19 (*Parish Register*), and died in 1765. He lived in the parish of St. Johns, King William County; and his will was dated January 8, 1765. He married Sarah, daughter of Alexander Lister and Lucy his wife, on August 9, 1750 (*Register*) and had issue:

(1) *Christopher*,[4] (2) *Peter*,[4] (3) Judith,[4] born Sept. 5, 1751—(*Parish Register*) (4) Sarah [4] married Oct 4, 1773, Benjamin Grymes, of Orange (*Parish Register*) (5) Lucy [4] named in his will and in the chart; married Thomas Robinson, son of her uncle Benjamin Robinson.

Of these children Christopher was undoubtedly the Christopher who was at William and Mary College in 1780 and ran away to the British in New York, where he joined the Loyal American Regiment (see Sabine's *Loyalists of the American Revolution* II., page 229). It is possible that his brother Peter emigrated with him. They are mentioned in the will of their aunt Judith Robinson in 1774. Christopher Robinson married Esther Sayre, and his son Beverley, born in 1791, was Chief Justice of Upper Canada. He was father of General C. W. Robinson, of London.

In a suit in the Chancery Court of the Williamsburg District, entitled "Grymes vs. Robinson," it is stated that Major John Robinson was the surviving executor of the will of Peter Robinson, that he was guardian of Peter Robinson's three daughters, who lived with him until 1776, that as surviving executor he had charge of all the personal and real estate of his brother Peter; and no mention is made in these papers of either Christopher or Peter the sons. This omission can only be accounted for by the death or flight of both. Under the Virginia law during the revolution the property of all

British aliens was confiscated. There is no mention of the death of either in any of the Virginia records which have come down to us, nor do their names appear in the list reported in 1782 of land holders in King William County, where their father had resided.

According to the papers in this suit their sister Lucy married Thomas Robinson, Sarah married Benjamin Grymes, and Judith was a spinster.

According to the chart in my possession Benjamin Grymes and Sarah his wife had issue (1) John R. Grymes of New Orleans (2) Dr. Peyton Grymes of Orange Co., died in 1878. (3) Elizabeth P. married Charles C. Braxton, of Chericoke, eldest son of George Braxton, of Chericoke; and their issue was Susan G. Braxton, who married Col. Richard Carrington of Richmond, Dr. William Braxton of Old Church Hanover, Hannah Braxton, Lucy Braxton, Sally Braxton, all three of whom last mentioned died unmarried and without issue.

In the will of Judith Robinson (1826), some slaves are left to her "sister Sally Grymes" and her female children, Betty P. Braxton excepted. She also mentions nieces Mary Lister Bailey and Susan Braxton and her mother Betty F. F. Braxton, as also the children of nephew Alexander Lister Robinson, and the son of John H. Robinson. She made Mr. William Armistead, and nephew Dr. Peyton Grymes executors.

Extract of a letter from Mr. Thomas Robinson, formerly president of the Western Union Telegraph Company, St. John, N. B., a grandson of Robert Robinson, King's Loyal American Regiment (who was son of John Robinson of Middlesex County, Virginia, who died in 1787) to Major General C. W. Robinson, Beverley House, Eaton Rise, Ealing, England:

[The notes to this letter are General Robinson's.]

2 WRIGHT ST., SAINT JOHN, N. B., (New Brunswick)

May 22' 1909.

Dear General Robinson:

Your letter of Sept. '17, last, was received in due course. It was, as you supposed, a surprise to me, and a very pleasant one. I would have replied at once if it had been possible for me to give any information that would assist you. I am sorry* to say that all the evidence you have given me, as well as the enquiries I have made since the receipt of your letter, only strengthens my previous opinion that your Grandfather was a son of a brother of my Great Grandfather, John R., of Middlesex Co., Virginia. My father always said that Christopher Robinson† was his father's (Robert's) first cousin. My father (John R.) must have known. Of course he was not born until 1786, after your grandfather left New Brunswick; but he was 28 years old when his father (Robert R.) died.§ He spent the winter of 1805-6 in Virginia, chiefly in Middlesex and Gloucester Counties; also, a few years later was several months in the same Counties, and in 1849, visited Virginia for the last time to settle his protracted lawsuit with the executors of his grandfather's estate.*

In 1805-6, he met all the Robinsons in that part of Virginia, and always spoke as if he knew the family genealogy thoroughly. Following is an instance: "In the summer of 1859, I was in Frederickton for the first time, and met Mr. Ludlow Robinson, grandson of Colonel

---

* He uses the expression "sorry to say" no doubt because he is aware that our tradition was that our descent was not from a brother of John R., but from a brother of Col. Beverley R., (a different branch of the family).

† Meaning Christopher Robinson, of Queen's Rangers who died in Upper Canada in 1798.

§ Robert R., died in Nova Scotia in 1814. He was father of John R., of Nova Scotia, who was father of the writer of this letter. Christopher R., Queen's Rangers left New Brunswick for Canada in 1788, I think, a little later than the writer supposes.

* That is, the estate of John Robinson, of Middlesex Co., who died in 1787. This lawsuit, I see, is referred to in Leigh's Virginia Reports, Vol. I, p. 719; Vol. IX, p. 119, and possibly elsewhere also. Mr. Robinson says that in the end his father settled for the sum sued for, without interest after 60 years litigation. The sum which John Robinson, who died in 1787, left to his son, Robert, was, I believe, from his Will, £1,200 sterling.

Beverley R. He said: "Partelow tells me that you are a relative of mine; do you know what the relationship is?" I answered that I knew it was too distant for anybody except a Scotchman to claim. He then asked if I was related to your father. I answered "somewhat nearer I believe; but still far off." As he seemed anxious to know, I promised to ask my father, which I did shortly afterwards. My father answered about as follows: "The Upper Canada Robinsons are one degree nearer to me than the New Brunswick family. Colonel Beverley R. was my *grandfather's* first cousin. Christopher Robinson, was my *father's* first cousin. This was the last conversation I had with my father on this subject; but as I said before, he always spoke of C. R. as his father's cousin, and with him, cousin meant first cousin.

When my father first visited Virginia,‡ his father's elder half-brothers, Peter and John, were living; his full brother, William, had recently died, leaving a widow and two infant daughters. Mrs. Temple§ was one of the daughters; and as she moved to near Fredericksburg early in life, would not know much about her father's cousins. My father spent part of his time with my uncle William's widow, but most of it with his uncles, Peter and Jack. I gathered from his conversation that these uncles were free-livers, spending much of their time in hunting and shooting; and it is likely that the property left them by their father was soon dissipated, as it seemed to have passed completely out of the possession of their descendants when my father went to Virginia in 1849. The only part remaining was that held by Mrs. Temple and her sister, and this was lost in the Civil War. Mrs. Temple wrote to me after the war, that the Yankees had burn't her house, with all it's contents, cut down all her timber, and freed her servants. As her sons were not farmers, she would have to sell the land for almost nothing.

I do not think that Colonel Beverley Robinson's family knew much about their Virginia relations. I cannot learn that any of his descendants here ever heard of them since they came to New Brunswick. I can understand that Sir S. Frederick and Sir William could easily be mistaken.* We would not probably know anything of our Virginia

‡ This would be in the winter of 1805-6.

§ In 1875, I corresponded with Mrs. Temple. She could not give much definite information as to the special object of my inquiries.

* This means in their statement that Christopher Robinson, "Queens Rangers," was the son of one of Col. Beverley Robinson's brothers. This statement makes his father and Col. Beverley Robinson to be brothers. The descent from a brother of John R., who died in 1787, which Mr. Thos. Robinson here considers the correct one would make Christopher Robinson's grandfather and Col. Beverley R's father brothers.

connections, if it had not been for my father's unfortunate law-suit, which cost him in money and time double what he recovered.

Here is some slight chance to get some proof. Did you ever think of examining the records of the Virginia legislature? I have only lately remembered that I heard both my grandmother and father say that Robert Robinson was proscribed and banished by Act of the Virginia legislature; that his attainder was subsequently reversed, or promised to be, if he would return to the State, but that he refused to return.

You may have looked up the records of the Virginia House of Burgesses? If not, it may be worth while to have it done. It is possible your grandfather might have been outlawed, and of course his address or some designation would be given to afford some trace. He was much younger than Robert R., and as a minor in 1781, he could not hold property, the confiscation of which was the chief object of these attainders. However, I dont think my grandfather had any property to confiscate.

Yours faithfully,

T. M. ROBINSON.

ROBINSON AND POTTER FAMILY CONNECTIONS.

The Virginia immigrants came over in families more or less related. Thus, besides Colonel Christopher Robinson, we find in the records of Middlesex County, Virginia, the names of Richard Robinson, Cuthbert Potter and John Vaus, who were clearly his kinspeople; all three held a leading position in the County, being large landholders, and members of the Court of Magistrates. Richard Robinson gave land to the church and in 1693 his house was used for a Court House at a rent of 4000 pds. of tobacco per annum. By consulting the pedigree in *Virginia Historical Magazine*, Vol. XV., p. 445, it will be seen that John Robinson of Cleasby, Yorkshire, father of John Robinson, bishop of London, and of Col. Christopher Robinson of Virginia, Secretary of State for that Colony, had a brother named Richard Robinson, a Turkey merchant, who died unmarried. He had also a brother William who had two sons. One died in London and the other went to Virginia the Richard Robinson of Virginia was the son of William Robinson.

It is also seen from the Robinson chart that the mother of Col. Christopher Robinson was Elizabeth, daughter of Christopher Potter of Cleasby, Yorkshire.

In 1656 Richard Robinson is mentioned as a "headright" of Cuthbert Potter; he married Anne ———, widow of Abraham Moone, and then of John Curtis. By his marriage with Anne, he had (1) Anne born November 26, 1670, married George Haselwood son of Captain John Haselwood of London, Mariner; and she married secondly about 1693 William Tomlin. Her daughter Anne Haselwood married William Stanard, May 3, 1708, and died December 5, 1712. (2) Richard born March 12, 1674-5 (Middlesex County Records and Parish Register).

Richard Robinson, Sr., died December 19, 1693; his wife Anne Robinson, died October 5, 1688.

Col. Cuthbert Potter was also a prominent citizen of Middlesex County. In 1690 he was sent by Governor Nicholson on a mission to New England, where he was badly treated. An abstract of his report is in the "British Calendar of State Papers 1689-1692." He died in 1691.

John Vause, another kinsman, had also prominent dealings in Middlesex County. He married twice at least. One of them appears to have been a daughter of Bertram Obert; James Curtis married Elizabeth another daughter of Betram Obert.

A later representative of the Potter family was Dr. Henry Potter of Middlesex County, a prominent physician, a man of high culture and refinement. His tombstone may still be seen at Christ Church, Middlesex County. He married Hannah, daughter of Hon. John Grymes, Esq., of Middlesex, who died November 2, 1748. He had two daughters mentioned in the will of their grandfather John Grymes, Hannah and Susannah. Miss Susannah, or "Sukey" Potter was a belle in her day, and was one of Jefferson's fair acquaintances when a collegian at William and Mary, and she figures in his early letters. (See Ford, *Writing of Jefferson,* Vol. I., 352, 356.)

ABSTRACTS FROM THE RECORDS OF MIDDLESEX COUNTY.

Deed of Richard Robinson and Anne his wife, dated 1686 to their daughter Anne, wife of George Haselwood and her heirs, and for want of such heirs to Richard Robinson her brother and his heirs, and for want of such heirs to John Curtis and his heirs, and for want of such heirs to Anne Robinson, daughter of Christopher and Agatha Robinson. Witnesses: Robert Smith, Oswald Cary, John Waltham and William Daniel.

Deed of Richard Robinson and Anne his wife, dated 1684, to Richard their son and Anne their daughter, and their heirs, for want of such heirs to John Curtis of Northumberland County, son of the said Anne wife of said Richard and his heirs, then for want of heirs, to Anne Robinson, daughter of Christopher and Agatha Robinson, for land obtained from Abraham Moone, former husband of said Anne Robinson. Witnesses: Robert Beverley, William Churchill.

Virginia, Decemb. ye 16, an° 1693; receipt of William Tomlin and Anne, his wife, admx. of George Haselwood, late of Middlesex County in Virginia, deced, to Mr. John Haselwood, as attorney of Elizabeth Haselwood, relict admix. of Capt. John Haselwood, late of the City of London, decd. Recorded 13th November, 1694.

Arthur Spicer's draft, in favor of Philip Harwood, on Madam Eliz^a Haselwood at her house in Chambers St., Goodman Fields, London.

Will of Richard Robinson, dated Aug. 16, 1689; proved Feb. 5, 1693; names two sisters Anne and Margaret; daughter Anne Haselwood; grandsons John and George Haselwood; son Richard Robinson; friends Hon. Ralph Wormeley, Esq., Doctor Walter Whitaker, Mr. Edward Thomas, and "loving kinsman Christopher Robinson" ma le overseers of will. Witnesses: Robert Boodle, George Anderton, X his mark, James Lewis X his mark.

Deed between Col. Cuthbert Potter of Middlesex County, Virginia, and Sir Edward Wood of the City of Westminster in England, which recites that Col. Potter confessed judgment of 1000£ in the General Court, 25th of September, 1670, to Thomas Robson, which judgment was executed on one-half of a certain plantation of Potter's lying in Middlesex County, Va., but Robson held the judgment only in trust for Sir Edward Wood, therefore the deed conveys the other half of said plantation to Sir Edward Wood forever. (Sir Edward Wood was gentleman usher to Queen Catherine and married Clara Robinson, sister of Col Christopher Robinson of Virginia.)

In 1701 Henry Wood, son and heir of Sir Edward Wood, late of the City of Westminster in the kingdom of England, by his attorney William Churchill of Middlesex County, Virginia, gent. conveys to Edwin Thacker Potter's old plantation. Witnesses: Robert Curtis, St.

Leger Landon, Will Humphreys, Jr., Matt Kemp, Will Oatlan.

Will of John Shephard, dated October 3d, 1682, proved Feb. 7, 1697-8; "By the mercy of Christ Jesus and ye calling of ye church of England minister," son John, daughters Frances and Clara Shephard, wife Frances, loving brother living at Parham Hatcheton in the County of Suffolk in England, daughter Frances Mackrory. (She married William Scarbrough in 1691), godson Richard Robinson and god daughter Anne Robinson; kinsman Mr. Richard Robinson, brother Christopher Robinson and friend Alexander Smith appointed overseers and to each of them a mourning ring. (Rev. John Shephard married Frances Robinson, sister of Christopher Robinson. He died June 30, 1683).

Will of Cuthbert Potter, dated 20 June, 1691, "late of the colony of Virginia and now at present arrived and living on the Island of Barbadoes, Gent, being suddenly seized and taken with bodily sickness, etc." Leaves his property to Hon Ralph Wormeley and Christopher Robinson, frees his servant Richard Baldwin; leaves him 5£ and his silver tobacco box, wearing apparel, etc. Three gold rings to his friends Mr. Wiseman, Mr. Skuller and his wife. He went to Barbadoes, he says, "in his own sloop, the *Hopewell.*" Witnesses: John Paramson, Barnaby Browne, William Hersman, John McCulloch. Sealed with a fine impression of wax of the Potter coat-of-arms.

Will of Mr. John Vaus, dated Feb. 22, 1679-80, proved March 1, 1679-80. Name wife Elizabeth; son John and daughter Diana and Catherine Vaus. Executors: wife Elizabeth, son John, Ralph Wormeley, Esq., "loving brother John Sheppard." Witnesses: Cuthbert Potter and Christopher Robinson. (John Vaus departed this life February 26, 1679-80, and was buried in Mr. Christopher Robinson's orchard. His wife was buried December 25, 1679-80.)

Will of John Vaus, dated Sept. 8, 1691: Names daughter Agatha, wife Elizabeth, nephews and neices, William Daniel the son of my sister Constance (by William Daniel), and James Curtis, Averilla Curtis and Chichley Curtis, children of my loving sister Elizabeth Curtis (by James Curtis), nephew Christopher Robinson. Witnesses: Christopher Robinson, Abraham Weekes, (This John Vaus married Elizabeth Weeks widow of Francis Weeks who was the son of Abraham Weeks of Middlesex County), and they had Agatha born February 28, 1688. In 1688 John Vaus succeeded Christopher Robinson as clerk of Middlesex County. What was their exact relationship?)

Richard Robinson, nearest kinsman to Mr. John Payne, deceased, Sept. 28, 1659. (Lancaster Co. Records).

Deeds between Christopher Robinson, gentleman, and Agatha, his wife one of the daughters of Bartram Obert and James Curtis and Elizabeth his wife another daughter of said Bartram Obert, dated 31 March, 1683-4.

ROANE FAMILY.

In the parish church of Chaldon, Surrey County, England, is a stone in the middle aisle which bears this inscription: "Here lieth the body of Mr. Thomas Roane, of this Parish, gentleman, who departed this life the 28th of July, 1689, aged 39 years. Arms: 3 bucks horned trippant, impaling 3 gloves. On another stone: "Here lieth the body Mrs. Elizabeth, wife of Robert Roane, citteson of London and daughter of Henry Bartelott, Esq., who departed this life the 10th of August, 1701, in the 30th year of her age." Arms same as before. *Virginia Magazine* XVI., 69.

1. ROBERT ROANE of Chaldon, Surrey, Gent: died before May 5, 1676, when his will was proved and left five children: (2) *Charles,* whom he mentions as in Virginia; (3) Thomas, (4) Susan, married Gatton; (5) Elizabeth married Askew; (6) Lucy unmarried at time of making will May 10, 1672; (7) Daughter married Davy.

An abstract of the will of Robert Roane is as follows: *Virginia Magazine* XVI., 66-68.

ROBERT ROANE of Chaldon, Surrey, Gent. Will 10 May 1672; proved 5 May, 1676. Laus Anima mea Dominum. To son Charles Roane and to his child or children, if any, £600, and discharge him and them of all sums paid for his vse since his transport to Virginia. To his Wife Mrs. Frances Roane £20. To his Sonn Robert Roane £100 if his father by lyving and Robert likewise. To son Thomas Roane and heirs, and in default to son Charles, my mannor of Tollesworth in Parishes of Chaldon and Mestham, Surrey, and Moiety of Plate, goods etc at Tollesworth, and all Books, Bedding, etc in my Chambers at Whitehall, and ditto of Lynnen and Plate there, also the Fee Farme rent of the Rectory of Oundle, County Northampton, lately purchased of his Maties trustees. To Mrs. Elizabeth Worseley Lease of Mannor of Freyrens, paying £30 yearly to my daughter Susan Gatton and Grandchildren Robert and Sarah Davy, also rents, etc. To daughter Elizabeth Askew £150, two flaxen sheets, and keeping of my fine large holland sheete for her own and her sisters use. To daughter Susan Gatton £20 and £10 yearly out of Freyrens. To daughter Lucy Roane, all land in Northshowbery and Southshowbery, Essex,

with Rectory, glebe, and tithes of Northshowbery and all Quitrents and Fee farme rents in Essex, also £300 on day of marriage. If she marry without consent of my executors, and of my cousin Thos. Roane, Esq. the lands to be vested in my executors, and the proceeds to be distributed among my grandchildren then living. To my grandchildren. viz: Sarah Davy £200 also £10 yearly from manor of Freyrens; to Robert Davy £100 and £10 from said manor; to Thomas and Robert Askew, sons of my daughter Elizabeth, £150; and to each other grandchild £40. To nephew Thomas Roane of Southwark his two children and his neice Jane Turner £5 apeece. To Robert and Katherine Daniel, children of nephew John Daniels £5 apeece. To Anne Burtock £5, Robert Meares £5, John Mears £5, and my kindred in and about Fodringhay in Northamptonshire, £5. To Elizabeth Burtock, wife of Thomas Carr, £6 yearly. To poor of Fodringhay 40s. yearly for ever out of the Rectory of Oundle on 1st of January. To Marguret Gibson £5 out of said reading. To poore of Chaldon 20s. yearly forever out of mannor of Tollesworth. To minister of Chaldon 40s., and to the Clerks 10s. To Kinswoman Mrs. Mary May £5. To Patience and Richard, children of Richard Bowman, and to his sister Katherin Judrey, £5 each. To Kinsman Thomas Roane of Wellingborow, Esquire, my little clock in my chamber at Whitehall, and to his daughter the China bason was my aunt Piggotts. To my daughter in law Mrs. Hall and Mrs. Upington a gold ring each. To Mrs. Anne Ginse, £10. To Patience Upington my silver watch. To goddaughter Mary Upington my silver candlestick. To friends Mr. George Perryer, Mr. Roger Lambert, and Mr. Thomas Landon the Elder, £10 each. To be buried at Chaldon. Residue five parts to my five children aforesaid and a sixth part divided betwixt my grandchildren Sarah and Robert Davy. Executors: George Perryer, Roger Lambert and Thomas Landon aforesaid. Witnesses: William Harinston, Robert Mawer, Clem: Oxenbridg, Oliver Hering. Memorandum. Codicil dated 15 November 1675. Witnesses: Jacob Bosworth, Daniel Alford, servants to Geo. Perryer, ser Confirms the grant to Elizabeth Burlock, wife of Thomas Carr, of £6. To poor of Foddinghay 40s. yearly forever. To Margaret Gibson £5 a year; also the lease of Freyrens to Mrs. Elizabeth Worsley. If daughter Lucy Roane marry without consent, Rectory of North Showberry to be sold for grandchildren. 2d Codicil dated 26 February 1675-6. Witnesses: Thomas Roane, Henry Tillingham, James Short. All sums of money remaining of my estate after payment of legacies to my daughters Elizabeth Askew and Susan Gatton and grandchildren Robert and Sarah Davy. ROBERT ROANE. Sarah Davy, to have the sheets at Tolesworth and in the cheste in Thames Streete, rest to daughters Elizabeth Askew and daughter Gatton except fine holland sheete to Elizabeth Worsley and two shells to Elizabeth Buttock.

2. CHARLES [2] ROANE resided in Petsworth Parish, Gloucester County, Va., and obtained numerous grants of land. He married Frances ———, and had (8) Robert named in Robert Roane's will above, probably (9) *William*. In 1726 William Roane, of "Petsworth Parish, Gloucester County," made a deed, which is recorded in Essex County, and he shortly afterwards removed there.

Probably the following Roanes mentioned in the records of Middlesex were children of son of Charles Roane (8) Robert Roane: (a) Alexander Roane married Mary Hipkins Nov. 8, 1736; (b) Charles Roane and Anne his wife who had Mary born Aug. 20, 1743, and son born Nov. 4, 1748; Sarah born March 17, 1746, and Charles born Oct. 3, 1752; (c) William Roane of "Gloucester County" and Sarah Daniell, marriage bond Feb. 15, 1754, William Upshaw of Essex security; and in the register of Middlesex is the birth of their daughter Frances born April 3, 1735. There is a family of Roanes still resident in Gloucester County.

(9) WILLIAM [3] ROANE, probably son of Charles [2] Roane, married Sarah Upshur. This is the statement current in the family, and it appears correct. He lived in Essex County, and according to his grandson Spencer Roane represented that County in the Assembly, though the year is not known. He had issue (10) Thomas, (11) William, (12) John, (13) Mary, (14) Sarah, (15) Lucy. His will was dated November 17, 1757, and was proved December 20, 1757; his wife Sarah Roane's will was dated 11th day of August 1760, and was proved December 15th, 1760.

WILL OF WILLIAM ROANE

In the name of God amen. I William Roane of the Parish of South Farham of the County of Essex Gent. being sick and weak of body but of perfect sense and memory Blessed be Almighty God therefore Calling to mind the uncertainty of this Transitory Life do make this my Last Will and Testament in manner following: First, I will that my body be buried in a decent manner at the discretion of my Executors hereafter named trusting through the merits of my blessed Savior Christ for the salvation of my soul and for the disposal of my

wordly Estate with which it hath pleased God to Bless me, I give devise and bequeath the same as followeth; viz: Imprimis, I give and bequeath to my son Thomas Roane the tract of Land I purchased of Philip Vass whereon he now lives also the tract where his Quarter now is on Piscatoway formerly Doctor Philip Jones' and also the Ordinary Tract with their and each of their appurtenances to him and his heirs forever. Item, I give and bequeath to my son William Roane all that tract of land that was John Haul's, also the Tract I purchased of Thos. Gatewood joining it and all the Tract I purchased of Henry Crittenden with this and each of their appurtenances to him and his heirs forever. Item, I give and bequeath to my son John Roane all my Land in Culpepper County; viz: one tract containing by estimation Thirteen Hundred and Fifty Acres Purchased of Joseph Bloodworth, also the Tract I Purchased of Charles Cavenaugh and also a Tract adjoining Cavenaugh's Lately Purchased of John Williams with this and each of their appurtenances to him and his heirs forever. Item, I give to my Daughter Mary Ritchie as much money as will make her fortune eight Hundred pounds current immediately Inclusive of what she hath already received being upwards of Six Hundred pounds *as per* my Ledger and at my wifes decease I give her two hundred pounds more. Item, I give to my Daughter Sarah Roane Eight hundred pounds Current Money to be paid her at the age of Eighteen or day of Marriage and two hundred pounds more at my wife's decease. Item, I give to my daughter Lucy Roane Eight hundred pounds Current Money to be paid her at the age of eighteen or day of Marriage and two hundred pounds more at my wife's decease. Item, I lend my loving wife, Sarah Roane, all the Tract of Land I live on with the piece I Bought of Robert Johnson and my Water Grist Mill with all their appurtenances during her natural life and after her decease I give it to be equally divided between my three sons Thomas, William and John and their Heirs forever. Item, I also Lend my said wife Twenty negroes (her choice) and all my household furniture (Except half the Plate) all the stock that belongs and is on this my dwelling Plantation during her Life, and after her decease to be equally divided amongst all my children and their heirs forever. Item, I give and bequeath all the Residue of my estate to be equally divided amongst my three sons, Thomas, William and John and their heirs forever. Item, My Will and devise is that if either of my children die before they attain to age or marriage that then their part or parts be equally divided amongst all my children and their heirs forever (Turn over). Item, I do hereby appoint my three sons, Thomas, William and John Executors of this my Last Will and Testament.

In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand this 17th day of November Anno. Dom. 1757.

W. ROANE.

Signed, Published and Declared by the said William Roane as and for his Last Will and Testament in presence of us,

JNO. CLEMENTS,
JAMES UPSHAW,
JOHN UPSHAW.

At a Court held for Essex County at Tapp[a] the 20th day of December 1757, This Last Will and Testament of William Roane Gent. Dec'd. was presented into Court by the exors. named who made Oath thereto according to law the same being proved by the oaths of John Upshaw and James Upshaw two of the witnesses thereto is ordered to be recorded and on motion of the said Executors and their performing what the law requires a certificate is Granted them for obtaining a Probate thereof in due form.

Teste: JOHN LEE, JUN.,
De. Clerk.

WILL OF SARAH ROANE

In the name of God Amen. I Sarah Roane of the County of Essex being sick and weak of body but of sound and perfect sense and memory and considering the uncertainty of thy Transitory life do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament in manner and form following, (viz:) Imprimis, I give to my daughters Sarah and Lucy each of them Two Gold Rings. Item, I give to my Grand Daughter Margaret Ritchie one stone Ring of about fifteen shillings sterling price and to my neice Hannah Hopkins I give ten pounds currency. Item, I give and bequeath all the residue of my estate to be equally divided between my three sons Thomas, William and John Roane to defray the expense of bringing up and educating their two sisters and I do Constitute and appoint them my said three sons Executors of this my Last Will and Testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 11th day of August 1760.

SARAH ROANE, [L. S.]

Sealed, signed and acknowledged to be her last Will and Testament in presence of

JOHN UPSHAW,
DANIEL SULLIVAN, JR.,

Probated Essex Co., 15 Dec., 1760. Will Book No. 11, p. 287.

The following is a pedigree of the descendants of William and Sarah Roane, prepared by the late Samuel F. Harwood Roane, of Newington, King and Queen Co., Va., who was born in 1817 and was their great-grandson:

William Roane (Will Recorded Essex Co. Ct. 20 Dec. 1757—Will Book No. 11 p. 29.) married Sarah Upshaw. Their children were:

1. Thomas Roane married Mary Ann Hipkins and had 15 children.
2. John Roane married 1st Miss Jones, 2nd Betsy Taylor.
3. Wm. Roane married Judith C. Ball.
4. Molly Roane married Archibald Ritchie.
5. Sarah Roane married Dr. John Brockenbrough.
6. Lucy Roane married 1st Richard Barnes and had one son.

I.

The children of Thomas Roane and Mary Ann Hipkins were:

1. Sarah Roane married Hugh Campbell.
2. Margaret Roane married 1st Christopher Harwood; 2nd John Garnet.
3. Alice Roane married Sterling Ruffin, father of Chief Justice Thomas Ruffin of North Carolina—a distinguished jurist and great man.
4. Molly Roane died unmarried.
5. Mary Ann Roane died of Consumption—age 19.
6. Rebecca Roane, married Richard Barnes, her cousin.
7. Patsy Hipkins Roane.
8. Lucy Roane married Edwin Upshaw.
9. Catherine Roane married Archibald Ruffin.
10. ———— Roane.
11. Archibald Roane, died in infancy.
12. William Roane killed himself, age 24 years.
13. Thomas Roane, of Middlesex Co., Va., married Mary Ann Nelson.
14. Samuel Roane, died in his 30th year, unmarried.

II.

John Roane, son of William Roane and Sarah Upshaw, married 1st Miss Jones, of Middlesex Co., Va. Their children were:

1. John Roane who was for a long time in U. S. Congress.
2. Molly Roane, who married James Ruffin, brother of Sterling.

John Roane married 2nd Betsy Taylor and had no children.

III.

William Roane (Will Recorded in Essex Co. Ct. 19 Dec. 1785—Will Book No. 13, p. 532) son of William Roane and Sarah Upshaw married Judith (?) Ball. Their children were:

1. Thomas Roane.
2. Spencer Roane, the late distinguished Judge of the Court of Appeals.
3. Judith Roane married Mr. Proudfit.
4. Sarah Roane married Mr. Dykes, of Norfolk, Va. She was the

mother of Mrs. Wm. Bernard and grandmother of Mrs. Judge Meredith, of Richmond, Va.

IV.

Molly Roane married Archibald Ritchie, and had:

1. Archibald Ritchie (who as Colonel, defended the shores of Va. in 1814. See Richmond Enquirer, Oct. 3rd, 1844, Vol. 41, page 2, No. 3.)
2. Margaret Ritchie married Wm. Ruffin.
3. Janet Ritchie married Dr. Buckner.
4. William Ritchie died young.
5. Capt. John Ritchie, who was killed in Battle at Lundy's Lane, 1814. (See file of Richmond Enquirer, Oct. 3rd, 1844, in State Library, at Richmond, Va.)
6. Thomas Ritchie, the renowned and venerable editor (Father Ritchie, of the Richmond Enquirer) married Miss Foushee, of Richmond, Va.
7. Mollie Ritchie married 1st Mr. Hopper, 2nd Robert Brooke, formerly Governor of Va., and father of the former Auctioneer in Richmond, Va.

V.

Sarah Roane married Dr. John Brockenbrough, Tappahannock, Va. Their children were:

1. Dr. John Brockenbrough married Mrs. Gabriella Randolph.
2. Thomas Brockenbrough never married.
3. Sarah R. Brockenbrough married Mr. Cox.
4. Judge Wm. Brockenbrough, born July, 1779, married Judith White.
5. Arthur Spicer Brockenbrough born 1780, married Lucy Gray.
6. Dr. Austin Brockenbrough married 1st Lettice Lee Fauntleroy, 2nd Francis Blake.

VI.

Lucy Roane married 1st Richard Barnes. Had one son:

1. Richard Barnes married Rebecca Roane, his cousin.

Lucy Roane Barnes married 2nd Col. Moore Fauntleroy Brockenbrough, brother of Dr. John Brockenbrough, who married her sister Sarah Roane. Their children were:

1. Wm. Fauntleroy Brockenbrough—supposed to be lost at sea.
2. Mary Brockenbrough, born 1777, married Andrew Lackie.
3. Moore Fauntleroy Brockenbrough, born 1789, married 1st Sarah Ball, married 2nd Sarah Waller Smith.
4. Lucy Roane Brockenbrough married Vincent Shackleford.
5. Elizabeth Roane Brockenbrough, born 1781, married Philemon Woodward.

(To be Continued.)

THE CARLYLE FAMILY.

By RICHARD HENRY SPENCER.

The Carlyle family is one of the most ancient families of Great Britain, and one which the Conqueror found in England at the Conquest, and a branch of which later was ennobled in Scotland. Its origin was either British or Saxon, but which seems uncertain, most probably British.

While the name is clearly derived from the town or district of Carlisle, Lugavellum of the Romans, abbreviated by the Britons to Luel or Leol, to which was added the prefix Caer or "City"—hence Caerleol, Karleol, Cairleil, Carleil, Carlile, Carlisle and Carlyle—with which the earliest recorded members of the family were connected, there is no trustworthy evidence of their origin or their history before the year 1092, when King William Rufus overran Cumberland, adding it to his English Kingdom, and being impressed with its importance as a Border military station, began to rebuild and fortify the town of Caerleol (Carlisle) which had been destroyed by the Danes in 875, and which was among the most ancient of the twenty-eight cities enumerated in history, the name of the city, as well as of the family, being variously spelt at different periods.

At or very shortly after the Conquest, the district wherein the town of Caerleol (Carlisle) arose, and the manor of Cumquinton, in the parish of Wetherhal, Cumberland, and other lands, including Kirkhampton his principal seat, belonged to one HILDREDUS DE CAERLEOL or DE KARLEOL, a cognomen which descended to his posterity. He is said to have married a granddaughter of Waltheof the Earl of Northumberland. About 1130, "he is found rendering accounts to the Exchequer of the King's manor at Carlisle, dealing also with the wall of the city." He afterwards acquired Newbie-on-the-Moor. He was succeeded by his son.

ODARD DE KARLEOL, who is stated to have been in the Castle

of Carlisle in the service of King Henry II., when the fortress was besieged by King William of Scotland in 1174. He died before 1177, leaving at least two sons, Robert and Richard.

Robert de Karleol, the eldest son, born about 1139, held the lands of Locardebi or Lockerbie, in Annandale, Dumfriesshire, Scotland, given to him by Robert de Brus (Bruce) First Lord of Annandale, and they seem to have proved a cause of dispute between the grantor's son William de Brus, Second Lord of Annandale and Adam de Karleol, the son of Robert. Robert de Karleol is a witness to various writs by William de Brus after 1194. He died in 1209, leaving two sons Adam and Odard.

Among the Norman followers of the Conqueror Robert de Brus, Jardine and Comyn were transferred to the north of England. Here these Norman settlers intermarried with the Maxwells, Murrays, Carleils, Kirkpatricks, Irvings, Grahams, Carrutherses and other families in Drumfriesshire, all of whom played a distinguished part in Scottish public life.

Miss C. L. Johnstone in her "Historical Families of Dumfriesshire," 1889, says: "Early in the 12th century Robert de Brus held the title of the Lord of the valley of Annan or Annandale. Between 1170 and 1180, William de Brus, Second Lord of Annandale, granted lands to Adam de Caerleol, a native of the soil, who held property in Cumberland and the lands of Newbie in Dumfriesshire; and in a charter of Henry de Graeme, ancestor of the Duke of Montrose, the district of Dumfriesshire from Wamphray, inclusive to Greistna (Gretna) Greene, is granted about 1180, to David Carleil, Lord of Torthorwald. "Twa score Carvels (Carleils) frae Cockpool" are mentioned in an ancient ballad called "The Bedsman of Nithsdale," as having followed Richard I. of England to the Crusades."

ADAM DE KARLEOL, before mentioned, son of Robert, grandson of Odard, and great grandson of Hildred, is the first of his family whose connection with Scotland is clearly established, though his father Robert as has already been stated held lands there, and he was the first to possess Kinmount,

Annandale, which descended to his family for several generations. His wife's name was Matilda. He died about 1213, leaving at least one son.

EUDO DE CAERLEOL, who is on record in 1217, when his lands in Norfolk were ordered to be bestowed upon Robert de Vaux, because Eudo was with the King of Scots, Alexander II. then at variance with the young King of England, Henry III., who seized the lands, but the confiscation was probably not carried out. He died about 1230, leaving at least one son.

WILLIAM DE CAERLEOL, who is first named in a writ in favor of Robert de Brus, Third Lord of Annandale, the date of which cannot be later than 1245, and he was then a Knight. Sometime before 1252, as Sir William, son of Eudo de Caerleol, he granted to a relative Adam, son of Roger de Carliol, an annual rent from lands in Cumquinton, which Adam afterwards bestowed upon the monks of Wetherhal. He left two sons William and Eudo.

WILLIAM DE CAIRLEIL, the eldest son, known as William the younger and whose wife's name was Sapientia, died before 25 June 1274, and apparently in the lifetime of his father, leaving a son.

WILLIAM DE CAIRLEIL, who succeeded his grandfather and who attained the honor of Knighthood before January, 1304, received from Robert Bruce, Earl of Carrick and Lord of Annandale, afterwards King Robert I. of Scotland, an addition to his estate of Kinmount. His wife was Lady Margaret Bruce, daughter of the Earl of Carrick and sister of King Robert I. as is evident from a grant of that monarch, "Guilielmus Cairlyle militi, et Margaretae spousae suae, sorosi nostrae carissima, de terris de Crumanstoun." He died before March 1329. Their issue so far as known were two sons William and John. The latter is said to have been at the battle of Halidon Hill, but he died before 1347, leaving a son William, of whom later.

WILLIAM CAIRLEIL, the eldest son, is first referred to about 1325, as son and heir of Sir William Cairleil and as "the King's sister's son," and who then obtained from Bruce his

uncle a charter of the lands of Coulyn and Roucan, parts of the barony of Torthorwald. He died before 24 July 1347, leaving his nephew WILLIAM, son of his brother John above mentioned his heir, who then succeeded to the estates of his uncle William, and also to the estates of his father John, and all the possessions of the family appear to have become vested in him. He left a son

SIR JOHN CARLEIL, who is first named in 1398, as one of the conservators of a truce with England. He died about 1433, leaving at least one son

SIR WILLIAM CARLEIL of Torthorwald,[1] who is named as son and heir of Sir John Carleil in a safe conduct of date 3 Nov. 1413, when he passed into England as one of several hostages for payment of a debt due by the Countess of Douglas to an English Knight. While his father was still alive he, as William Carleil of Torthorwald entered into an agreement, sealed at Dumfries 8 Mar. 1432/33, with Sir Thomas Kirkpatrick (a Celtic family found very early in Scottish history) of Closeburn,[2] to marry William's son John to Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Thomas.

---

[1] An old stone, with a cross-flory, and a sword, is built in Torthorwald Church, and another stone like the half of a pillar (the other half being lost) has been found in the church-yard, with two shields, one with the Cairleil cross alone; the other quarterings of Carleil and Bruce, and also the inscription Mariota de Cair . . . and the date CCCLI or CCCCLI, (1351 or 1451). She was evidently married to a Bruce, a bond additional to that of the marriage of Sir William to the sister of King Robert I. (*The Patrician,* edited by John Burke, London, 1847.)

[2] Closeburn was granted to Ivon Kirkpatrick in 1232, by Alexander ii, of Scotland. His great grandson Roger Kirkpatrick was the Knight who, in order to make sure, dispatched the wounded Comyn, at the back of the High Altar in the Gray Friar's Church, Dumfries, in 1305, who had been stabbed by Robert Bruce, who charged him with treachery revealing to Edward I. the designs he had formed for the emancipation of his country from the English yoke. Duncan Kirkpatrick, the father of this Roger, had in 1280, married the daughter of Sir David Carleil of Torthorwald. The castle contained an oubliette, a vaulted dungeon with only one aperture in the top for the admission of air, in which persons were confined who were condemned to perpetual punishment.

This Sir William Carleil was one of the numerous train of Knights, Esquires and Archers who attended the Princess Margaret, daughter of James I. of Scotland, when she was married to the Dauphin, afterwards Louis XI. 24 June 1436. He married Elizabeth daughter of Sir Duncan Kirkpatrick, who died before 1436. He resided at Torthorwald Castle, now the wreck of a massive keep of the fourteenth century, four miles east of Dumfries, on a ridge between Nithsdale and Annandale. It is situated on a mound surrounded by ancient earthworks.

> "Lo! on that mound in days of feudal pride,
> Thy towering castle frown'd above the tide."

In 1443, he is styled Lord of Kinmount and Torthorwald. He had a royal charter to himself and his heirs of the lands of Lymekilns, in Dumfriesshire, 25 April 1452.

He gave a bell to the town of Dumfries, bearing the inscription in old Latin, *"Guillielmus de Carleil, Dom de Torthorwald, me sicut fecit fieri, in hororem, Sancti Michaelis. Ann. Dom. MCCCCXLIII.* This bell, a few years ago, was still in existence. He died before 10 Nov. 1463, leaving issue:

1. John, who succeeded.
2. Adam, to whom was left Brydekirk.
3. James, Rector of Kirkpatrick.
4. Margaret, m. Sir. William Douglas, Third Marquis of Queensberry.

Sir John Carleil, the eldest son, was created First Lord Carleil in 1473, whence the Lords Carleil, who a few generations later became extinct, the estates through the female line passing to the descendants of Sir James Douglas of Parkhead, who was stabbed to death on the street in Edinburgh, 14 July 1608, and on the death of whose son in 1638, the estates went into the possession of the Earl of Queensberry, and the title which was a male fee and did not pass with the land, long ago supposed to be with the Lymekilns branch of the family, has ever since been dormant.

ADAM CARLEIL, the second son, described by John First Lord Carleil in his will as "brother german," died before 1500. He had issue:

ADAM CARLEIL referred to in his uncle's will in Nov. 1500, and by his cousin Elizabeth Carleil in 1516. He had a charter of Brydekirk from his uncle John First Lord Carleil on 7 May 1499. It was apparently he who, under Papal dispensation 17 Feb. 1502, married Ellen, daughter of Simon Carruthers of Mouswald, and his wife Catherine Carleil.

(The Scots Peerage, by Sir James Balfour Paul, Lord Lyon King of Arms. 1905.)

Alexander Carleil, their eldest son, Laird of Brydekirk, was living in 1547. "He and his son Adam, the young Laird, are mentioned by Sir Thomas Carleton, the English Warden of the Borders in that year, as the only gentry in Annandale, Liddlesdale and Nithsdale who had never submitted to the English, except Douglas of Drumlanrig."

Of this family was Christopher Carleil b. 1551, one of the great soldiers and navigators during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, who took an active interest in American discoveries as early as 1574. He was Lieutenant General of the land forces, in the expedition in 1585-86, to the West Indies, Sir Francis Drake being at the head of the fleet. He married Mary, daughter of Sir Francis Walsingham, the Queen's celebrated minister, her sister Francis being successively the wife of Sir Philip Sidney, of the brilliant and unfortunate Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex and of the brave soldier Richard de Burgh, Fourth Earl of Clanricarde.

ADAM CARLEIL, the young Laird of Brydekirk, before mentioned, had a charter of Lymekilns from Michael Fourth Lord Carleil, 24 Nov. 1559. He died in 1581, leaving three sons:

1. Alexander Carlile, d. 1593. s. p.

2. Herbert Carlile of Brydekirk b. 1558, d. Sept. 1632, m. Margaret Cunningham.

3. Edward Carlile [3] of Lymekilns, m. Grace Irving of Bon-

[3] Register of the Privy Council of Scotland, 1522-1599.

shaw. He died before 1615, leaving two sons Adam and Alexander of Munaythwaite who was living in 1637.

Adam Carlile, of Lymekilns, the eldest son, m. Mary daughter of Francis Carruthers of Dormont. He died before 1637, leaving three sons, Edward of Limekilns, Adam and John.

Adam Carlile, b. 1634, d. 31 Jan. 1685, Bailee of Annan, m. Janet Muirhead, d. 25 Feb. 1671. Their children were John, James, Agnes and Isabelle. James Carlile, Bailee of Annan, d. 1710, m. Margaret Spence, from whom are descended Rev. Wilson Carlile,[4] Prebendary of St. Paul's, London, of Torthorwald, County Surrey, England, and his brother Colonel Edward Hildred Carlile, and from the marriage of a granddaughter of James, Isabella Carlile, with her cousin Robert Carlyle of Ecclefechan, was descended Thomas Carlyle, the historian, who married Jane Welsh and d. s. p. Agnes Carlile m. John Johnstone, and Isabelle Carlile m. Edward Johnstone, d. 1683, ancestors of the Johnstones of Galabank and Fulford Hall, and from whom are descended Miss Catherine L. Johnstone, the authoress, and her brothers the late Sir James Johnstone and Admiral Charles Johnstone.

Edward Carlile of Limekilns, the eldest son, m. Margaret, daughter of Gavin Young, minister of Ruthwell, and d. before 1699. There is, or was in 1893, the remains of a touching monument to Margaret Young, wife of the above Edward, in the picturesque churchyard of Ruthwell, between Annan and Dumfries.

"Heir lyes Margaret Young, spous to Edward Carlile of Limekilns, deceased May 24, 1665, of her age 48."

---

[4] Founder of the Church Army, who is doing such noble work among the poor of London, and in whom the simple life has an earnest and faithful follower.

> "The sweetest lives are those to duty wed,
> Whose deeds both great and small,
> Are close knit strands of an unbroken thread,
> Where love ennobles all,
> The world may sound no trumpets, ring no bells,
> The Book of Life the shining record tells."

"Of virtue, wit, grace, truth, love, pietie,
This woman in her tyme had store,
On small means she upheld great honestie,
And in reward has endless glore."

It is said that the Carlile property, which once comprised half of Annandale, was reduced in 1700, to a few isolated estates.

ADAM CARLILE, of Limekilns, son of Edward and Margaret (Young) Carlile, b. 1638, m. Grizel Menzies of Culteraws. Their children were:

1. John Carlyle of Limekilns.

2. Alexander Carlyle, who emigrated to Maryland prior to 1712, and settled in Somerset County, where he became a large landholder and m. 6 Sept. 1720, Margaret McAlister of that county. He died in 1726, leaving two sons, Adam, b. 13 Feb. 1724/5, and John, b. 28 Feb. 1725/6, d. s. p. Adam Carlyle, the eldest son, after the death of his mother in 1733, went to Scotland to live and m. Philadelphia Carruthers of Holmains. On the death of his uncle John in 1742, he inherited Limekilns, but was ruined by the failure of a bank at Ayr in 1766. His six sons, Alexander, Adam, John, James, George and William d. s. p.

3. Mary Carlyle, m. David Murray of Beltriding.

4. Margaret Carlyle, m. Christopher Carruthers of Hardrigg.

5. WILLIAM CARLYLE, a surgeon of Carlisle, England, b. 1685, d. 3 July 1744, m. 1714, Rachel Murray of Murraythwaite, Dumfriesshire, "a family which had been settled at and possessors of Murraythwaite since about the year 1421, and derive paternally from the ancient family of Cockpool, from whom the Murrays, Earls of Annandale, now extinct, were descended." They had issue two sons, George and John.

George Carlyle, the eldest son, of Carlisle, England, b. 1715, d. 1784, m. Dorothy, dau. of John Dacre Appleby. Their son, Rev. Joseph Dacre Carlyle, B. D.,[5] b. 1759, d. 1804, was

[5] Rev. Joseph Dacre Carlyle, B. D., on 6 Feb., 1798, was served as heir to Michael Fourth Lord Carleil, to the dormant baronage, as a

Dr. William Carlyle, 1685–1744.

Rachel (Murray) Carlyle, 1692-1752.

Chancellor of Carlisle and Professor of Arabic in the University of Cambridge, England. He m. Margaret Kerr of Fifeshire. Their children were, George Carlyle, b. 1787, d. 1798, and Eleanor Carlyle, m. Lieut. Colonel Henry Dundas Maclean of the British Army.

John Carlyle, second son of Dr. William and Rachel (Murray) Carlyle, b. 6 Feb. 1720, came to Amreica about 1740, and settled first at Dumfries, Virginia, but as early as 1744, he was a merchant at Belhaven, a small settlement that had grown up around a tobacco warehouse on the bluff that then overlooked the Potomac River, and which was in 1748, incorporated into a town and subsequently called Alexandria. He was one of the incorporators and a member of the first board of trustees of the town, where he built in 1752, the historic "Carlyle House," which was occupied in April, 1755. by General Edward Braddock, as his headquarters. On 26 Jan. 1754, he was appointed by Lieutenant Governor Robert Dinwiddie of Virginia, Major and Commissary of the Virginia forces and subsequently took an active part in the French and Indian wars, and in the campaign which resulted in the defeat of General Braddock, at the battle of the Monongahela, 9 July 1755.

In 1748, he married Sarah Fairfax, second dau. of Hon.

---

member of the Limekilns branch of the family, the male descent still claiming the ancient barony. Hymn 354, in the Hymnal of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, was written by him. In 1796, he published "Specimens of Arabian Poetry From The Earliest Times To The Extinction Of The Khaliphat With Some Account Of The Authors," a copy of which he sent to his first cousin, Mrs. William Herbert, of Alexandria, Virginia.

Among his translations from the Arabic, were the following verses addressed by Abou Ben Adhem, a hermit of Syria, alike distinguished for his talents and piety, to the Khaliph Haroun Al-Rashid, around whom centers the tales of the Arabian Nights, and "the witchery of Oriental Romance has cast an adventurous glow," whom he met as the Commander of the faithful was going on a pilgrimage to Mecca, accompanied by a magnificent train, as a reproach for his ostentatious devotion.

William[6] and Sarah (Walker) Fairfax, b. 1728, d. 22 Jan. 1761. Their children were: Sarah Carlyle, who married William Herbert, of Alexandria, Va., a native of Ireland, and Anne Fairfax Carlyle, who married Henry Whiting of Gloucester County, Va., a lineal descendant of Colonel Henry Whiting, Treasurer of Virginia, 1692-93.

In 1758, Colonel Carlyle was appointed Royal Collector of South Potomac, succeeding his father-in-law, Hon. William

---

"Religions gems can ne'er adorn,
The flimsy robe by pleasure worn,
Its feeble texture soon would tear,
And give those jewels to the air.

Thrice happy they who seek th' abode,
Of peace and pleasure, in their God!
Who spurn the world, its joys despise,
And grasp at bliss beyond the skies."

It was about Ben Adhem that Leigh Hunt wrote this brilliant gem, in which the whole law and gospel is so beautifully expressed:

"Abou Ben Adhem (may his tribe increase!)
Awoke one night from a deep dream of peace,
And saw, within the moonlight in his room,
Making it rich, and like a lily in bloom,
An angel writing in a book of gold:—
Exceeding peace had made Ben Adhem bold,
And to the presence in the room he said,
"What writest thou?" The vision rais'd its head,
And with a look made of all sweet accord,
Answer'd "The names of those who love the Lord."
"And is mine one?" said Abou. "Nay, not so,"
Replied the angel. Abou spoke more low,
But cheerly still; and said, "I pray thee then,
Write me as one that loves his fellow-men."

The angel wrote and vanished. The next night
It came again with a great wakening light,
And show'd the names whom love of God had bless'd,
And lo! Ben Adhem's name led all the rest."

[6] Hon William Fairfax was the grandson of Henry Fourth Lord Fairfax of Denton, Yorkshire, England, bap. at Newton Kyne 30 Oct., 1691. At the age of twenty he entered the army and served in Spain under his cousin Col. Martin Bladen, brother of Hon. William Bladen, of Annapolis, Maryland, (from whom the Dulanys of Virginia and the Lowndes of Maryland are descended) the grandsons of Sir William

Fairfax. He was a member of the Committee of Safety during the War of the Revolution. For nearly twenty-five years he was engaged in the mercantile and shipping business in Alexandria, Va., with Mr. John Dalton, under the partnership name of Carlyle & Dalton, which was only dissolved by the death of Mr. Dalton in 1777.

After the death of his first wife, Colonel Carlyle married Sybil West, dau. of Hugh and Sybil (Harrison) West, by whom he had an only son, George William Carlyle, b. 1765,

---

Fairfax, of Steeton, Yorkshire, who was the son of Sir Philip Fairfax and his wife Frances Sheffield, daughter of the Earl of Mulgrave. Sir William Fairfax commanded a regiment at the battle of Edgehill, the storming of Leeds, the battles of Adwalton and Nantwick, a brigade at Marston Moor, and fell covered with wounds at the siege of Montgomery Castle, Wales, 19 Sept., 1644. His daughter Isabella married Nathaniel Bladen, barrister of Hemsworth, Yorkshire.

Hon William Fairfax was appointed Chief Justice of the Bahama Islands, where he married 27 Mar. 1723, Sarah, dau. of Major Thomas Walker of the British Army. He removed in 1725, to Salem, Mass., where he held a lucrative office, until he was appointed a few years later, by his first cousin Thomas Sixth Lord Fairfax, agent for his extensive estate comprising the Northern Neck of Virginia, which he had inherited from his mother Katherine, dau. of Lord Culpeper, Governor of Virginia. He resided at Belvoir on the Potomac River, a little below Mount Vernon, and died there 3 Sept., 1757. He was a gentleman of great worth and respectability, held the office of Lieutenant of the County of Fairfax, and Collector of Customs of the South Potomac. He was a member and President of the Council of Virginia in 1743.

His children by his first wife who died in Salem, Mass., 18 Jan., 1731, were George William Fairfax—who d. s. p., Thomas Fairfax—who was killed in a sea fight with the French Squadron in 1746; Anne Fairfax, who married first, Lawrence Washington, of Mount Vernon, and secondly, Col. George Lee, uncle of the grandfather of Gen. Robert E. Lee, and Sarah Fairfax, who married Colonel John Carlyle, of Alexandria, Va.

Hon. William Fairfax, after the death of his first wife, married secondly, Deborah, daughter of Francis and Deborah (Gedney) Clarke, of Salem, Mass. Their children were Brian, afterwards Eighth Lord Fairfax, William Henry Fairfax, who fell with Wolfe at the siege of Quebec in 1759, and Hannah Fairfax, who married Warner Washington, first cousin of General George Washington and son of Col. John and Catherine (Whiting) Washington.

who was killed in the battle of Eutaw Springs, South Carolina, 8 Sept. 1781. Had he lived he would have been entitled to the dormant baronage as Lord Carlyle, after the death of his first cousin Rev. Joseph Dacre Carlyle, B. D., the oriental scholar, who died without male issue in 1804.

Colonel Carlyle died in October 1780, leaving a handsome estate. In his will, dated 12 July 1780, he left to his grandson John Carlyle Herbert, a very large tract of land in Virginia. To his other grandson Carlyle Fairfax Whiting, the infant son of his deceased daughter, Anne Fairfax Whiting, he left several hundred acres of land in Berkeley County Virginia, known as "Limekilns," and to his only surviving daughter, Sarah, wife of William Herbert, besides other property, he left the historic "Carlyle House," replete with the memories of Washington, of the ill-starred Braddock, of the gay and gallant Orme, of Keppel, of Franklin, of Richard Henry Lee, of Dinwiddie, and other Colonial Governors, whose walls may soon totter and fall, when one more link between the past and the present will forever vanish away.

(To be Continued.)

HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL NOTES.

STATUTES OF THE COLLEGE. A copy of the first printed "Charter and Statutes" of the College, 1736, by William Parks, Williamsburg, Va., is to be found in the Congressional Library at Washington. A copy of "the Charter, Transfer and Statutes," printed by William Hunter at Williamsburg, Va., 1758, 164 pp., is to be found in the Lenox Library, New York. (It is inscribed "the gift of William Dawson to William Davies.") A copy of the charter and laws of the University of William and Mary, 1792, printed by Augustine Davis, of Richmond is in the State Library in that City. A copy of "The Officers, Statutes and Charter," printed in 1817 at Philadelphia, 61 pages; and one of the "Regulations of the College," 1837, printed at Petersburg, are in the Library of William and Mary College.

There are also in the Library editions of the General Catalogue, 1855, 1859, 1870, 1874.

GOODRICH. Deed of Joseph Goodrich of James City Co., Gent., and Francelia his wife, recorded in Essex County, 22 Jany. 1685.

COL. JOHN WALKER'S DAUGHTERS. Deed of Edwin Conway and Sarah his wife, and Robert Tomlin and Easter his wife, daughters of Col. John Walker, deceased, dated 1686. Recorded in Essex County.

DEAD OF THE CHAPEL. "By the way, the floor of the Chapel of William and Mary was taken up some weeks ago and the vaults examined. Three attorney generals of Virginia were seen resting side by side—Sir John Randolph, his eldest son Peyton, the president of the First Congress, and his brother John, who went over with Dunmore. I gave the article to my young friend William Lamb of the *Argus* who will publish it in a day or two. It is called "The Dead of the Chapel of William & Mary." Perhaps you may like it; perhaps not, unless you indulge in the mood of the article at times yourself. I will try and have a copy sent to you." *Hugh Blair Grigsby to Henry S. Randall,* July 25, 1859.

RAVENSCROFT. The first of this family in Virginia appears to have been Thomas Ravenscroft, who probably came from Salem, Massachusetts, as seems implied in a letter of Col. William Byrd (*Virginia Mag. of Hist. and Biog.,* X., 242). He was a resident first of James City and then of Prince George County, Virginia. In 1722 he was sheriff of James City County, and in 1736 the Virginia Gazette announced the death of Col. Thomas Ravenscroft, "lately burgess for Prince George County." There is a deed dated January 23, 1772, and recorded in Brunswick County between "John Ravenscroft, late of the town of Petersburg, son and heir of John Ravenscroft, late of Prince George County, deceased by Bolling Stark, his attorney, and Edward Walker and Robert Walker[1] of the County of Dinwiddie and Daniel Fisher of the County of Brunswick,

[1] Elizabeth Stark, daughter of Dr. William Stark and sister of Bolling Stark, married Robert Walker, of Dinwiddie.

for 200 acres on the south side of Meherrin River, patented Sept. 26, 1734, by Thomas Ravenscroft, grandfather of said John." John Ravenscroft was a physician, who married Rebecca Stark, daughter of Dr. William Stark and Mary Bolling, daughter of Robert and Anne (Meriwether) Bolling. He had issue Jane, who married Daniel Fisher and Dr. John of "Maycock's" who studied medicine at the University of Edinburgh in 1770 and married Lillias Miller, daughter of Hugh Miller and Jane Bolling, sister of Mary Bolling above mentioned. Jane and Mary Bolling were children of Robert Bolling, Jr., and Anne Meriwether his wife; and Robert Bolling was a son of Col. Robert Bolling, by his second wife Anne Stith. John Stark Ravenscroft, first Bishop of North Carolina, was a son of Dr. John Ravenscroft and Lilias Miller, his wife, and studied law at William and Mary under George Wythe. He was born, in 1772, and married Anne, the daughter of Lewis Burwell, of Mecklenburg. He left no children. His mother, Lilias Miller, married 2dly. Patrick Stewart, or Borness and Cairnsmore in Galloway, Scotland. AUTHORITIES: William and Mary QUARTERLY IV., 270, V. 275; *Virginia Mag.* IX., 242; X. 323. Letter of Mr. G. M. Stewart, half-nephew of Right Rev. John Stark Ravenscroft.

There was a Capt. John Ravenscroft who secured a pass to Virginia in 1651. In his will in 1693 Capt. James Powell, of Isle of Wight County, mentions Capt. Ravenscroft's sloop. In 1692 a son of Captain George Ravenscroft died in Williamsburg, and, in 1695, Dyonisia Ravenscroft, a widow, married Mr. Thomas Hadley, general superintendent in the erection of the College buildings.

BOOK REVIEWS.

Virginia's Attitude Toward Slavery and Secession. By Beverley B. Munford. Publishers: Longmans, Green and Company, 91 and 93 Fifth Avenue, New York. London, Bombay and Calcutta.

This work from the pen of an alumnus of William and Mary College is as creditable to the heart as it is to the mind of the talented author. It is an evidence at once of love for his native state and a zealous search after historic truth. The author wastes no unnecessary words, uses no irritating or provoking language, but sober, earnest, eminently frank and fair, he proceeds in a steady flow from the beginning of his book to the end. There are three great points which Mr. Munford makes plain. The first is that Virginia contributed more to the making, expansion and consolidation of the Union than any other State, or probably than all the other States. The second is that her action in different crises, especially in the crisis of secession, was dictated by the dire necessity of choosing between alternatives not of her making. Thus Virginia did not secede because of the triumph of a sectional party in the North, or the election of Lincoln, but because President Lincoln himself placed before her the alternative of fighting the North or fighting the South. In making war upon Virginia and invading her soil, the government abandoned the principle of its own establishment, that "government was based on the consent of the governed"—a principle by which the American colonies justified their resistance to Great Britain. To say that, in addition to the wishes of the colonies, it required success in arms to make the Revolution right is no more than saying that might is right; and if this was all that the men of '76 intended, it did not require a formal state paper like the Declaration of Independence to set out the doctrine. "To the Virginians of 1861," says Mr. Munford, "it was an anachronism to talk in America, after the Declaration of Independence and the war with Great Britain about the right of self-government, in three millions of people, as being dependent upon force." Was it possible for *any* enlightened government in modern times to deny statehood to eight millions of people, when it was accorded to the little South American powers and even to the small negro republics of Hayti and San Domingo?

Who began the war? Mr. Munford shows that five out of seven of Lincoln's cabinet were of the opinion as expressed to the President, that sending arms and provisions to Fort Sumter would inaugurate a civil war; and if this was the view of his own chosen advisers, could the

Southern people be blamed for considering the expedition an attack, and repelling it. Mr. Munford shows that it was a play for position on the part of Lincoln, since having made up his mind to use force, he wished to fire the Northern heart by bringing about what might be deemed in the North an insult to the flag. Was this dignified or worthy conduct?

This excellent book ought to have an extended sale; and in hope that it will pass through many editions, I venture to make a few suggestions: To render the work as complete as possible, some account should be given of the remarkable crusade against slavery of Bishop Coke, one of the two first Methodist Bishops in the South. His appeal to the conscience of the slaveholders in Virginia, among whom he went freely and boldly, was attended in 1787, by numerous petitions against slavery. Then the position of Virginia during the nullification days, when the complaint of the South turned on the tariff might be showed up to advantage in connection with her attitude in 1861. There were similar efforts at intervention and a similar position taken as to the coercion of states.

In one particular I think Mr. Munford is at cross purposes with himself. He devotes much space to showing the difficulties of emancipation in the Southern states, but tells, too, of the small proportion of slaveholders in Virginia and in the army, seeming thereby to suggest that these and their families were the only people interested in slavery. But if this were true, why should the difficulties in regard to emancipation have been so insurmountable?

The position is simply untenable, for in making an estimate of those who were interested in slavery an account would have to be taken of creditors and all having expectations, which in the opinion of Mr. D. W. Mitchell, would swell the number to "three fourths or more of the native population." QUARTERLY, II., 277. To illustrate, there are over 100,000 people in the city of Richmond, very few of whom own farm or farm stock of any kind, but is it not true that the inhabitants of Richmond are all more or less dependent upon the agricultural conditions of the State at large?

Against the idea that Virginia fought for slavery, a more telling argument may be found in the sentiments of the secessionists and Unionists in the convention. The former chiefly belonged to the Democratic party. They owned few slaves and their action was placed upon the question of honor in resenting alien dictation and upon the danger of delay. The latter class were chiefly composed of Whigs, who constituted as a rule, the great slaveholders. The leaders of these almost without exception (Baldwin, Summers, Carlile, etc.) considered slavery "a social, political and economical blessing," which would be much safer in the Union than out of it.

The Other Side of the Money Question. By James A. Fulton, Secretary of the American Monetary League, Hutchinson and Broadbent, McKeesport, Penn., 1908.

Facts and Falsehoods Concerning the War in the South, 1861-1865. By George Edmunds. Publishers: A. R. Taylor & Co., Memphis, Tennessee.

According to this book, the North has found itself in a bad shape for a hero of the late war. They first tried John Brown, and the Union army marched to the tune of "John Brown's body lies mouldering in the Grave," etc. But the murderous character of this old border ruffian caused them to abandon him. Then they took up Abraham Lincoln, but if half what his biographers Herndon and Lamon tell of him, as cited in this work, is true, they will have to give him up also, one of these days. It may be admitted that Lincoln was a man of ability and much shrewdness, but a moral hero, like Washington and Lee, hardly!

William Fitzhugh Gordon, A Virginian of the Old School: His Life, Times and Contemporaries (1787-1858). By Armistead C. Gordon, author of "Robin Aroon," "The Ivory Gate," etc. New York and Washington, The Neale Publishing Company, 1909. Price, $3.00.

This is an exceedingly valuable contribution to the general history of the country, and to that of Virginia, in particular. The view taken of political history is remarkably correct, and the book is especially valuable because of its sketches of prominent Virginians and of interesting scenes in Virginia. General Gordon's connection with the Sub-Treasury as its author must always make him an interesting character. He was a states' rights man, and like John C. Calhoun and John Tyler, adhered to the states' rights doctrines irrespective of party names. He was not a man that could be carried along by any clique who might get possession of the party reins. Thus Gordon, in 1825, was a supporter of William H. Crawford, and when that gentleman was stricken by paralysis, he turned his support to Andrew Jackson. When Andrew Jackson, as President, proved a nationalist, he withdrew his connection with the Democratic party, and in 1833 joined the coalition known as the Whig party. After five years he rejoined the Democratic party, because of his suspicions of the National Republican element of the Whig party, which subsequent events justified. The author, who is a grandson of this eminent statesman, is himself a representative Virginian. As rector of the University of Virginia and as chairman of the State Library Board, as a poet of graceful verse, as a successful writer of novels, and a virile political and economic essayist, he reflects honor not only on a family conspicuous for talent but on a state which has his utmost affection.

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY, Founded 1791, Proceedings October, 1908-June, 1909. Volume XLII.

This volume has many interesting articles, among which may be reckoned Mr. C. F. Adams' account of Lincoln's First Inauguration, the Letters of James Monroe to John Taylor, and the letters of George Bancroft to Martin Van Buren. Mr. Monroe's letters are worthy of his high character, but Mr. Bancroft's letters are flippant and undignified and exhibit the sentiments and maneuverings of the small politician of the Albany Regency stripe.

THE GENTRY FAMILY IN AMERICA, 1676 to 1909, Including notes on the following families related to the Gentrys: Claiborne, Harris, Hawkins, Robinson, Smith, Wyatt, Sharp, Faulkerson, Butler, Bush, Blythe, Pabody, Noble, Haggard and Tindale. By Richard Gentry, Ph. B., M. S. The Grafton Press, New York.

Among the historical sketches contained in this book is a valuable one of Hon. Meredith Poindexter Gentry, by Alexander H. Stephens. The book contains 406 pages and is handsomely illustrated with 44 full pictures, half-tone illustrations, mostly pictures of members of the family. To secure a copy of the work, send a money order or bank draft for $5.25 to Richard Gentry, 2600 Troost Avenue, Kansas City, Mo. Avenue, Kansas City, Missouri.

JUST ISSUED

294 Pages Octavo
Price, $3.00

The Cradle of the Republic

Jamestown and James River

1908

BY LYON GARDINER TYLER, LL.D.
President of William and Mary College

Second Edition, Rewritten, Enlarged and Copiously Illustrated

Sent to any place in the United States free of postage

CONTENTS

I. New Foundland and Roanoke. II. Colonies of the London and Plymouth Companies. III. The Indians along James River. IV. The Island of Jamestown. V. The English at Jamestown. VI. The Fort. VII. The Church. VIII. The Block House. IX. The Glass House. X. The Governor's House. XI. The State House. XII. Social Conditions. XIII. Political Conditions. XIV. Origin and History of Places along James River.

¶ A detailed history of Jamestown Island and accounts of the origin of the other James River settlements—Hampton, Newport News, Martin's Hundred, Brandon, Westover, Shirley, Curls, &c. The beginnings of English civilization upon the American continent.

Address LYON G. TYLER,
Williamsburg, Va.

Just Issued *285 Pages Octavo Price $2.50*

WILLIAMSBURG

THE OLD COLONIAL CAPITAL

Copiously Illustrated

BY LYON GARDINER TYLER, LL. D.

President of William and Mary College

AS Jamestown and the James river settlements were the beginnings of English civilization upon the American continent, Williamsburg, which succeeded Jamestown as the capital of Virginia, was the CRADLE of the AMERICAN REVOLUTION. Here, in the old capitol at the east end of Duke of Gloucester street, were passed the resolutions against the stamp act, the resolutions for the committees of correspondence, and the resolutions calling on Congress to declare the American colonies free and independent States. Here is William and Mary College, where Jefferson, Marshall, Monroe, the Randolphs, Dabney Carr and a host of other great men studied. Here was the first American theatre and the first hospital for the insane. *Here was concentrated all the glory of Colonial Virginia.* This work is the first serious effort to give a detailed account of this ancient town, which may be described as *a very small place with a very great story.*

Sent to any place in the United States for $2.50, free of postage, by

LYON G. TYLER, Williamsburg, Virginia

XVIII., No. 4. April, 1910

William and Mary

College Quarterly

Historical · Magazine.

Editor: Lyon G. Tyler, M. A., L L. D.,
President of William and Mary College.
William and Mary College, Williamsburg, Va.

Copy of this Number, $1.00. $3.00 Per Year
[Entered as second-class matter at the Post Office in Williamsburg.]

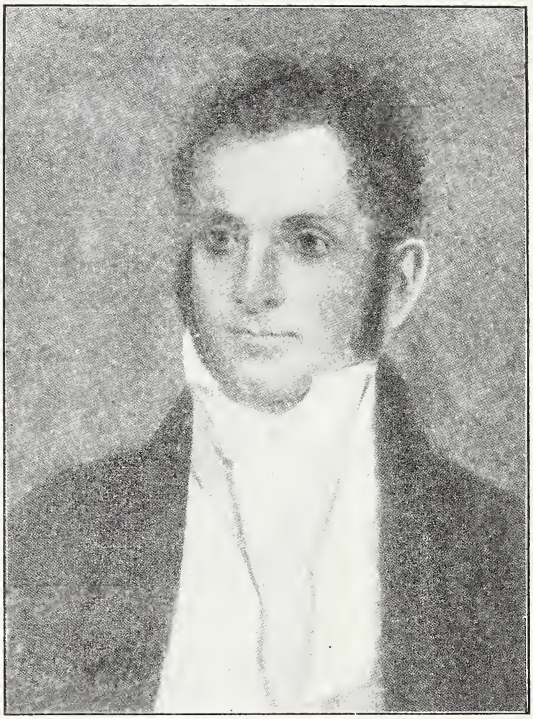
William and Mary College

Quarterly Historical Magazine.

VOL. XVIII. APRIL, 1910. NO. 4

CONTENTS.

Copper Money in the Colony of Virginia,..... 219
Election of St. George Tucker, as Professor of Law,..... 220
The Meaning of Whig Party,..... 220
Mr. Wise's Speech in 1843,..... 222
Curious Coins, ... 231
The Ship Captain and Select Men,..... 232
Silver Spoons at Sabine Hall,..... 234
Lowry Genealogy, ... 234
Carter Genealogy, ... 235
Ruffin Family, ... 251
Roane Family, ... 258
The Carlyle Family, ... 278
Walker and Wray Families,..... 289
Virginia Genealogies, ... 291
Queries, ... 292
Book Reviews, ... 294



SPENCER ROANE, Born 1762, Died 1822.

William and Mary College
Quarterly Historical Magazine.

Vol. XVIII. APRIL, 1910. No. 4.

COPPER MONEY IN THE COLONY OF VIRGINIA.

An act of Assembly in November, 1769, authorized the Treasurer, Robert Carter Nicholas ,to buy £2,500 Sterling worth of Copper Money, "should his Majesty be graciously pleased to permit it to be brought in." By another act in February, 1772, the amount was reduced to £1,000. The following from the *Va. Gazette* gives the actual time of the introduction of the coin—the Virginia half-penny:

Treasury Office, February 27, 1775.

Observing, from a Royal Proclamation, published in the last *Gazette,* that his Majesty hath been graciously Pleased to authorize the Currency of Copper Money throughout this Colony, agreeable to the Terms of an Act of our General Assembly, I do hereby give Notice that such Copper Money is now ready to be issued in Exchange, either for Gold, Silver, or any of the Treasury Notes. Those who have Demands, Properly Authenticated, may receive what Proportion they please in Copper, but are not obliged to take more than 2s 6 in any sum above twenty Shillings, and not more than 1s. in any Sum under twenty Shillings.————Constant Attendance will be given at this office, every Day in the Week, except Sunday, from eight to one o'Clock.

I must again call upon all such Inspectors, Clerks, and other Collectors, as have not settled their Accounts, and paid their respective Balances due to the Treasury. If they fail doing it longer than the next meeting of Merchants, in April, they may be assured that I shall prefer regular Complaints, before the Proper Authority, against every Delinquent, and

that I shall, moreover, without fail, publish Lists of all Defaulters, in the public Gazettes.

THIS MAY BE RELIED ON.

R. C. NICHOLAS, Treasurer.

ELECTION OF ST. GEORGE TUCKER, AS PROFESSOR OF LAW.

The following was found lately among the papers of Judge St. George Tucker:

At a Convocation of the Visitors and Governors of William and Mary College held at the Council Chamber, within the said College, the Eighth day of March, 1790.

The Rector laid before the Convocation the Resignation of George Wythe, esquire, as Professor of Law and Police, whereupon Resolved, that St. George Tucker, esquire, be appointed to the said Professorship and that he be allowed for the same at the rate of One hundred and twenty pounds per annum.

FRANCIS CORBIN, Rector. A Copy

Memorandum, Williamsburg, March 8, 1700: Teste.
The above named St. George Tucker took Will Russell, Cl.
the oath required to be taken as a professor
of Law and Police in the presence of us,

FRANCIS CORBIN, Rector.
PHILIP L. GRYMES, Visitor.

THE MEANING OF WHIG PARTY.

"An explanation of this term of party nomenclature at that time and for several years after in America politics may not be improper in this connection. It was first applied to those who opposed with great earnestness what they held to be the dan-

gerous doctrines of the centralizing principles embodied in General Jackson's proclamation against nullification in South Carolina in 1832, and other kindred acts and measures of General Jackson's second administration, which were deemed abuses of executive power and dangerous to constitutional liberty if not arrested, particularly his act of the removal of the public deposits from the Bank of the United States. Mr. Webster in the Senate defended the proclamation with great ability, but, on the other acts and measures of General Jackson referred to, he united with Mr. Clay and Mr. Calhoun in opposing what they charged to be dangerous encroachments of power by the Executive Department of the government. This was the basis and nucleus of a combined opposition to the administration throughout the country. It was the first time that the great trio, Clay, Calhoun and Webster, had ever acted in political concert and harmony, and it was at this time that the old Revolutionary name of Whig was revived and applied to this combination. It is said the name was first given by Mr. Calhoun, but soon was adopted by the elements of opposition throughout the Union.

"Mr. Meredith Poindexter Gentry was brought up in the school of Jeffersonian Democracy, but in that branch which was then known by the name of the State Rights or Strict Construction Party, and subsequently by the almost universal denomination of 'Whig,' as stated."

(Alexander H. Stephens in his sketch of Meredith Poindexter Gentry, printed in Gentry Family by Richard Gentry, Kansas City, Missouri.)

"It is true that a common party designation (Whig) was applied to the opposition in the aggregate, . . . but it is no less true that it was universally known that it consisted of two distinct parties, dissimilar in principle and policy except in relation to the object for which they had united: the National Republican party and the portion of the State Rights party which had separated from the administration on the ground that it had departed from the true principle of the original party." (Calhoun, *Works* III., 271.)

MR. WISE'S SPEECH IN 1843.

The following published letter giving an account of a speech of Henry A. Wise, in 1843, is evidently a faithful report, as it appears in Hambleton's *Henry A. Wise, with a history of the Political Compaign in Virginia in* 1855. It corroborates strongly the story told in Wise's *Seven Decades of the Union.*

Northumberland, April 4, 1843.

To the Editor of the *Enquirer*:

Dear Sir:

Yesterday was a great day in old Northumberland. Mr. Wise was here, and the high character he brought with him, acquired in Congress, and from the hustings, drew out an unusually large concourse of persons. I had often heard of his powers before the people; but his efforts on this occasion exceeded my most extravagant calculations. He enchained the attention of his audience, for about four hours, in a speech characterized for ability, eloquence, and the most withering sarcasm.

He commenced by giving us a history of his political career, begun about ten years ago in the Congress of the United States, and showed conclusively, that so far as the great principles which at present agitate the country, the Bank, the Tariff, Internal Improvement, Distribution, and Abolition are concerned, he has not changed one jot or title. The evidence he adduced was irresistible. No candid and unprejudiced mind could have listened to him and not been convinced. He stated, (what I have no doubt was the fact,) that John Tyler was nominated at Harrisburg, because of his States Rights Republican Whig principles, and that there was in that Convention a union of National Republicans and State Rights Whigs,[1] for a common object, (with the understanding that

1. *He stated * * * there was in that Convention (at Harrisburg)* a union of National Republicans and State-rights whigs. See *"Letters and Times of the Tylers"* I., 567-633; II., 1-3; III., 51-57; *"Parties and Patronage in the United States,"* 54-78.

the states rights doctrines were to be carried out, if, they succeeded,) and that object, the defeat of Mr. Van Buren, to whose re-election Mr. Wise was then opposed—that this same republican portion of the Whig part was that fragment of the old Jackson party that had gone off under the white flag of '36—that as soon would oil and water unite, as the principles of the old Hamiltonian federal party, and those of the republican states rights portion of the Whig party of 1840—and that, upon their ascendancy to power, should they, (the federal portion of the Whig party of 1840,) attempt to carry out the federal doctrines, the states rights portion, who had no sympathy for them in principle, would rebel—and that the party common of 1840 must be dissolved into its original elements. This, Mr. Wise demonstrated, as with a pencil of light, was the relative position of the republican and federal wings of the great Whig army, when General Harrison came into power.

In relation to his Hanover letter, to which allusion, in some way by speech, sign, or manner, was made, he explicitly said, before he ever pledged his support in any form to Mr. Clay, he obtained a distinct avowal of his sentiments, and a pledge in regard to five cardinal points.[2] Said he, "Mr. Clay, we differ widely upon fundamental principles, which must ever be a gulf between us, unless relinquished by you. How do you stand on the subject of a bank? Virginia is opposed to one." "Why, my dear sir," replied Mr. Clay, "this is a subject, which, whatever may be my theoretical views, the public mind is not now ripe for, and I am perfectly willing to leave it to 'the arbitrament of public opinion.'" "But, Mr. Clay, on the subject of the Tariff, you are looked upon as the father of this system, and you are so wedded to it, you could hardly be tempted to give it up. I am uncompromisingly opposed to it." "Why," said Mr. Clay, "all I wanted in the first instance, was to give a stimulus to the manufacturing in-

2. *He obtained * * * a pledge in regard to five cardinal points,* etc. See in proof Clay's letter, October 10, 1839, and his speech at Taylorsville, Hanover County. *Letters and Times of the Tylers,* I, 599, 601.

terests of the country. That is already done. I am perfectly willing to abide by the compromise act—however much we differ upon the subject, theoretically, practically, we will be together." "But then, Mr. Clay, on the subject of internal improvement, how are you?" "Why, my dear sir, all I wished was to encourage a spirit of improvement among the states, and this has been carried already too far by the states themselves." "But on the subject of abolition of slavery in the District, Mr. Clay, you admit the power of Congress to act upon the subject, upon the principle of exclusive legislation." "My dear sir," rejoined Mr. Clay, "while these are my opinions conscientiously formed, I am a son of Virginia, and a slaveholder of Kentucky, and I would suffer the tortures of the inquisition, before I would sign a bill having for its object the abolition of slavery in the District, or in any manner give countenance to the subject." Now, by these professions and tests, how wide were Mr. Clay and Mr. Wise, practically apart? and had not Mr. Wise every reason to suppose that Mr. Clay, as a gentleman, would literally fulfil these pledges? Let those who are holding up this Hanover letter in judgment against Mr. Wise take it in connection with these pledges of Mr. Clay and Mr. Clay's own Hanover speech, and they are welcome to all the advantage they can derive.

Mr. Wise admitted he had undergone more changes with respect to Mr. Clay, as a man, than he had ever done towards any one in his life—that he went to Congress the first time with strong prejudices and no very kind feelings towards him—that it was a long time before he had an introduction to him—and that when political co-operation brought them together, he felt the fascination and power of the charmer. Now, Mr. Wise says, for reasons which he assigned, and which are perfectly satisfactory to every unprejudiced and honest mind, he has no opinion of Henry Clay, either as a politician or as a man. He has forfeited his respect forever as to both.

But to return to the canvass of 1840, and the events which succeeded. In 1840, pending the contest of that memorable campaign, whilst Mr. Clay was looking forward to succeed

General Harrison, and to be, "the power behind the throne, greater than the throne itself"—in his administration, he was the enthusiastic admirer of Mr. Wise, never meeting him after a separation, however short, but with the utmost cordiality and kindness. After the election, and Virginia had gone against General Harrison, what was his manner on meeting Mr. Wise in Washington? Cordial as before? No, says Mr. Wise, but with the cold salutation: "How do you do, sir? I congratulate myself that Virginia has gone for Mr. Van Buren; we will no longer be embarrassed by her peculiar opinions." Well may this expression have struck Mr. Wise with amazement. The cloven foot was shown—the policy of the Federal Whigs was developed by their leader. "No longer embarrassed by her peculiar opinions," by which he intended contempt and derision of "Virginia abstractions," or of a strict construction of our glorious Federal Constitution.

From that hour, Mr. Wise's confidence was gone, and who could blame him for indulging feelings of indignation towards a man who had wormed himself artfully into his confidence, and when he had seen the Whig ticket triumph despite of the opposition of Virginia, turned his back upon his pledges, and disregarded those courtesies and civilities which characterize the intercourse of mutual friends? With such a man, ambition is the vortex which swallows up every kind feeling of the human heart, and leaves scarcely a redeeming quality behind.

An extra session of Congress was called, and, though Mr. Clay had agreed practically to go along with Mr. Wise, all those measures which had been renounced and given up by Mr. Clay in 1840, were sought in hot haste, through his instrumentality, to be palmed off upon the nation. The bank question, which was to be left to the enlightenment of public opinion, was snatched from the people—a rivalry was begot between Mr. Clay and Mr. Webster, in consequence of General Harrison's preference for the latter; and ere the old chief had been killed by the annoyance of hungry office-seekers, (the Simon Pures of 1840,) and the course of political aspirants for the presidency, Mr. Clay secretly aimed at his administra-

tion the artillery of war. All this Mr. Wise proved, and proved satisfactorily. The compromise act was violated, and an odious bankrupt law passed, contrary to every pledge Mr. Clay had made Mr. Wise.

Mr. Wise, in the course of his address, triumphantly vindicated John Tyler against the charges of treachery, Iscariotism, Arnoldism, immorality, fraud, dishonesty, and the thousand and one coarse and malicious epithets which have been heaped upon him by Federal Whiggery, without stint and without measure. He proved, beyond the possibility of a doubt, that Mr. Tyler had always been opposed to the constitutionality of a bank, and that he could not have signed a charter without perjury—that there was no evidence to show that even General Harrison would have signed a bank charter; and he quoted the letter of the General in *'22*, wherein he states, the Bank of the United States is unconstitutional, it not being necessary to carry out an expressly granted power, and that had he the power, he would issue a *scire facias,* and revoke the charter—and, also, the Whig address in Richmond in 1840, wherein it is claimed for General Harrison, that he is as much opposed to the United States Bank as any man could be, and far sounder upon that subject than Mr. Van Buren.

Mr. Wise said he advised freely with Mr. Tyler upon the subject of a bank [3]—that he differed from him as to its constitutionality, but, at the same time, urged him to take that course which his conscience dictated, without regard to whom it might offend or whom please—that if he could do so, as did Mr. Madison, according to the principle of *stare decisis,* to do so, but to take care and sign only a full-blooded animal, no mongrel—only such as would confer most benefit upon the

3. *Mr. Wise said he freely advised with Mr. Tyler upon the subject of a bank,* etc. Mr. Tyler took his stand "in the absence of all his personal friends," "following," as he says, "the light of his own judgment and promptings of his own feelings." *Letters and Times of the Tylers,* II., 32. Gilmer and Wise were canvassing for Congress in Virginia, and Wise says that he did not hear of Harrison's death until two weeks after it occurred. *Congressional Globe,* 1842-43, p. 147. Having been a Bank man himself, Wise thereupon wrote to Gen. Leslie

country—but to take his own course in the matter, and not to compromit by his advice his character, his conscience or his honor. Mr. Wise said he had frequently witnessed the agony of that man upon this very question, and had seen him almost sweat drops of blood, and wished that he could have been in his place, as he believed he had the nerve to look down with scorn and contempt upon his revilers and slanderers, and those reptiles whose business it is to assail private character to subserve party and ambitious ends.

Mr. Wise further said, they had tried every way they could to entrap John Tyler,[4] and that the very bill prepared by Mr.

Coombs, of Kentucky, that "he hoped Tyler would follow the example of Madison, and upon the principle of *stare decisis* approve a bank bill." "But," wrote Wise, "in a short time after I had seen the inaugural, I visited Mr. Tyler, (in May) and he at once dispelled my doubts and hopes, avowing in our first conversation after he became President, his continued opposition to a United States Bank on constitutional grounds, and said he was too old, in his opinion, to change them." Wise to T. F. Marshall, December 29, 1842, in *Letters and Times of the Tylers,* III., 106. To the taunt of the Whigs at another time that Tyler was led by him and others into vetoing the Bank bills, Wise replied: "The President had shown how hard it was to control him. They (Clay and his Whigs) had endeavored to control him, and had been disappointed." *Cong. Globe,* 1842, 916.

4. *Mr. Wise further said they had tried every way they could to entrap John Tyler,* etc. The following is a brief statement of Mr. Tyler's Bank vetoes: Mr. Tyler denied the power of Congress to establish corporations in the states. So Mr. Ewing ,the Secretary of the Treasury, submitted to congress a plan of a local bank of the District of Columbia, and only having power to establish branches in the states with their consent. In the Senate, Clay reported a substitute, giving the Bank the power to establish branches without that consent. The President vetoed Clay's bill, and Mr. Ewing, not long after, in his letter of resignation, said that Mr. Tyler's veto message was in conformity with his opinions "pertinaciously adhered to in all his conversation." The Whigs then pretended to give way and let Mr. Tyler name the terms of the Bank bill. Accordingly, on August 18, 1841, he discussed with his cabinet the outlines of a bill which he would be willing to call his own. At this meeting he authorized two of the cabinet, Mr. Ewing and Mr. Webster, to confer with Messrs. Sergeant and Berrien, who had the matter in charge for the House of Representatives; but, according to John Bell, one of the cabinet who

Clay himself contained the same objectionable feature as that of Mr. Ewing, which Mr. Clay had contemptuously denominated "a rickety concern"—that any bill John Tyler could have framed, or any friend of Mr. Webster, would have met his unqualified condemnation—that he wanted the credit himself of preparing the bill, and getting through Congress all the Whig measures, that he might retire to Ashland upon the dignity of these measures, become the idol of the Whig party, and the candidate for the succession.

Mr. Wise, in defining his position upon the bank question, said, though he differed from Mr. Tyler, and knew he differed in 1840, he had merged that into questions which he considered of far greater magnitude. Though he believed a United States Bank constitutional, the time had passed for chartering one.

---

resigned, they were cautioned "not to commit him," that "his approval was to be a matter of inference from his veto message and his general views," and "that he wanted to see the bill before it was presented to Congress, if it could be so managed." The bill was drafted after the Cabinet meeting, and as to its terms, Mr. Ewing ventured only to say that he heard that "the President had approved it." In opposition to this hearsay statement there are (1) the indignant written denial of the President: "I declare, with all the solemnities that can attend such a declaration, that my assent to that bill was never obtained." *Letters and Times of the Tylers,* II., 98. (2) The letter of Mr. Webster, (who had been authorized to confer with the Whigs) written on the day the bill was submitted to the House of Representatives, August 20th, That "you (the President) are perfectly free to exercise your constitutional power wholly uncommitted, except so far as may be gathered from your public and official acts." (See *Washington Madisonian,* April 23, 25, 1845—John Tyler, Jr's, address) (3) The repeated endeavors and vain attempts made by the President and his friends, in and out of congress, to have the bill postponed or amended in conformity with the President's views, all of which was refused, and the bill rushed through under the whip of the previous question, the Whigs giving the strongest proofs thereby of their hostility and want of fairness.

The suggestions of the President at the Cabinet meeting favored a Bank of the District of Columbia, without the discounting powers of Ewing's bill and Clay's substitute, and one confined to dealings in foreign exchanges. So far as the right of a local bank to deal in foreign exchanges was concerned, Mr. Tyler looked to the decision of the Supreme Court of the United States in the case of the *Bank of*

The first effect of a bank, he contended, was depletive, and he cited in proof the history of the country from 1816 to 1825. He assimilated the condition of the country now to a patient who was already prostrate from the loss of blood, and asked if, in this state of things, a physician would be found so rash and foolish as to think of taking more blood, and thereby sink the powers of the system beyond the point of reaction. He said the fate of the United States Bank and the Bank of Pennsylvania, which was but a continuation of it; the cries of orphans and widows who had been reduced to penury and want by its explosion; and the fact that Nicholas Biddle, with all his financial knowledge, once standing high in public estimation, had failed to make it a benefit, and himself become a bankrupt in character and person, all admonished us that no such institution could ever again find favor with the people of the United States.

Mr. Wise showed, and showed from the record, the Whig address of 1840, that if all deserters are to be shot, Mr. Tyler and himself should not be selected as the victims, but those who put forth their principles in 1840, and have since abandoned them; and humorously said, that if such were the sentence, and the words "take aim, fire" to be given, you would see no little dipping and dodging in the crowd, among the old Hamiltonian National Republican Federalists, who had long cherished and often lauded the doctrines of Hamilton, Pickering, and Adams to the stars and he also satisfied all who heard him, that in regard to the Cilley duel, the mountain of odium, which he had borne, should properly have rested upon the

---

'*Augusta* vs. *Earle,* Peters' Reports, Vol. III., which settled the principle that a bank of one Country authorized to deal in exchanges might establish agencies or branches for that purpose in another Country, *unless prohibited by it's laws from so doing.* That this was his plan of a bank at the Cabinet meeting is shown, not only by his own explanation of the matter and the natural supposition that he wished to be consistent with his first veto demanding state assent, but by the statement of one of the Whigs, A. H. H. Stuart of Virginia, who admits that shortly before the Cabinet meeting he brought the President a paper containing the clause as to branches, and received in the

shoulders of another. He said that it was a fair duel—but that if censure and odium attached to any one, it should be to Henry Clay, for he was the counseller and adviser, and dictated the terms of the duel—that he (Mr. W.) protested against the rifle and the language of the challenge, which closed the door to an adjustment of the difficulty, but was overruled by Mr. Clay—that he expressed an unwillingness to be the bearer of a challenge so uncompromising in its character, but at length yielded to appeal from Mr. Graves, who reminded him that he had been his friend on a similar occasion.

The development of these facts was made by him, because, when his character was assailed, and assailed unjustly, as Mr. Clay knew, Mr. Wise appealed to him to do him justice, and put this matter right before the nation, Mr. Clay avoided all opportunity to do so, and no alternative was left Mr. Wise but to suffer the odium, or else give the facts to the public.

Mr. Wise in conclusion, said his private vote was his own, and he should tell no one how or for whom it should be given in the coming presidential election. But he would not hesitate to say for whom it should not be given: that he could never vote for Henry Clay, as constable, or anything else. He said he believed, to the fullest extent, in the right of the people to instruct their representatives; and if the election went before Congress, and his district had voted for Mr. Clay, he should deposit his vote for him.

President's handwriting an amendment guarding the sovereignty of the states. *Letters and Times of the Tylers,* II., 70, 99. Now the bill as passed gave the bank power to establish agencies without restriction as to place, and the bills of exchange provided for in the bill were so unguarded as to make them in every respect equivalent to local promissory notes. A second veto followed, and all the Cabinet, except Mr. Webster, resigned, in order to force the President's resignation.

Not long before the veto a letter written by John Minor Botts was unexpectedly published in which the Whig design of "heading" and trapping the President was publicly disclosed. Ewing pretending to condemn the letter as much as any man, attributed Mr. Tyler's veto to this. But Mr. Botts himself, in a statement published not long after, shows that Mr. Tyler, before the publication of his letter, expressed his disapproval of the bill. Niles' Register, 61, p. 79.

Mr. Wise, upon the whole, made a most favorable impression. As a Virginian, I feel proud of him, and do applaud him for the gallant manner in which he has stood by Mr. Tyler, Virginia's own son, in one of the most trying positions in which man was ever placed, when slander with her thousand tongues was at work, and everything done by a reckless party to destroy the fair fame of an honest upright man.

CURIOUS COINS.

In QUARTERLY XIV., p. 162 and in QUARTERLY XVI., p. 216, are accounts of two coins very similar in character.

No. 1, with the head of an Indian, A. D., 1674, series 231, was found near Raton, New Mexico, in 1905.

No. 2, with the head of a horse or unicorn, A. D., 1674, series 226, was found at Waco, Texas.

The latter coin has also upon it "Jamestown, Kent County," which showed that they were probably connected with Kent County, Maryland. There is no Kent County in Virginia.

The following is from a letter of Richard H. Spencer, Secretary of the Maryland Historical Society, to whom the Editor addressed an enquiry on the subject:

"The late George Johnston in his History of Cecil County, Md., page 83, says: 'The first Court House was erected on the north side of Sassafras River, a short distance east of Ordinary Point, at what was *afterwards* called Jamestown, and is now designated on the map of Cecil County as 'Old Town.'

"That part of Cecil County was taken from Kent County on June, 1674, hence the tokens were issued previous to June 6, of that year.

"These tokens were evidently struck off in England to advertise the advantages of Jamestown, Kent County, Md., and its vicinity, and probably to induce laboring men to come here.

"They were probably taken many years ago to the West and South West by some nomadic tribe of Indians, and from the holes in them they had evidently been worn as ornaments.

"From the year 1648 to 1674, copper tokens were issued by

nearly every tradesman in England. They originated with a public necessity, but in the end became a nuisance, and are well known to Numismatics as '17th and 18th Century Tokens.'"

THE SHIP CAPTAIN AND THE SELECT MEN.

The law was so severe in New England during Colonial times, and the officers of the law had such a jealous, prying disposition to carry it into effect that flogging was an every day affair and apparently not regarded as a disgrace, as in the South, where in the 18th century negro slaves performed the part of the poor whites in Massachusetts. The following from the "Travels" of Rev. Andrew Burnaby, 1759-1760, is amusingly illustrative:

"I cannot take leave of it (Massachusetts) without relating a very extraordinary story, communicated to me by persons of undoubted credit, as it further tends to illustrate the character and manners of its inhabitants.

"Some years ago, a commander of one of his majesty's ships of war, being stationed at this place, had orders to cruise from time to time, in order to protect our trade, and distress the enemy. It happened unluckily that he returned from one of his cruises on a Sunday; and as he had left his lady at Boston, the moment she heard the ship's arrival, she hasted down to the water side, in order to receive him. The captain, on landing, embraced her with tenderness and affection: this, as there were several spectators by, gave great offence, and was considered as an act of indecency, and a flagrant profanation of the Sabbath. The next day, therefore, he was summoned before the magistrates; who with many severe rebukes and pious exhortations, ordered him to be publicly whipped.

"The captain stifled his indignation and resentment as much as possible; and as the punishment, from the frequency of it, was not attended with any great degree of ignominy or disgrace, he mixed with the best company, was well received by them, and they were apparently good friends. At length

the time of the station expired, and he was recalled: he went, therefore, with seeming concern, to take leave of his worthy friends; and that they might spend one more happy day together before their final separation, he invited the principal magistrates and select men to dine with him on board his ship, upon the day of his departure. They accepted the invitation, and nothing could be more joyous and convivial than the entertainment which he gave them.

"At length the fatal moment arrived that was to separate them: the anchor was apeak, the sails were unfurled, and nothing was wanting but the signal to get under way. The captain, after taking an affectionate leave of his worthy friends, accompanied them upon deck, where the boatswain and crew were in readiness to receive them. He there thanked afresh for the civilities they had shown him, of which he said he should retain an eternal remembrance; and to which he wished it had been in his power to have made a more adequate return. One point of civility only remained to be adjusted between them, which, as it was in his power, so he meant most fully to recompense to them.

"He then reminded them of what had passed, and, ordering the crew to pinion them, had them brought one by one to the gang-way, where the boatswain stripped off their shirts, and with a cat-of-nine-tails laid on the back of each forty stripes save one. They were then, amidst the shouts and acclamations of the crew, shoved into their boats; and the captain immediately getting under way sailed for England." [1]

[1] This story has lately appeared in one of the English newspapers, told with much humour, and with some difference respecting the occasion and mode of the captain's punishment. The author cannot take upon himself to say which account may be most exact, but he has chosen to abide by that which he heard at Boston. They either of them serve to characterize the people, and to answer the author's purpose in relating it.—*By Andrew Burnaby.*

SILVER SPOONS AT SABINE HALL.

Communicated by KATE ROWLAND MASON.

When on a visit some years since to "Sabine Hall," the seat of Col. Robert Carter in Richmond County, a long inscription on the tablespoons extending the whole length of their handles attracted his notice at dinner. They were of massive silver, but in most of them this inscription was partially effaced by time and use; on the more perfect he found it to read thus: "After the repeal of the American Stamp Act—1766." The tradition connected with them as gathered from his host was that his grandfather, Col. Landon Carter, of "Sabine Hall," a Virginia planter, in an unusually restricted order to his factors in London that year, directed him aomngst other things to send him some tablespoons. And his directions were, if the Stamp Act was repealed before the order was executed, to send them of silver, but if not repealed to send them of *horn*. The act was repealed, and the factor in causing it to be recorded on the spoons, gave to the family of Mr. Carter for every generation one of their proudest trophies.

(MS. sketch of George Mason, of Gunston, by his grandson, James Murray Mason.)

LOWRY FAMILY.

The following is a copy of a paper filed in a suit in the old Williamsburg chancery court:

Wm. Lowry (born), Septr. 25th, 1762.
Nancy Lowry, Jany. 16, 1765.
Jno. Lowry, Jany. 20, 1767.
Thos. Lowry, Feby. 8, 1769.
Frans. Lowry, Decr. 17, 1770.
Robert Lowry, April 18, 1772.
Mary Hollier Lowry, Feby. 13, 1774.
Jane Lowry, Jany. 27, 1776.
Edmond Lowry, Augst. 21, 1779.

The above are the times of birth of the children of Mr. John Lowry deceasd. taken off the Family Bible by Moses Robertson.

Eliz. City September 16th. 1794 Capn. Moses Robertson came before me, and maid Oath, that the above List was taken from the Family Register of John Lowry decd. & that it was a true Coppy, given under my hand the above Year of date—*William Moore.*

CARTER GENEALOGY.

(Continued from page 103.)

By Dr. Jos. Lyon Miller.

59. George[4] Carter (William,[3] Edward,[2] Thomas[1]) was living in Lancaster in 1783, the head of a family of six white souls and seven black.

61. Jesse[4] Carter (Thomas,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) arrived at legal age prior to March 10, 1748, when the Lancaster Court settled with him for his share of his father and grandfather's estates. Since the publication of my notes on the father and grandfather of Jesse Carter, I have learned through the Pittsylvania descendants the maiden names of their wives. Capt. Thomas Carter, Jr., married Arabella Williamson in 1690, and his son, Thomas Carter (III), married Joana Miller about 1722-23. Her parents are said to have lived in Maryland, but there was a Miller family in Lancaster. Joana Miller Carter died about two years after her husband, and May 3, 1737, Mr. Thomas James was appointed the guardian of Jesse and Thomas Carter, orphans of Thomas Carter. December 8, 1749, "Jesse Carter, of the Parish of Christ Church, Lancaster, Schoolmaster," sold to James Gordon, Gent., a hundred and twenty-five acres of land on Corotoman River adjoining land of Thomas Carter, which descended to him from his grandfather, Capt. Thomas Carter. Jesse Carter is said to have married (I) about 1750 Susan Saterwhite, who bore him a son and two daughters; and (II) Mary Chattin prior

to December 6, 1760, when she joined him in a deed to William Griggs for their home place in Lancaster. Jesse Carter then removed his family to Cumberland county where they lived until about 1780-81, when they removed to Pittsylvania. The census of 1782 shows that he was living in Pittsylvania county with ten whites and seventeen servants in his family. In 1785 he purchased thirteen hundred acres of land lying on both sides of Bannister River, and settled on it for the remainder of his life. He built a fine house and called the place "Oaklands." It is now owned by his great-grandson, Jesse Lawson Carter. (See illustration.) Jesse Carter made his will November 30, 1805, prob. December 11, 1811. He left a fine lot of property in land and negroes to his wife, Mary Carter, and eight children, half of whom he had provided with their shares before his death. Son Joseph received the home, 852 acres of land around it, and six negroes. Jesse and Mary Carter had issue:

187. Thomas C.(hattin?) Carter, died in 1820.

188. Sarah, married Jeduthan Carter (No. 80).

189. Peggy, married Samuel Thompson and had sons Jesse and Samuel, Jr.

190. Joseph Carter, died in 1838, at "Oaklands."

191. Frances, married James Hopkins.

192. Polly, married James Hopkins after her sister's death.

193. Jesse Carter, removed to Caswell county, N. C., died in 1815.

194. John Carter, of "Sandy River," Pittsylvania county.

62. THOMAS[4] CARTER (Thomas,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]), born in Lancaster county, November 27, 1734, died at his home, "Green Rock," Pittsylvania county, July 15, 1817. July 10, 1764, he was married to Winifred Hobson in Cumberland county, Va. She was the eldest daughter of Adcock and Joana Lawson Hobson, was born July 15, 1745, and died December 3, 1831. Adock Hobson [1] was a descendant of Thomas Hob-

[1] Adcock and Joana Lawson Hobson lived in Northumberland County for the first ten years after their marriage on July 30th, 1741, and they had the following children born before they removed to Cum-

son, clerk of Northumberland county from 1664 to 1716. Joana Hobson was the daughter of John Lawson[2] of Richmond

After their marriage, Thomas and Winifred Carter settled in Cumberland county, where in 1782 there were ten white members of the family and seven servants. July 31, 1783, he purchased 467 acres of land not far from his brother, Jesse Carter, in Pittsylvania, and removed his family to that county.

On this place, known locally as "Green Rock," he built in 1787 a fine house for those days, a part of which is yet standing. (See illustration.) Here the old folks spent the re-

---

berland County: John, b. Oct. 31, 1742; Winifred, b. July 15, 1745; Thomas, b. June 11, 1746; William, b. Sept. 7, 1748; Caleb, b. July 13, 1751—this is the last child of Adcock Hobson's whose birth is recorded in the St. Stephen's Parish Register.

[2] John Lawson's will, probated in Richmond County, Feb. 2, 1761, names the following children: Christopher, Elizabeth Barber, *Joana Hobson,* (wife of Adcock Hobson), Catharine White, (wife of Col. John Lawson White), Lucy Lawson, (married later George Booker). Son Christopher and son-in-law Adcock Hobson executors. Like the Hobsons and Carters the Whites and Bookers removed to southern Virginia where they have many descendants of considerable prominence. John Lawson of Richmond County was probably a son of Rowland Lawson (III) whose will probated in Lancaster County, Jan. 17, 1717, names wife Jane and children Rowland, Thomas, *John,* Anthony, Sarah, Joana, and Elizabeth. This Rowland Lawson was a son of Rowland (II) who was a Justice of Lancaster in 1684, and whose will probated Sept. 7, 1706, names sons Henry, John and Rowland. Rowland Lawson (II) was a son of Rowland Lawson, Sr., who emigrated to Va. with wife Lettice prior to 1637 (Head rights). He was a Justice of Lancaster, 1652-1655; and his will probated May 8, 1661, names wife Lettice, and children Rowland, Jr., Elizabeth, John, Henry,—all but Rowland were minors in 1668. Lancaster deeds show that Rowland Lawson, Sr., had brothers Richard and Epaphroditus, who also left descendants in Lancaster. Rowland Lawson, Jr.'s will in 1706, bears a seal showing arms—a chevron between three martlets. Burke gives the arms of Lawson, of Brough Hall, Yorkshire, and of Lawson, (Baronets) of Longherst and Cramblington Co., Northumberland, England, as—Arg. a chevron between three martlets sable. For further history of the Lawson family see the interesting notes of Mr. Stanard in Vol. IV., Virginia Magazine.

mainder of their days. In 1797, 1798 and 1802 Thomas Carter had grants for 1,193 acres more land in Pittsylvania.

I have been given great assistance in collecting data of the descendants of Jesse and Thomas Carter by a great-great-granddaughter of Thomas—Mrs. N. E. Clements, Chatham, Va. She tells an interesting story of her great-great-grandmother as follows: "Winifred Hobson Carter became converted to Methodism while living in Cumberland, and when they moved to Pittsylvania there were no Methodist churches up there. As she knew Bishop Asbury, she wrote to him to come to her house in his journeyings North and South. At his coming she notified the people in the surrounding country, and quite a number of them gathered at her home to hear the Bishop preach. In order to be able to address the whole crowd, he called for something to stand on, and the most convenient thing at the moment was one of Thomas's liquor cases. They are stoutly built, covered with leather and lined with velvet, and are now owned by Mr. Scott Carter, of Chatham, Va. Well the Bishop preached on the case, and Thomas afterward teased his wife so much about it that before another visit from the Bishop she had a small pulpit built, which afterward always stood in her parlor." Later Thomas Carter gave a tract of land called the "Bold Spring" place for the erection of the first Methodist church in Pittsylvania. Thomas Carter made his will September 16, 1803, probated August 18, 1817. He left a good estate to his wife and children; among the personal property were books, two sets of large silver spoons, six sets of small silver spoons, and a large set of pink rose china. Their family Bible, now owned by Mr. Hill Carter Linthicum, Durham, N. C., records the following children:

195. Joana, born Aug. 15, 1766, died July, 1809.

196. Elizabeth, born June 21, 1768, married her first cousin, Thomas C. Carter.

197. Jesse, born November 30, 1770.

198. Sarah, born February 17, 1773, died December 25, 1805.

199. Edward, born March 8, 1775, died September 18, 1843.

200. Thomas, born March 8, 1777, died October, 1852.

201. Jeduthan, born March 22, 1779.

202. Lawson Hobson, born June 13, 1781.

203. Christopher Lawson, born February 7, 1784.

204. Dale Miller, born March 17, 1786, died September 8, 1796.

205. Rawley Williamson, born February 8, 1788, died October 18, 1847.

63. THOMAS[4] CARTER (Joseph,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]), born May 8, 1720, was killed by accidental discharge of a gun at the wedding celebration of his sister, Mary Elizabeth, Christmas week, 1738.

64. MARY ELIZABETH[4] CARTER (Joseph,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]), born December 2, 1721, married James Davis, of "Broadfield," Spottsylvania county, December 25, 1738.

James Davis, born November 3, 1719, was the second son of Thomas Davis (b. Aug. 8, 1693, son of John and Susannah Wyatt (?) Davis, of Stafford), and his wife, Sarah Fielding (b. May 12, 1695, daughter of Edward and Hannah Fielding, of Northumberland county). Since the publication of my Fielding and Davis notes in the *Virginia Magazine,* Vols. XI. and XII., I have gathered a great deal more data from county, parish, and family records, and other sources, so will include herewith a connected sketch of the Fieldings. In my former notes I omitted one entire generation, and made some incorrect deductions.

James Davis owned a plantation of six hundred acres of land on "Plentiful Run," Spotsylvania county, which he called "Broadfield." In 1740 he built a story and a half brick house with dormer windows and great inside chimneys. (See illustration.) This house was burned in October, 1789, mentioned in a letter written shortly afterward to Thomas Davis by his sister, Polly, but a quaint old pen and ink drawing made in 1788 by James Davis' son, Thomas, who removed to Kentucky in that year, is yet in existence. Among the family traditions is one that the Davis children received most of their education from a tutor kept by a neighbor of the Davis's—a Captain

Winslow. Thomas, the younger son of James and Mary Davis, taught school after he settled in Kentucky, and his advertisement in the Kentucky *Gazette* of May 31, 1788, states that he was qualified to teach "Reading, writing and Arithmetic in its various branches, bookkeeping, surveying and Navigation, geography or the use of the globes, etc." Another tradition is that, several years before his death James Davis while riding through the forest in a storm was struck on the head by a limb of a tree, knocked from his horse and dragged for some distance. When found he was paralyzed, and though he later partially recovered the use of his limbs, the accident is said to have hastened his death. He made his will February 16, 1765, probated October 1, 1765, and left to wife the home place and a hundred and thirty acres of land, and all furnishings and stock (she had received three negroes from her father); son James 200 acres and the home place after the death of wife; son Benjamin the remainder of his land; son John forty shillings as he had given him a hundred acres of land previously; daughter Elizabeth a bed and furniture and a cow and calf; the rest of his personalty and five negroes amounting to £203 to be shared equally by his four younger children when they came of age—Mary, William, Charles and Thomas.

October 17, 1770, John Davis, of Mecklenburg county, sold to brothers James and Benjamin Davis, of Spotsylvania, his share, by reversion, of four hundred acres of land on Plentiful Run "whereof their father James Davis dec'd died seized & possessed of"; which share was expectant in the death of his mother, Mary Davis, who held a life estate therein.

James and Mary Davis had issue as follows (Bible Records):

206. John Fielding, born January 1, 1740, removed to Mecklenburg in 1766.

207. James C.(arter?), born March 5, 1741, died in 1792 in Spotsylvania.

208. Benjamin, born January 10, 1743, died in 1791 in Spotsylvania.

209. Elizabeth, born February 22, 1745.

210. Snead, born May 16, 1748, died prior to 1765.

211. William Dale, born August 28, 1750.

212. Mary, born May 24, 1753, died unmarried after 1792.

213. Felix, born April 27, 1755, died prior to 1765.

214. Charles, born October 22, 1758, living in 1794.

215. Thomas W(yat?), born November 30, 1761, died November 8, 1839, Woodford county, Ky.

Portraits of James and Mary Davis were reproduced in the July, 1909, QUARTERLY.

66. JOHN[4] CARTER (Joseph,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]), born June 8, 1725, died after 1793 in Orange county. January 4, 1771, John Carter had a deed from his mother, Catharine Carter, for her dower in 215 acres of land where his father, Joseph Carter, dec'd, had lived. April 24, 1780, Joseph Rogers, of Culpeper, sold to John Carter, Gent., of Spotsylvania, 188 acres and improvements in Orange county, to which he removed his family, as in the census of 1782, John Carter, of Orange, was the head of a family of sixteen whites and thirty servants. February 25, 1785, Robert Thomas sold to John Carter, of Orange, 455 acres, buildings and other improvements for £230. March 25, 1785, John Carter and wife Susannah, of Orange, sold to William Coats, of Spotsylvania, 165 acres in Spotsylvania, a part of a tract purchased by the said John Carter's father, Joseph Carter, from Robert Goodloe; and April 1st they sold an adjoining 60 acres to Meredith Anderson. Both these deeds are witnessed by Beverly and William Winslow, who are said to have been cousins of the Carters. April 3, 1787, John Carter, of Orange, released to his son-in-law, David Lively, of Spotsylvania, his title to a negro servant. June 20, same year, John and Susannah sold 13 acres of their plantation to Joseph Bell. This is the last appearance of Susannah Carter's signature to her husband's deeds. February 21, 1791, he purchased 41 acres adjoining his land from Richard Moore Thomas, of Woodford county, Ky., but then in Orange county, witnessed by Joseph and Priscilla Carter; and January 28, 1793, he sold the place where he then lived—276 acres at a pound per acre to Roger and Henry Bell. Also

on same date 104 acres to Adam Quisenberry; and April 22, 1793, appears for the last time in the records when he purchased a 200 acre plantation from Joseph May and wife Jane. John and Susannah Carter evidently had a large family as shown by the census, unless they had grandchildren living with them, but I have the names of but three of their children:

216. John, Jr., born September 21, 1757, died in Spotsylvania, June 20, 1808.

217. Joseph, living in Orange in 1815, and 1817, when he and wife, Polly, made deeds for land had from his father, John Carter.

218. Priscilla, unmarried in 1791.

219. ————————, a daughter who married David Lively, of Spotsylvania.

John Carter, Sr., and John Carter, Jr., both served as privates in the Virginia troops in the Revolution.

67. GEORGE[4] CARTER (Joseph,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]), born December 18, 1728, probably married and settled in Caroline county, as July 27, 1789, George Carter, of Caroline, bought from Richard Thomas, of Orange, 145 acres adjoining land of John Carter in Orange; and February 27, 1797, George Poteet, Francis Pollutt, and Henry Goodloe, of Spotsylvania, Admrs. of George Carter, dec'd, sold the above 145 acres to Roger and William Bell.

71. ROBERT[4] CARTER (Joseph,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]), born August 22, 1735, does not appear in the Spotsylvania records after the settlement of his father's estate in 1750, and probably was the Robert Carter, who emigrated from Virginia to South Carolina about 1752. The great-great-grandsons of this Robert Carter—Mr. Frank Rhodes, Webster Groves, Mo., and Mr. Benjamin Carter, Washington, D. C.—have furnished me with the following data: Robert Carter, born in Virginia *circa* 1733-1736, settled in Sumpter county, Camden District, South Carolina, about 1752, where he married Margaret Brunson, daughter of William Brunson, Sr. He was a member of the Provincial Congress at Charleston in 1775; and made his will December 28, 1791, in which he

named the following children: James, born about 1755; Benjamin, born 1757; William, born 1759; Daniel, born November 27, 1761; Margaret Alexander, and Susan Storry. James married and left two daughters; Benjamin died unmarried. He was a Captain in the North Carolina Line in the Revolution, for which he received a grant of 5,000 acres of land in Williamson county, Tenn. He was a member of the Society of Cincinnati. William, married and left a son, John Carter, who attained some distinction as a lawyer at Camden and later at Charleston, and was a member of Congress from South Carolina. Daniel (born 1761, died in 1834) was a lieutenant of Cavalry in the Revolution. He purchased a part of his brother's Tennessee land to which he removed his family about 1800. July 2, 1782, he married Sarah Conyers in South Carolina, and had issue: James Rutherford, Robert William, Daniel, Dr. Benjamin, John Conyers, Isaac, Alexander, Milton, Anderson, Margaret, Mary Eliza married a Smith, Agnes Caroline and Susannah Amelia. Dr. Benjamin Carter, born June 14, 1792, in South Carolina, died in 1865 in Pulaski, Tenn. He had issue: Elizabeth, married Robert Rodes; Cornelia, married Dr. Jacob Epperson; Mary Margaret, married Robert H. Watkins, and an only son, Benjamin F., born 1829, still living in Pulaski. He was a major on the staff of General John C. Brown, C. S. A. He has two daughters and two sons, John Rivers Carter, a civil engineer, now postmaster at Birmingham, Ala., and Benjamin, Jr., an attorney at law, Washington, D. C.

FIELDING EXCURSUS.

The earliest ancestor of the Northumberland County, Virginia Fieldings of whom we have record was Rev. Roger Fielden, or Fielding, an Episcopal clergyman at Horton, Gloucestershire, England, in the early part of the 17th century. He was probably a member of the ancient family of Fielding, of "Newham Paddox," Warrickshire, as his sons and grandsons used the Hapsburg seal of this family, and Roger, Edward, and William were baptismal names in both families. Original records show that he had issue as follows:

Dr. Robert, born 1620, died after 1693, of Gloucester, England.

Richard, a merchant, of Bristol Eng., died in 1667.

Edward, a merchant, of Bristol, Eng., died in 1693.
Ambrose, a planter in Northumberland, Va., died in 1675.
Elizabeth, married a Mr. Gwin of Horton.
Margaret, married a Mr. Walter Fryer.
————, married a Mr. Giles Manning.
————, married a Mr. Francis Manning.

"Robert Ffeilden, son of Roger, of Horton Co., Gloucester Sacerd," matriculated at Balliol College, Oxford, in March, 1637-'38, at the age of 18 years. He rec'd his B. A. degree May 7, 1641, and was made a fellow of the college in 1646, but ejected from his fellowship in 1648, by the Parliamentary Party under Cromwell. He returned, and Dec. 14, 1653, rec'd the degree of Doctor of Medicine. Was made hon. fellow of the College of Physicians (as Ffeildinge) in 1664. He practiced in the city of Gloucester. (Foster's Alumni Oxoniensis, and Munk's Roll of the Royal College of Physicians of London). Dr. Robert Fielding was mentioned in the wills of his brothers Richard and Edward, who left him small remembrances.

Richard Feilding, merchant and ship owner, lived for a time in Va., where he purchased, Dec. 14, 1662, a thousand acre plantation lying near the head of the Great Wicocomico River, Northumberland County, from Capt. Peter Knight, who patented it in 1657. He recorded other deeds in the next four years, but the deed books are missing. His will prob. Apr. 18, 1667 (see Va. Hist. Magazine for abstract), gave small legacies to sisters and brother Robert, and to brother Edward, all his estate in England and elsewhere, except his plantation in Va., which, with all the servants, stock, household goods, and other property thereon, was to go to brother Ambrose.

"Edward Ffeilding, Esq[re], one of the Aldermen of the city of Bristoll" made his will Feb. 9, 1690, prob. Mar. 2, 1693. (See Va. Hist. Mag. for abstract.) He bequeaths a large estate of over five thousand pounds sterling cash, plate, jewels, etc., and lands in Lacock par. Wiltshire, Eniterne and Landegge parishes Monmouthshire, and houses in Bristol, ship Phoenix, plantation in Va., etc., to wife Elizabeth, children: Elizabeth, Mary, Susanna, Martha, Anne, and only son William, upon whom he entailed the bulk of the estate. According to Foster, "William Fielding, son of Edward, of Bristol," matriculated at Magdalen College, Oxford, March 2, 1687-'88, at the age 17. He also gave from 3 to 40 pounds each to all his sisters, brothers-in-law, brother "Robert Ffielding, Doctor in Physic," a servant, and the poor of the parishes of St. Peter's, in Bristol and Horton, in Gloucester; and to "My nephew Edw. Ffielding, son of my late brother, Mr. Ambrose Ffielding, Dec'd, 500 acres to be laid out of my lands and plantation at Wiccocomico,

in the Co. of Northumberland, in the Country of Virginia beyond the Seas." This plantation contained about twenty-five hundred acres, seventeen hundred of which he had a deed for from his nephew Richard Fielding, son of Ambrose, Sept. 1, 1686.

After laying out the five hundred for his nephew, Edward Feilding's executors sold the remaining two thousand acres to "King Carter" in 1696, with the servants and all other personal estate thereon. This probably included household goods and perhaps plate, as Mr. Wm. A. Eliason, Statesville, N. C., a descendant of "King Carter," has a very ancient piece of silver that has come down in that family, which bears "a lion rampant instead of the regular Carter crest." A lion rampant is the device on the arms of the Northumberland Feildings. See illustrations.

The Virginia Feildings.

Ambrose Feilding, son of Rev. Roger F., settled on his Va. plantation in 1667. To the original place he added 400 acres more in 1668, '70 and '71, and named it "Wicocomico Hall." He was a justice of the county court from June 23, 1669 to Feb. 4, 1675. His will was prob. Nov. 17, 1675; gave wife Anne a ring, and all his estate equally to his children Richard, Edward and Anne. The inventory of his personal estate mentions six negro and five white servants, nine pieces of plate—two with "ye Ffeilding armes"—nineteen silver spoons, a watch, seal, buckles, 2 pr. buttons, and "Tobaky box" of silver, a plain gold ring, a "sealed" gold ring, and two old mourning rings, four portraits, and an excellent lot of furniture.

Richard Fielding, the elder son, had some trouble with his uncle Edward over some property, and finally, in 1686, turned over to his uncle everything that he had. He probably left Va. at this time, as he does not appear again in the records.

Edward, the second son, was a justice of the county court Mar. 19, 1679, and Sept. 12, 1683. He was probably married twice as his will, prob. June 16, 1696, left to "my *now* loving wife Hannah Ffeilding" the use of all his estate till his sons all arrived at the age of twenty-one; after which it was to be divided as follows: Eldest son, Edward, to have the home place, and the tract called "Ye Mill Necke," with mill and mill-pond; son Richard to have his half of a patent for 850 acres he had with John Harris; son Ambrose the tract of land he had from his uncle, Mr. Edward Fielding, of Bristol; infant daughter, Sarah, fifty pounds sterling when she reached the age of eighteen; and daughter Ann a hundred pounds on the following conditions: "I have refused my consent to the present marriage of my daughter Ann to Mr Dennis Connaway,

Jun^{r}, and if they wait the four years till she arrive at the age of eighteen, & M^{r} Conaway is more settled, I hereby give my consent & direct my Ex^{rs} to pay to my daughter, Ann Ffielding, 100 Sterl., and if she whedle her mother's consent before sd time, she shall have but fifty pounds from my estate." The sons were to maintain their sisters as became their station until they arrived at the age of eighteen, and to put Sarah to school as he had Ann; they were also each to pay his mother a thousand pounds of tobacco yearly during her widowhood. Friend John Harris to have a mourning ring; and Richard Fielding, son of "my cousin Edw: Fielding, dec'd, the Great Bible his father gave me." Wife Hannah executrix. She later married a Mr. Hill, and died in 1740 at an advanced age. Her will prob. Nov. 2, 1740, left her property to son Ambrose Fielding, grandsons Edwin, William and Ambrose Fielding, and great-grandson John Fielding, son of Edwin.

Of Anne Fielding, daughter of Ambrose (1st) I have no record.

Descendants of Edward & Hannah Fielding.

Edward, Jr., married between 1704 and 1712 (instead of 1688, as in my former notes) Winifred Conway, dau. of Ann and Dennis Conway, Sr. Her father's will, dated Sept. 16, 1703, directs that his daus. Winifred and Elizabeth shall have the right to live at and enjoy the home dwelling "during their *maiden* lives"; and in 1712 Edward and Winifred Fielding sued Denis Conway, Sr.'s, executors for her share of the estate. May 19, 1713, Edw. Fielding and wife, Winifred, sold to brother Ambrose 130 acres of the tract formerly sold by Capt. Peter Knight to Rich'd Fielding. Edw. Fielding's will was prob. May 19, 1714, with wife Winifred executrix. This book is missing, so have no names of the heirs; but he was probably the father of Edwin Fielding, who had wife Judith and Dec. 10, 1737, sold to Thomas Davis (husband of Sarah Fielding) 40 acres along Fielding's mill-pond; and Apr. 8, 1741, they sold the old Fielding Mill, pond, and two acres of land to R. Mitchell. Winifred Fielding later married Thos. Dameron, from whom she separated, as the court on June 17th, 1719 ordered Thos. Dameron to pay her a thousand pounds of tobacco yearly and to deliver to her all her clothes, household goods, etc., and to give her 500 pounds of tobacco for her lying in expenses, which she was to need soon.

Richard, the second son of Edward, Sr., left a noncupative will, prob, Sept. 20, 1717, with Ambrose Fielding Executoi. This book also is missing.

Ambrose, the 3rd son, born Jan. 31, 1689, mar. circa 1712 Catharine Attkins, dau. of Dr. Mark Attkins, "Chirurgeon" of Christ Church

Parish Lancaster, and his wife Elizabeth, who had been twice married before—first to a Bonnison, by whom she had a daughter Martha; second, to Capt. Nicholas Dymer, whose will she prob. June 6, 1697, and by whom she had a son William. Dr. Attkins died in 1720 with "friend Richard Lee" as executor. He left daughter, Catharine Fielding, and son, Mark, Jr., who died without issue. Ambrose and Catharine Fielding had issue: Ambrose, Jr., Edwin, Hannah, and Elizabeth. Elizabeth mar. a Reeves, and is mentioned in the will of her brother "Edwin Fielding, Gent.", of Fauquier County, in 1783.

Hannah married Thomas Pittman prior to 1750, by whom she had sons Ambrose, Richard and Williamson, and probably other children. Ambrose Pittman mar. Mary Streator, and settled in Edgecombe Co., N. C., where he owned a large plantation and many servants. He had issue: 1. Ambrose mar. Annie Streeter and had Elisha, Elija, Arthur and John; 2. Elisha mar. Elizabeth Coffield and had Harrison, Gresham, Benj. and Elizabeth; 3. Harrison mar. Thryza Lynch and had Harrod, Henry, Emily and Penelope.

Richard Pittman, born in 1753, mar. a Miss Warren, and settled in Woodford Co., Ky., in 1790. They had several children, among them a son Ambrose, living in Woodford in 1820, and a son Lewis, who removed to Knox county, Ky. Granville W. Pittman, a son of this Lewis, moved to Keokuk, Iowa, where he died in 1903, leaving a large family.

Williamson Pittman, son of Thos. and Hannah Fielding Pittman, was a Baptist minister in colonial days in Va. He married Judith, dau. of Stephen and Judith Trabue Watkins, and had sons Williamson and Asa, who removed to Kentucky with their uncle, Joseph Watkins, about 1820. Williamson Pittman, Jr., married Lucinda Buckner, a descendant of Col. Wm. Buckner, of Va, and removed to Palmyra, Mo., where he died, leaving issue: William, Alfred, Asa (killed in the Confederate army), Irene, Julia, Silas and Stanley.

Asa, son of Williamson Pittman, Sr., mar. Nancy, dau. of Edward Trabue, and had issue: 1st, Edward F., mar. Anne, dau. of Dr. George Burr Harrison and his wife Katharine Robinson, and had issue—Katharine, Edward, Jr., George, Anne, Ida and James; 2nd, Williamson Haskins, mar. Hannah, dau. of Maj. Wm. and Maria Thompson Daviess, of Mercer county, Ky. Major Daviess was a nephew of the famous Kentucky lawyer, Joseph Hamilton Daviess, and his wife was the dau. of John Burton Thompson and his wife Anne Porter Robards, and great-granddaughter of Joseph Thompson and his wife Sarah Claiborne, dau. of Capt. Thomas and Anne West Fox Claiborne, all of Virginia. Mrs. Hannah Daviess Pittman, of St. Louis, is the author of "A Belle of the Bluegrass," and "In the Heart of Kentucky," and editor of "Americans of Gentle Birth." She is the mother of, Nannie

Trabue Pittman, mar. Archer Anderson, Jean Hamilton d. s., Wm. Daviess, Asa, Trabue, and Williamson d. s., all of St. Louis; 3rd, Martha Jane Pittman mar. Jesse Grady Crutcher and had, Asa P., Henry, Mary DuPuy, Martha, Jesse, and Richard Lewis; 4th, George Trabue Pittman, d. s., in Louisville; 5th, Anna A. Pittman mar. Hon. Z. F. Smith, Louisville, Ky.

Edwin Fielding, 2nd son of Ambrose and Catharine Attkins Fielding, Oct. 12, 1744, was a bondsman for his cousin Wm. Dymer, son of Wm. Dymer, Sr., the half brother of Catharine Attkins Fielding; and in 1772 this Wm. Dymer, Jr., bequeathed his land to "my Cousins Wm. Nutt of Lancaster county and Edwin Fielding of Leeds Parish, Fauquier county." Fielding sold his interest to Nutt, and mortgaged eleven negroes to secure his bond. Dec. 9, 1754, Edwin Fielding and wife Winifred sold their home plantation adjoining the lands of Ambrose Fielding and Robert Carter, near the old Fielding Landing on Wicocomico River. This was probably the date of their removal to Fauquier. The will of "Edwin Fielding, Gent." was prob. in Fauquier in Sept., 1783.

Ambrose, Jr., son of Ambrose and Catharine F., inherited the home place from his father Ambrose, Sr., whose will was prob. May 14, 1750. Ambrose, Jr.'s, will was prob. in Northumberland in Dec., 1764, and names wife Judith and children, Joseph, Eppes or Eppa, and Judith. His personal estate contained besides a good lot of furniture, three pictures, a silver dish, a pr. of neck clasps, two breast buckles, 2 pr. buttons and a seal all of silver, and two gold rings, a parcel of books, etc. "The Inspector's Books" are mentioned, so he must have been the Tobacco Inspector for his district. Ambrose, Sr.'s, personal estate contained a silver dish, silver headed cane, and a "parcel of other silver trifles." Joseph Fielding in 1780 sold land that was a part of a grant to Richard Fielding in 1664. He was a soldier in the Va. Infantry in the Revolution and Dec. 13, 1784, Col. Gaskins rec'd for him from the State £17, 4s. for service. Apr. 9, 1792, Joseph Fielding got a license to marry Betsy, dau. of Moses Sutton. Three years later his brother Eppa was acting as his administrator, and guardian to his daughter, Elizabeth, who later married her cousin John Dennie, eldest son of Eppa Fielding.

Eppa Fielding, born Jan. 11, 1755, died Mar. 3, 1829, in Louisa county. He served in the 3rd Va. Light Dragoons in the Revolution, and kept a journal of their march down into the Carolinas and back to Va. in 1782. This book is now owned by his grandson, Eppa Fielding, Esq., a lawyer at Harrison, Ark. He married, Feb. 10, 1785, Mary Ann Basye (b. Mar. 12, 1759), dau. of Jesse and Martha Basye, and granddaughter of Isaac and Elizabeth Basye, all of Northumberland. Eppa F. sold his part of the old Fielding plantation Mar. 11, 1776.

May 24, 1784, Col. Gaskins rec'd for him for service in the Revolution £19, 16d., 8s. from the State. After his marriage he settled in Louisa, where he bought 660 acres of land and built a brick house, which was burned a few years ago. Eppa and Mary Basye Fielding had issue: John Dennie, born Nov. 16, 1785; Ambrose, b. 1788; Wm., b. July 4, 1790; Nancy, b. 1792; James, b. 1794 and Eppa, Jr., b. 1796. All of the sons are said to have served from six to twelve months in the War of 1812. At the close of the war Ambrose removed to Kentucky and was lost sight of. John Dennie F. mar. his cousin, Elizabeth Fielding, Aug. 12, 1811, and died in Louisa in 1875; his wife, born Nov. 10. 1793, died in June, 1858. They had issue: Va. Ann, Wm. Jos., d. s. p.; Geo. W., died in 1864 in the Confederate Reserves at Richmond; Louisa mar. in 1840 Jas. Ross Bragg, of Albemarle, and had,—Virgil, served four years in Co. K., 2nd Va. Cav. C. S. A.; Charles, Henry, Ross, Wm. Braxton, and Frank; Judith d. s. p.; Elizabeth d. s. p.; and Sarah, born June 12, 1824, mar. John Bragg, and had a son, Chas. Walker Bragg; John Fielding, b. July 29, 1829, d. s. p. 1904, Louisa county, was a private in 2nd Va. Cav. C. S. A., and Eliza d. s. p.

William Fielding, b. 1790 in Virginia, died Jan. 6. 1855, near Athens, Ala. He was stationed at Norfolk and Craney Island for five months in War 1812. In 1818 he removed from Va. to Limestone county, Alabama. Dec. 8, 1831, he mar., at Athens, Ala., Sarah Thompson, formerly of Goochland county, Va. They had issue: Mary Frances, a charming elderly lady, now living at Athens; Henry Rhodes, an actorney-at-law, d. s. p., at Harrison, Ark., 1893. Served in the 35th Ala. Regt. C. S. A.; Wm. Epa, an attorney, living at Harrison, Ark., served in the 9th Ala. Inf. C. S. A. and was Adjutant at the close of the war; mar. Dora Layton in 1878 and has eleven children. John Everett, lives at old home place in Alabama; served in the 54th Ala. Inf. C. S. A. from 1862 to 1865, and was in the Alabama Legislature 1894 and '95; mar. Jane Newby in 1860, and has four children. Louise Va. Fielding, mar. 1864 to Henry Benton Love, and removed to Lamar county, Texas, where their seven children and grandchildren are living; Eliza Fielding, mar. 1867 John Sanderson, planter, Limestone county, Ala., where their five children still live; James Madison Fielding, planter of Limestone county, mar. Alice Hall in 1874, and had nine children. Served in Forrest's Cavalry in 1864 and '65.

Eppa Fielding, Jr., b. 1796, d. 1880, served seven months in War 1812, prior to which he married Elizabeth Johnson, who bore his two children,—George, a Baptist minister, d. s. p., in Botetourt county; and Nancy, mar. Turner Wood, an Albemarle county farmer. They had three children, who died in infancy. Eppa Fielding married second, Susan Robertson, by whom he had eleven children, all born in Augusta county, where he purchased a farm near Fisherville after sec-

ond marriage. They were: 1, Mary, mar. Wilford Hall, a Rockingham county farmer. They have a dau. Anne. He served in the 52nd Va. Regt. C. S. A.. 2, Benjamin, was in the 7th Va., and was killed at Bull Run. 3, Sarah, mar. Pleasants Hall, an Augusta farmer, and has five children. 4, James, an Augusta farmer, served in the 7th Va.; mar. Mary McAllister, and has three children. 5, Susan, mar. Cyrus Connor, an Augusta farmer, and has six children. 6, William, was in the 7th Va. C. S. A.; mar. Lucy Hall, and had two children; removed to the West. 7, Mattie, mar. Richard McAllister, an Augusta farmer, and has six children. 8, Catharine, mar. David Bishop, an Albermarle farmer, and has five children. 9, Robert, d. s. p. 10, Charles, mar. Fanny Monday, and has three children. 11, Eppa, born 1835, lives at the old home place near Fisherville. He served in the 7th Va. Regt. during the war. He married, 1st, Malissa Garrison, and 2nd, Susan Chrickenberger, and has twelve children.

James Fielding, b. Dec., 1794, d. in 1886 at the old home place in Louisa. In 1832 he married Matilda Gillispie, and had issue: Charles H., d. s. p., 1855; James, d. s. p., died of typhoid fever while in the Confederate Army; Mary, mar. John O. Foster, and had four children; William, died in the Confederate Army; Jane, mar. John O. Foster, her former brother-in-law; and Samuel, who now owns the old home in Louisa. He served in the Confederate Commissary Department. Has no issue.

Nancy Fielding, b. 1792, married John Meeks, and had: Richard, d. s. p; James, killed in the Confederate Army at McDowell, Va.; Sarah, mar. her cousin, John Meeks; no issue.

The daughters of Edward and Hannah Fielding married as follows:

Anne mar. Dennis Conway, Jr., in spite of her father's apparent objection to him. Dennis Conway (Jr.) in his will prob. Mar. 25, 1721-'22, left to loving wife, Anne Conway, a negro servant, Cupid, and a white servant named Patrick Mackman, and all the rest of his personal estate for life. This included six silver spoons, a silver cup, a parcel of books, and an excellent lot of furniture. To son George a plantation now in the possession of George Reeves; to son Dennis the home place and all the rest of his estate. Three thousand pounds of tobacco each to daughters Eliza, Winifred, Judith, and Nanny. The St. Stephen's Parish Register gives the birth of Dennis C's children as follows: George, Nov. 30, 1708; Eliza, March 9, 1709; Winifred, Dec. 28, 1711; Judith, June 2, 1714; Dennis, Feb. 15, 1716. Anne Fielding Conway, born 1682, died prior to May 7, 1728, when her inventory of estate was recorded.

Sarah Fielding, born May 12, 1695, an infant at the time of her father's death, married about 1717 Thomas Davis, born Aug. 8, 1693.

and to them were born: Edw. Fielding, May 6, 1718; *James C.,* Nov. 3, 1719 (of "Broadfield"); John, July 4, 1723; Rich'd, June 15, 1725; William, Apr. 30, 1727; and Susannah, Sept. 9, 1729. See *Va. Historical Magazine,* Vol. XII.

As early as 1658 there was a Joseph Fielding in Northumberland, whose will was prob. in 1688 by wife Mary; a John Fielding who died prior to 1698; a Daniel Fielding, died in 1714; and the births of the following children of an Edward Fielding are recorded in St. Stephen's Register, none of whom I am able to place. Edward, born 1666; Anne, in 1668; Ambrose, in 1671, and Richard, in 1675.

RUFFIN FAMILY.

This family begins with 1 WILLIAM[1] RUFFIN, who appears in the records of Isle of Wight County at a very early period.

William Jewry in his will dated June 1, 1651, left a legacy to "Robert Ruffin, son of William Ruffin." In June, 1677, 2 *Robert*[2] *Ruffin,* of Surry County is mentioned as heir and administrator of William Ruffin deceased.

2 ROBERT[2] RUFFIN (William[1]) lived in Surry County, where he married about 1675, Elizabeth, widow of Capt. George Watkins, Clerk of Surry County. His will, dated May 18, 1693, was proved July 4, 1693. It names sons Robert and William, wife Elizabeth, daughter Elizabeth, and Francis Masson and Arthur Allen, "who are to have the education of my children." The will of his wife, Elizabeth Ruffin, proved in Surry County, August 18, 1714, names sons Robert and William and daughter Jane. Issue: 3, *Robert;* 4, *William;* 5, Elizabeth; 6, Jane.

3 ROBERT[3] RUFFIN (Robert,[2] William[1]) lived in Surry County, where he married Elizabeth ———— and died. His will, dated April 13, 1720, was proved February 15, 1720-21, and names wife Elizabeth, children: 7, *John;* 8, *Edmund;* 9, Joseph; 10, *Benjamin;* 11, Mary; 12, Martha; 13, *Elizabeth.*

7 COL. JOHN[4] RUFFIN (Robert,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]) married Patty Hamlin, (chart) and died in Mecklenburg County. His will, dated August 10, 1774, was proved August 14, 1775.

It names children: 14, *Robert;* 15, *William;* 16, Anne, who married Hartwell Cocke, of Surry; 17, Elizabeth, married J. N. Nicholas, of Dinwiddie; 18, John, to whom he gives a plantation in Southampton called Unota on the north side of Meherrin River; 19, Martha, who married Robert Newsom; 20, Thomas; 21, *Francis.* The two last, Thomas and Francis, are made executors. Witnesses: Henry Delony, Stephen Edward Brodnax.

14 ROBERT[5] RUFFIN (John,[4] Robert,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]), of "Mayfield," Dinwiddie County, and "Sweet Hall," King William County, married Mary Clack, daughter of John and Mary Clack and widow of Col. John Lightfoot, of Brunswick County (chart and Brunswick Records), and had issue: 22, John, vestryman of Bristol Parish; 23, James, died 1802, married Mary Roane, who had (a) Robert, married I. Lucy Roane; married II. ———— Hoskins; (b) John; (c) James, of King William County, married Agnes Dandridge; (d) Lucy, married ———— Hoskins; (e) Thomas; (f) Sterling; 24, Patsy, married Buller Claiborne, of Dinwiddie County; 25, daughter, married William Claiborne, of Dinwiddie and had (a) William Presley; (b) Lucy Herbert, married John Goode, and had Hon. William O. Goode; (c) Elizabeth, married William Burnet Browne; 26, William, born 1785, died 1825, of Brunswick County, Va., and North Carolina, married Margaret Ritchie, sister of Thomas Ritchie, of the Richmond *Enquirer,* and had (a) Archibald, married Catherine Roane; (b) Robert, of Milledgeville, Georgia; (c) William, married Frances Gildart, and had Col. Frank G., born 1816, State Auditor of Virginia; (d) Thomas; (e) Frederick; (f) John S.; (g) Albert G.; (h) Caroline (chart); 27, Judge Sterling Ruffin (1767-1822), of Brunswick County, Va., married Alice Roane and had (a) Judge Thomas, of the Supreme Court of North Carolina; (b) Minerva; (c) Mary; (d) James, of North Carolina and Alabama; (e) William S.

15 WILLIAM[5] RUFFIN (John,[4] Robert,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]), of "Rich Neck," Surry County, married (I) Jane Bland,

daughter of Theodorick Bland; (II) Lucy Cocke, of "Shoal Bay." His will, dated May 1, 1773, was proved April 26, 1774. He had issue by his first wife: 28, Theodorick Bland, and by his second, 29, Elizabeth, married Col. William Browne, of "Four Mile Tree," Surry County; 30, William, who married Nancy Edwards.

21 FRANCIS[5] RUFFIN (John,[4] Robert,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]) married I. Hannah Cocke; II. Susan Harris. By first wife he had (a) John; (b) Thomas; (c) Robert; (d) Hannah, married C. Seward.

8 CAPTAIN[4] EDMUND RUFFIN (Robert,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]), was born 1713, and died in 1790. He was of "Evergreen," Prince George County. He married Anne Simmons, widow of ——— Edmunds. She died October 26, 1749, in Sussex County; 31, *Edmund;* 32, Elizabeth, who married Nathaniel Harrison, of Prince George County.

31 HON. EDMUND[4] RUFFIN (Edmund,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]), born 1745, died 1807, member of House of Delegates 1777-1787, of "Coggins Point," and "Evergreen," Prince George County, married Jane Skipwith, sister of Sir William Skipwith, baronet, of Prestwold, Mecklenburg County. Issue: 33, *George.*

33 HON. GEORGE[6] RUFFIN (Edmund,[5] Edmund,[4] Robert,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]), born 1765, died 1810, member of the State Legislature from 1803-1806, married I. Jane Lucas; II. Rebecca Cocke, of Surry. Issue by first marriage: (a) Hon. Edmund Ruffin, born 1794, died 1865, of "Coggins Point," Prince George County, and "Marlbourne," Hanover County, member of State Senate, President Agricultural Society, Editor Farmer's Register. Fired first gun at Fort Sumter in the war for Southern Independence, married Susan H. Travis. Hon. George Ruffin had issue by second marriage: (b) Jane, married Dr. William Dupuy, of Dinwiddie County; (c) George R.; (d) Rebecca S.; (e) Juliana, married Carter Coupland, of "Vernon Borsay;" (f) Elizabeth, married Commodore Harrison H. Cocke, of "Montpelier," Surry County, and "Evergreen," Prince George County; (h) George.

10 BENJAMIN[4] RUFFIN (Robert,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]), lived in Southampton County, where he married and had (chart): 34, Joseph; 35, Benjamin; 36, Lucy, married Dr. Irvine; 37, Polly.

13 ELIZABETH[4] RUFFIN (Robert,[3] Robert,[2] William[1]), married (chart) I. ——— Kinchin, II.. Richard Cocke, 1707-1787, of "Swann Point" or "Shoal Bay" in Surry County, and had issue by second marriage: 38, Nancy, married Col. William Browne, of "Four Mile Tree;" 39, Richard, married I. Nancy Claiborne; II. Mrs. White née Crowley; 40, Lucy, married William Ruffin, and had William, married Miss Edwards and Elizabeth, married William Browne; 41, Nathaniel, of Georgia, married Rebecca Thompson; 42, Col. John, who married Lucy Herbert Claiborne.

4 WILLIAM[3] RUFFIN (Robert,[2] William[1]), married and had (chart) 43, Samuel, born 1716, of Edgecomb, N. C., and 44, Ethelred, of Edgecomb, North Carolina, married Mary Hayward, and had (a) Samuel; (b) Sarah; (c) Henry J.; (d) James; (e) Charity Anne; (f) Margaret E.

The following is an extract from a letter of the late Col. Frank G. Ruffin to Hon. Paul Cameron, Hillsboro, N. C.:

I have seen Edmund Ruffin, Sr.'s, Genealogical chart* and remember that I found myself the seventh in descent from the head of the family in Virginia, William Ruffin who settled in Isle of Wight in 1660, who accumulated immense landed property on the south side of James River by importing laborers into the country, that sort of service being at that time remunerative by a grant of so much land per capita.

As early as 1743 "Capt. John Ruffin" of Surry was a large planter. The family have generally remained on the south side of James River, but Judge Ruffin's grandfather, Col. Robert Ruffin, who in 1762 was appointed along with Robert Bolling, Roger Atkinson, William Eaton, John Bannister, Thomas Jones, Henry Walker, George Turnbull and James Field, all represented by Virginia and North Carolina families to this day, to lay off the town of Petersburg and he was designated by the act as a "gentleman," at a time when that term had sense and meaning in it.

* This chart was used in compiling the pedigree in the text.

Col. Robert, after the marriage of his daughters to Claibornes, removed to King William County, and occupied the brick mansion Sweet Hall on the Pamunkey, about ten miles above—not West Point, but West's Point, named after one of our earliest settlers. Sweet Hall, as I knew it in its decay forty years ago had still enough left of its grounds and surroundings to argue the means, tastes, and habits of a gentleman once its owner; as a ruined but distinct dyke which had once reclaimed a very extensive marsh on his large tract of land on the opposite shore of New Kent, showed what must have been his energy and enterprise.

Besides these he also owned another large tract in the immediate neighborhood of Sweet Hall in King William, called "Turcoman," which subsequently became the property of his son Sterling (father of Judge Thomas Ruffin) and a very large body of very fine land in the county of Brunswick.

He married the widow Lightfoot of the Sandy Point Lightfoots, who was born a "Clack," and was, as old Mr. John Roane, who knew her, has frequently told me, a very beautiful woman, and who had consumption for fifty years, as I learned from Judge Ruffin, who spent much of his childhood with her.

They had five children, two daughters (who married Claibornes, one of our oldest colonial names, and one left a son, Sterling Claiborne, who was probably as able a lawyer as the Judge himself, and altogether a very remarkable man,) and three sons, James, William, and Sterling. James was a captain of cavalry throughout the war of the Revolution. He settled in King William, married Mary, the daughter of John Roane, Maximus *Natu*, of "Uppowoc" on the Mattaponi in the same county, and died at a comparatively early age, having a large family of children. He was a man of parts and very high courage, but extremely lazy habits. Most of his children died in early manhood, and only one of them was a really prosperous man, he migrated early to Tennessee, and thence to Mississippi, and dying bequeathed to his children very large property. * * *

Of Mr. Sterling Ruffin I can tell you not half as much as you probably know. He had been dead some years before I came from Mississippi to Raleigh in 1824. His wife Alice was the daughter of Thomas Roane of Newington in the county of King and Queen on the North bank of the Mattaponi, about three miles below Mantapike, and where Dahlgreen was killed in 1863. * * *

My grandfather, William Ruffin, a volunteer at the age of sixteen at the siege of Yorktown, married Margaret Ritchie, daughter of Margaret Roane, sister of the two brothers above named engaged in commerce at Fredericksburg with Hugh Campbell, who had married a daughter of Thomas Roane, and who was so crippled in business that he had to

draw out. He and his brother Sterling subsequently left that part of Virginia and moved to Brunswick, where, joining the Methodist church, they became most intimate with the fathers respectively of George A. Dromgoole and the Gholsons, and continued so until death.

From Brunswick they moved to North Carolina, as you know. They had both been gay men, but they became very devout, and gave up as many of this world's vanities as most persons of their persuasion; though neither of them could surrender blooded horses as entirely as Bishop Ravenscroft did—possibly because they had obtained a dispensation from the circuit riders;—and my uncle Sterling bequeathed his to his son, the Judge, in whose family I hope they still remain.

These two brothers were, as you know, devotedly attached to each other, and Judge Ruffin once told me, in proof of the fact, that his father, when dying, grasped my grandfather's hand exclaiming: "Twin brothers; brothers by nature, and brothers in faith." They were both in earnest. The late Governor Morehead of your State told me that he had heard my uncle Sterling "exhort," with the usual gesticulations of his sect, until he would sit down thoroughly exhausted, panting and wet with perspiration.

"He was a powerful man very much of the figure and face of my brother James, bowlegs included," Judge Ruffin once said to me. My grandfather, from a defective physique perhaps, he was never robust, and for many years suffered greatly from rheumatism—or possibly from other causes, was less demonstrative and exhortatory. He died when I was in my ninth year, so I remember but very little of him. But I have always heard, and from several sources, that he had fine conversational powers. At a dinner given to Mr. Thomas Ritchie in Essex, his native county, in 1840, I heard that gentleman declare that whether his political principles were good or bad, he was more indebted for them, both in depth and clearness of conviction, to his brother-in-law, William Ruffin, than to any other man. Judge Ruffin told me that he was a man of fine intellect and excellent business capacity, who would have prospered in life, but for the uncontrollable extravagance of his wife.

Like many, or rather, most youths of his period, his education was defective, owing to the derangements of the war; but at the age of sixty-six he retained enough of his Latin to superintend the preparation of my daily tasks for Dr. McPheeters; always preceded by the Lord's Prayer, repeated between his knees; and to him and the late Wm. Bingham, of Orange, I owed such proficiency that I took my Latin degree at the University of Virginia when I was but little over sixteen years old.

Of another branch of the family, the founder in this country, was Edmund Ruffin, also a son of William, of Isle of Wight, great-grand-

father of the distinguished agriculturist of that name. He was a carpenter and made a large fortune, more, as his great-grandson used to say, than his son and grandson could spend in their short lives—they each died of gout at forty-three. I do not suppose him to have lost caste by his trade; for in the manners of that time, arbitrary and capricious there as always, a gentleman no more came to be such by following a trade, than did a Scotch Cameron by stealing cattle, or a Ruthven by attempting to kidnap a king. Archibald Harwood, of King and Queen, a first cousin of Judge Ruffin, through his mother, was made a coach maker "because," as the old lady told me, "he would not learn his book," and she was resolved he should not grow up in idleness. And Arthur Brockenborough, son of Dr. Brockenborough who married a *Roane,* aunt of Judge Ruffin, was a carpenter—made such because he was not bright at letters—and was the superintendent of all the carpenters' work done upon the University of Virginia. All honor to their sensible parents.

It was the son of that Ruffin, the carpenter, and the grandfather of Ed. Ruffin, Sr., as we knew him, who was a member of the convention called to consider the adoption of the Federal Constitution, who on the 25th of June, 1798, voted *against* the ratification of that instrument along with Patrick Henry, the orator of Virginia, and with Theodorick Bland, his own colleague, Stephens Thompson Mason, William Grayson, George Mason, James Monroe, Benjamin Harrison, John Tyler, *Thomas Roane,* and others. * * *

This gentleman and his descendants resided on the south side of James River below the head of tide, and had all the characteristics of the people among whom they were brought up. There are other branches of the same family in the same region, of whom I knew but little; though they are not remotely allied to me. They all, however, occupy the status of gentlemen in their respective communities.

The traditions of our settlement here vary. One account is that our first ancestor was a parson of the English Establishment. Another, somewhat more ambitious, is that we are a part of the family of the Ruthvens of Pertshire in Scotland, who, attainted and driven into exile in France, returned to England on the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, whence some members of the family migrated to this country. I have no means to decide this point, nor to tell whether we are of the Noble or Scullion branch of the family—whether we are descended from gentlemen, or whether

> "Our ancient but ignoble blood
> Has crept through scoundrels ever since the flood."

Your request that I will state the characteristics of the family involves me in some difficulty and more delicacy, as the people were of

my own blood, and from what I knew of them, somewhat mixed in their characteristics. They have been within my range of observation, pretty thorough-going men, whether their leaning was to business or pleasure; and I have seen a good many instances of these extremes. They were almost universally high spirited, high tempered, quick to take and resent offense, but placable, except when their personal dignity was invaded or even threatened; when, though not relentless, they were unforgiving.

They have not generally been obtrusive of their opinions, though tenacious of them, and have been too independent and outspoken to make politicians, though they have generally possessed that manliness of bearing and that geniality of manner which have given them the sort of popularity which is based on respect and good will. They have always relished rural pursuits; and my father (who went to Mississippi by the advice of Judge Ruffin, very early in the present century, and landed at Fort Adams with his forty dollars and two shirts in his saddle bags), is the only one of the name I have ever heard of, who had made a fortune by trade. He got out of it as soon as he could, and went to planting cotton and raising horses and cattle in Wilkinson county. Further than this I do not know that they have peculiarities which separate them very widely from their fellow citizens.

ROANE FAMILY.

(Continued from page 200.)

ERRATA: In line 20 from top of page 196 "Sarah Upshur" should be *Sarah Upshaw*. In lines 3 and 2 from bottom of page 198 "Samuel F. Harwood Roane" should be *Samuel F. Harwood*. In line 5 from top of page 199 "3 William Roane married Judith C. Ball" should be "3 William Roane married Judith (?) Ball."

NOTES ON THE ROANE PEDIGREE OF SAMUEL F. HARWOOD, pages 199, 200.

I.

Thomas Roane was a member of the Essex County Committee, in 1774, and in 1777 the governor commissioned him as county lieutenant; William Roane as Colonel; William Smith as lieutenant-colonel, and John Beale as major of the Essex militia. He removed to the parish of St. Stephens,

King and Queen county, and in 1787 was assessed for 3,417 acres. He died in 1799 at "Newington" his residence on the Mattaponi, and his will was proved in King and Queen County Court, April 8, 1799, and afterwards recorded in Essex county, March 18, 1839. The following is a copy:

WILL OF COL. THOMAS ROANE.

In the name of God Amen I, Thomas Roane of the Parish of St. Stephens & County of King & Queen do make this my last will & testament. Imprimis I lend to my beloved wife for & during her natural life, she committing no wilful waste thereupon all my lands in the Parish of St. Stephens and County aforesaid viz. my tract called Newington, my tract called the Neck quarter, the tract I purchased of Richard Rowe and which was conveyed to me by Col. Brooke's executors, the slipe of land I purchased from Mr. Richard Brooke for which I paid him fifty pounds but have not yet received a deed, the slipe of land I purchased of Anderson Lipscomb, the piece I purchased of Robert Pynes and the small piece purchased of Benjamin Pynes. Item I lend unto my beloved wife for and during her natural life forty slaves proportioned in value to the whole of the slaves now in my possession in sex, age and quality and it is my meaning that these slaves shall be of same value with reference to the value of all my slaves as the said number of forty bears to the whole number of my slaves as aforesaid, and it is further my meaning that those slaves shall be allotted her out of those living on the lands lent her as above and that Billy the blacksmith shall be one of the number. Item I lend unto my beloved wife during her life, the stocks of all kinds, which shall be on the plantations lent her as above called Newington, and the Neck quarter at the time of my decease as also the whole of my household and kitchen furniture and the plantation implements and utensils which may be on the said plantation at the time aforesaid provided that my said wife shall furnish each of unmarried children as they shall marry or come of age respectively such a proportion of household furniture as the other children have been supplied with. I also devise that the sums necessary to be expended in furnishing the repairs of the buildings be paid for out of my estate and that my said wife shall be entitled to all the provisions and liquors which may be in the house at the time of my decease.

Item. I give devise and bequeath unto my daughter Sarah Campbell for and during her life the tract of land whereon she now lives including the buildings and as much more of my land adjoining to be laid off in a convenient manner as well as will make up the quantity

of seven hundred acres. I also give unto my said daughter during the term aforesaid the following negroes to wit. James, Jery Bland, Winney, Lydia and Suckey being the residue of the negroes formerly by me lent to her husband Hugh Campbell in his lifetime (he having with my leave sold two of them named Pitt and Jenny and another named Dixon having died) together with the increase of said negroes since the time of the loan aforesaid and there future increase. I also give unto my said daughter during the term aforesaid the stocks I have already delivered to her in lieu of a sum deficient in the value of a tract of land formerly given to her said husband, the whole of the said lands negroes & stocks to be equally divided among all the children she may leave & the descendants of such as may be dead succeeding to the shares of their respective ancestors immediately on the decease of my said daughter.

Item. I give and bequeath unto my daughter Margaret Garnett until the period when her youngest son Thomas Harwood shall or in the event of his death before would have arrived at the age of twenty one years, one half of the profits of the tract of land I formerly lent my said daughter and whereon she has erected buildings. I also lend unto my said daughter during her life the negro wench Amey now in her possession together with her two children and their future increase.

Item. I give and devise the other moiety of the said tract of land in equal proportions to her two sons Archibald and Thomas Harwood and their heirs, but in case of the death of either of them under age and without issue, then the whole to go to the survivor, as also shall the moiety of the said tract and the negroes with their increase before limited to their mother from and after the determination of her interest therein respectively and if both her & her sons above named shall be dead, under age and without issue, at the time of the determination of her interest in the said land and negroes respectively then the whole of the said tract and the negroes with their increase shall return to my estate and be equally divided among all my other children and the descendants of such as may be dead, standing in the place of their respective ancestors excepting my said daughter Garnett and her descendants..

Item. I give and bequeath unto each of her said two sons Archibald and Thomas Harwood a negro boy and girl of about their own ages to go over together with their increase in case of the death of either and both of them as before stated and specified in the manner above limited. Item and whereas I have been bound heretofore as security for Christopher Harwood in his lifetime, it is my will that if my estate should ever be compelled to pay anything on that account the sum or sums so paid shall be reimbursed to my said estate from and out of the property above devised to my said daughter and her

children in equal rate & proportion. Item before the negroes hereby lent to my said daughter shall be delivered to her by my executors, she or some person for her shall give bond with sufficient surety to my said executors not to alien transfer or otherwise dispose of the said negroes or any of them so as to impede or frustrate the effect of the limitations thereof at the time they shall take effect by the determination of her interest therein. Item I do nominate and appoint my sons Thomas & Samuel Roane and the survivor of them Trustees for the said Archibald and Thomas Harwood to receive their legacies for them and otherwise carry into effect the provisions of this will in their behalf. Item I do give and confirm unto my son-in-law Sterling Ruffin (he having before had a dividend of land) the nine negroes heretofore delivered to him and named as follows: viz: Peter Sam Anthony Charles Violet Judy Sarah Young Sarah and Sally Pickles together with their increase since the time of the said delivery and their future increase, as also the stocks heretofore delivered to him. Item I give and devise and bequeath unto my son-in-law Richard Barnes and his heirs forever a tract of land in the County of Essex whereon he now has a quarter to be conveniently laid off so as to contain the quantity of five hundred acres—also the stocks already delivered to him as well as the negroes to wit: Isaac, Gilbert Robin Amy Jany Judy Nancy Phill & Pegy together with their increase since the said delivery and their future increase. Item. I give devise and bequeath unto my two sons Thomas & Samuel Roane & their heirs forever the forge tract of land including the tract lately purchased from Robert Baylor to be held by them and their heirs in severalty according to the line of division lately agreed as run by William Jones. I do also give bequeath and confirm unto my said two sons respectively the stocks and negroes heretofore delivered to them together with the increase thereof since the said delivery and their future increase the negroes delivered to my son Thomas being named as follows, to wit: George Dick Billy Jany Kate Janet Easther Mary Robin & their descendants—to my son Samuel being named George Nelson Tom McGeorge Charles Nancy Tilloh Lydia and Sarah—and whereas the purchase money for the tract of land bought from Baylor is still due it is my will and desire that after the payment of my debts and pecuniary legacies the residue of what money may remain on hand either as having been in my possession at the time of my decease, having been collected from my debtors, or what may be conveniently spared from the proceeds of my crops shall be applied in payment of the debt aforesaid, but any deficiency which may exist after the application of the above funds shall be paid in equal proportions by my said two sons Thomas and Samuel Roane. Item I give and devise and bequeath unto my two sons Thomas and Samuel Roane, and to

the survivor of them in trust for the use & benefit of my daughter Patsy Hipkins Ritchie and her children for and during her life the tract of land now in possession of her husband Archibald Richie by delivery from me called Smiths, the seven negroes now also in his possession by delivery as aforesaid named Charles Godfrey Hancock Aggy Hannah Patience and Venus and two others such as will make the dividend equal in value to those given to my other daughters together with the increase of the said negroes since the said delivery and their future increase as also as many of the stock now in the said Archibald Richie's possession by delivery from me as aforesaid as will make her proportion equal to that given to Richard Barnes and the said land slaves and stocks in trust from and after her decease to be divided in equal proportions among all the children my said daughter may leave and the descendants of such as may be dead they representing their respective ancestors, and if at the time of her death all of the children of my said daughter should be dead under age and without issue then all the above property bequeathed in this clause to return unto my estate and be divided equally among my children and the descendants of such as may be dead representing as aforesaid except my daughter Garnett and her descendants. Item I give devise and bequeath unto my two daughters Lucy & Catherine Roane and their severally and respectively as much of my land to be conveniently laid off from my lands not herein particularly devised as if of the value of Five Hundred pounds for each to be estimated according to the same ratio of value as has governed in the valuation of the lands heretofore given to my other daughters—and I also give and bequeath unto each of my said daughters a proportion of negroes and stocks such as shall be equal in number and value to the proportions respectively heretofore given to my other daughters. Item I give devise and bequeath unto my son John Roane and his heirs from and after the decease of his mother all the land hereby devised to her for her life but in case his said mother shall be living when he comes of age and it should be the mutual desire of them both my will is that he then take possession of the plantation before mentioned called the Neck quarter. Item. My will is that my son John shall receive after my decease a proportion of the negroes and stocks equal in number & value to each of those his brothers Thomas & Samuel have respectively received. Item it is my will and desire that what negroes, stocks and plantation utensils may remain after the proportions above devised to my beloved wife and children are first allotted and set shall be equally divided among all my children and the descendants of such of them as may be dead representing their respective ancestors excepting my daughter Garnett and her descendants and provided also that the share of my daughter Ritchie shall go in trust to the same

persons be limited in the same manner and to the same uses as the other property hereinbefore devised to her—and it is further my will and desire that after the death of my beloved wife all the property which may remain in her possession as at that time except the land shall go in the same manner and under the same exceptions and limitations as before mentioned in this clause. Item It is my will and desire that the residue of my lands in the Counties of Essex & Caroline after the several dispositions hereinbefore made are allotted and set apart and my lots in the Town of Port Royal and Dunkirk shall be equally allotted and proportioned among all my daughters and the descendants of such of them as may be dead standing in their places respectively excepting my daughters Campbell & Garnett and their descendants and provided that that proportion which may fall to my daughter Ritchie shall be limited to the same persons in trust for the same uses as the land and property hereinbefore devised to the use of her and her children. Item. It is my will that all the dispositions of lands herein before made requiring a division and allotment be allotted and set apart by my executors or in the event of their declining to do it or its being disagreeable to the devisees thereof by such persons as may be appointed by said executors and such of the said devisees as may be of age or their husbands on their behalf—and whereas it may be better that the whole of land intended for my daughter Ritchie should be in one entire tract it is recommended to my executors to substitute for the land now in her husbands possession called Smiths and devised by this will, other land of the same value which may be convenient to be annexed to her proportion of the residuary land in which case the land so to be substituted shall enure to all intents and purposes as the other is intended to do by this will and that other shall in that event be considered as a part of the residyary land. Item it is my will that of the titles of any of the lands herein before devised or heretofore conveyed to any of my children or their husbands shall prove defective so as that they may be deprived of the whole or any part thereof the loss accruing by such eviction shall be made good to them respectively out of my estate, if before a distribution thereof and if after then each child (excepting my daughter Garnett & her children) and their respective representatives shall contribute to her or them or theiir representatives so losing a proportion of the value so lost according to the proportions they may severally have received of my estate. Item my will is that my Blacksmith's Tools shall go to my beloved wife together with the Blacksmith and fall into my estate after her decease and go as the other personal estate lent to her. Item My will is that my daughter Campbell shall have the absolute property of the stocks herein bequeathed to her not withstanding any thing in this will before contained to the contrary. Item. I do

hereby nominate and appoint my two sons Thomas and Samuel Roane executors of this my last will hereby revoking all others by me heretofore made and I do bequeath to each of my said sons a likely young negro man or woman at his election in consideration of the duties hereby imposed and in lieu of commissions and in that event of either of my said sons refusing to act, the other shall be entitled to the negro intended for him.—In testimony whereof I have hereunto signed my name and affixed my seal this twenty seventh of January one thousand seven hundred and ninety nine.

THOMAS ROANE [Seal].

Signed sealed published and declared by the Testator as and for his last will in presence of us the subscribers who have signed our names thereto in his presence and at his request he being of sound and disposing memory and understanding.

JOHN ROANE
SPENCER ROANE
ROBERT POLLARD
JOHN MEALY
THOMAS BROOKE

Probated in King & Queen County Apl. 8 1799
Record in Essex 18 Mar 1839

ROBERT POLLARD, C. C.

This will names a son John not mentioned by Mr. Harwood. It also shows that his daughter Patsy Hipkins married her cousin, Col. Archibald Ritchie, brother of Thomas Ritchie, editor of the *Richmond Enquirer*.

III.

William Roane, son of William Roane and Sarah Upshaw, was a burgess for Essex in 1769, 1770, 1772, 1774, and qualified as King's deputy-attorney in 1768. He was a member, with his brother, of the Essex County Committee in 1774, and was Colonel of the Militia of Essex in 1777. He married twice: (1) Miss Ball; (2) Anne ————, who survived him and afterwards married 2dly Frederick William Hearne. A case in one of the Law Reports show that Frederick William Hearne and Anne, his wife, sued Thomas Roane, John Roane, James Upshaw and William Latane, executors of William Roane, defendants. The plaintiff Anne is stated to be the

widow of William Roane. He died in November or December, 1785, without a child by the plaintiff Ann.

It is sometimes stated that William Roane's first wife, Miss Ball, was named Judith, but this seems incorrect. The following will of Spencer Ball shows that Judith Ball married John Crallé.

Will of Spencer Ball, Gent., of North'd Co., 1767, gives eldest son, Spencer Mottrom, 1150 a. land adjoining that of Hon. Presley Thornton and Mr. Monroe, and land settled on him by Act of Ass'y in lieu of Lowry's trust; his mill and appurtenances and 38 slaves. To son William the land he bought for him of Col. James Ball, and on wh. William then lived, with all the slaves, stock, &c. To son James the land formerly belonging to his brother William, and that bought of Peter Spencer Hack, Benjamin Knight and Major Wm. Tate, with 15 slaves. To son Jesse the upper part of my land called "Black Point," 40 a. with 15 slaves. To gr. sons Spencer and John, sons of John Crallé, 6 slaves now in possession of their mother, Judith Crallé, and names Hon. Presley Thornton and Wm. Roane, his son-in-law, guardians of said gr, sons. To gr. son Spencer Ball 1 slave; to gr. son Thomas Roane do; gr. son James Kenner 2 slaves; son-in-law Wm. Roane 1 slave and £100 over and above what he has had as his wife's portion; to son-in-law Winder Kenner 1 negro and £450 as his wife's portion. To his sons all his stock, deer, household furniture, &c., &c. To his wife her dower in full out of part willed to sons James and Jesse. Residue to son Spencer M., his sole ex'r. Wit., Andrew Robertson, Wm. Greenwood, Jas. Wilkins.

Spencer Ball was son of Joseph Ball and Mary Mottrom, his wife. The latter was a daughter of Spencer Mottrom, who was son of Major John Mottrom and Hannah Fox, daughter of Capt. David Fox. John Mottrom was the son of Col. John Mottrom, of Northumberland County. (See QUARTERLY XVII, 53-55.) Spencer Mottrom was a nephew of Frances Mottrom, wife of Hon. Nicholas Spencer, Esq., Secretary of State of Virginia, from 1678-1689. Thus the name descended to the great jurist Spencer Roane, though he was not a blood relation of Hon. Nicholas Spencer. He married first, Anne, daughter of Patrick Henry.. Joseph Ball was first cousin of George Washington's mother, Mary Ball (Hayden, *Va. Genealogies*).

The following is the will of William Roane recorded in Essex County:

WILL OF WILLIAM ROANE.

I, William Roane of the County of Essex do make this my last will & Testament.

Imprimis. I give to my son Thomas Roane all my lands in the Cty of King & Queen to him and his heirs forever.

Item. I give to my son Spencer Roane all my lands in the Coun.y of Essex with the grist & saw mills to him & his heirs forever he having the sawing done for the necessary buildings & repairs on the plantation I now live on & which my beloved wife is to possess after my decease during her widowhood: also the sawing done for the necessary buildings & repairs for my son Thomas on the Plantation devised him in the County of King & Queen each finding the timber for their own use and to prevent disputes in either case it is my desire that my exor's shall determine what shall be necessary and also to fix a value on the Meadow Track of Land which valuation is to be definitive & to be paid by my said son Spencer to my two daughters as part of their portions.

Item. My desire is that my negroes Richmond & Joe shall continue at the mills which I give to my son Spencer & be vested in him.

Item. I give to my daughter Judy Roane a negro girl named Grace, the daughter of Frances, for a maid to her and her heirs.

Item. I give to my daughter Sally Roane a negro girl named Rachel, the daughter of Chloe, for a maid to her and her heirs.

Item. My desire is that all the residue of my negroes shall be valued, as well as those already given to my sons Thomas & Spencer in order to make a general stock & each of my daughters shall be vested with a full Proportion of the whole with my two sons to them all & their heirs.

Item. My wish & desire is that in addition to what of my household furniture my wife shall be entitled by her marriage contract that my exor's allow & assign her as much more during her widowhood as they shall judge necessary for her use. But if she should marry that part so assigned shall be immediately returned into my estate & go as my other personal estate.

Lastly I constitute & appoint my two brothers Thomas & John Roane & my friends James Upshaw and —— Wm. Latané Exor's of this my last will and Testament. As witness my hand & seal this first day of November in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred & eighty five.

W. ROANE [Seal].

Signed Sealed & Published & Declared to be my last will & Testament in presence of

WILLIAM LATANE
JOHN HAILE
THOMAS DIX, JUNIOR
LEWIS DIX
THOMAS DIX
JOHN ROANE, JUNR

My will & desire in addition to the above & that they shall be received as Part, viz. I desire that my Exor's may select such part of my personal estate as they judge most proper for the payment of my debts as above.

W. ROANE [Seal].

JOHN HAILE
THOMAS DIX, JUNR
THOMAS DIX, SENR
JOHN ROANE, JUNR
LEWIS DIX

At a court held for Essex County at Tapp[a] on the 19th day of December 1785 this last will and Testament of William Roane decd with a Codicil thereto annexed was offered to prob. by Thomas Roane John Roane, James Upshaw and William Latainé the exor's therein named who made oath thereto as the Law directs and the same being also proved by John Haile, Thomas Dix Junr and Thomas Dix three of the witnesses thereto are ordered to be Recorded.

Test: HANCOCK LEE Clk.

Duly Recorded.

Test: THOMAS POLLARD D Clk

Spencer Roane, son of William Roane and Miss Ball, was born April 4, 1762. He attended William and Mary College, in 1780, and was a member of the Phi Beta Kappa Society. He was subsequently a member of the House of Delegates, a judge of the General Court, and a judge of the Supreme Court of Virginia. He married Anne Henry, daughter of Patrick Henry, and his children are given in *Virginia Mazazine* V., 89, 90. Mr. Jefferson had the highest opinion of his talents and wanted to make him President of the United States, but he died Sept. 4, 1822. There are sketches of him in the *Richmond College Publications* and in the *Virginia Law Journal*. His son, William H. Roane, became a United States Senator.

"Judith Roane, daughter of William Roane and Miss Ball, married Mr. Proudfit." (P. 199.)

The following is copied from a family Bible of the Proudfits:

PROUDFIT RECORD.

(Copied from Proudfit Family Bible.)

John & Judith Proudfit were married Nov. 21, 1788.

Elizabeth, their daughter, was born Feb. 21, 1790. Died Sept. 9th, 1791.

Jane was born Oct. 18, 1791.

James & William were born Oct. 29, 1793.

John Houston was born on his Mother's birthday Aug. 16th 1795 she was 28 years old.

Elizabeth Roane was born Feb. 18th 1797.

Andrew was born July 14th 1798.

Thomas was born July 22, 1799 & d. Aug. 24, 1799.

Henrietta was born Sept. 27, 1800, & died Oct. 13th 1800.

Judith Ann was born Nov. 23rd 1801.

Judith Proudfit, the Mother, died May 18th 1802 aged 34 years 9 months & 2 days old.

John Proudfit, the father, died 21 Sept. 1812, aged 47 years 8 months & 2 days.

Died James Proudfit, their oldest son, Feb. 4rh, 1829.

Died their youngest son, John Houston Proudfit, Aug. 30th, 1840.

Elizabeth Roane, the daughter, died Sept. 20, 1803, being then 6 years 7 mo. & 2 days old.

The following is an account of the descendants of Jane Proudfit, who married Jonathan Wood:

Jonathan Wood, son of Dr. Jonathan and Sarah (Leathe) Wood, was born in Stow, Mass., about twenty miles from Boston, May 8, 1783. He early in life removed to the South, settling at Norfolk, Va., where he engaged in the wholesale mercantile business. For sometime he and Gen. Winfield Scott, who was his intimate friend, together kept "bachelor's hall" in Norfolk. In 1811, June 1st, he married Jane Proudfit, daughter of John Proudfit (the large merchant and ship owner of Norfolk, who lost several ships by French spoliations in 1800), and of Judith Roane Proudfit, niece of the distinguished Judge Roane of the Supreme Court of Virginia.

The wife of Jonathan Wood was a lady of superior qualities of heart and mind—accomplished, having had the best advantages of education which Philadelphia of that day could afford. Possessed of supe-

rior musical culture, and above all endowed with that best jewel of true womanhood—the Christian grace, which made her so faithful a wife and mother.

Jonathan Wood afterwards moved to North Carolina, being first in Halifax, then in Nash, then in Franklin counties, where he lived many years and reared a large family of children. At that time there was a great impulse of emigration from both North Carolina and Virginia to "The West." Accordingly, in 1840, we find him leaving two married daughters in the "Old North State," removing with the rest of his family to Tennessee, which was then called "going out West." Indeed, one may now cross the continent in much less time and with far less trouble than was then required to travel from North Carolina to west Tennessee. The "Western District" of Tennessee was then new and sparsely settled territory, Memphis being but a small village. In Brownsville, Jonathan Wood again became a merchant, associating with himself in business his sons James and Spencer; but his death occurred a few years after his settling in Tennessee.

He died March 13, 1847. His young sons James and Spencer continued the business, and through their energy and popularity soon became successful merchants. Mrs. Jonathan Wood lived to see all of her children married and settled in comfort and prosperity, all being near her excepting Mrs. Blount and Mrs. Thorpe in North Carolina. She died in 1856, loved and respected by the entire community.

Jonathan and Jane (Proudfit) Wood had eleven children—four died in infancy—the remaining seven as follows: (1) Sarah Ann; (2) Virginia; (3) James Proudfit; (4) William; (5) Spencer Roane; (6) Jane; (7) Georgiana.

Sarah Ann Wood married Benjamin H. Blount. Had: (1) George Washington; (2) Benjamin James; (3) Angelina; (4) Wm. Henry; (5) Mary Jane; (6) Thos. Spencer; (7) John Wood; (8) Sarah Caroline; (9) Virginia; (10) Joseph Roane.

Virginia Wood, born 1817, married John Thorpe in Nash county, N. C. Had: Henry Roane; John Houston; William Lewis; Franklin Jesse; Daniel Wood; Annie Virginia; Alexander Proudfit.

James Proudfit Wood, born near Louisburg, N. C., Dec. 31, 1819, moved to Brownsville, Tennessee, in 1840; married, Jan. 3. 1848, Anne G. Perkins, daughter of a wealthy planter of Haywood county, Tenn. James P. Wood and his wife Anne G. had only one child, Mary. She has done much to secure the records of her branch.

Mary Wood, daughter of James Proudfit and Anne G. Wood, was born Feb. 3, 1852. She married, Dec. 8, 1874, J. W. E. Moore, a leading and distinguished lawyer of the Brownsville bar. Had four children: Annebel, Mary Virginia, Wood, Janes W. E.

William Proudfit Wood married Ariadne Leonard.

Spencer Roane Wood married Mary Jane Howell.

Jane Wood married Wm. R. Leigh. Had: Lida, William R. After the death of her first husband she married the second time W. P Bond. Had: Thos. Wood, Katherine Pugh, Mary, James Wood, Georgia, Spencer Wood, Edward Hale.

Georgiana Wood married Henry L. Taylor. Had: Edmund H., William Wood, Jennie, Mary Pettus.

Edmund H. Taylor married Neppie Harbert. Had: Henry, Harbert, Georgiana, Mary, Edmund.

William Wood Taylor married Mollie Fontaine. One child, Virginia.

Jennie Taylor married John R. Bond. Had: Clara, Bate, Mamie, Virginia, John, William and Penelope.

Mary Pettus Taylor married R. L. Cochran. Had: Henry, Mary, Marcus. Married at his death Jno. L. Cummins. Had: John.

(Taken from Wood Genealogy, compiled by Wm. S. Wood, published Worcester, Mass., 1885, and added to by Miss Annebel Moore, Brownsville, Tenn.)

"Molly Roane married Archibald Ritchie" (p. 199). On August 21, 1753, Francis Jerdone, of Yorktown wrote: "Last week Mr. Archibald Ritchie was married to a daughter of Capt. Roan's, with whom he gets £500 down and as much more at her father's death." (QUARTERLY XI., 240.)

The following is from a letter of Frank Gildart Ruffin, who was for several years State auditor of Virginia, and was a man of much influence in politics. The letter was dated June 1, 1870, at "Summer Hill," Chesterfield County, Virginia, and addressed to Hon. Paul Carrington Cameron, of Hillsboro, N. C.

And now for the *Roanes*. I knew John Roane, Jr.,* well. He died at "Uppowoc," in King William, his patrimony, in 1838, aged 72. He was a living encyclopedia of Virginia pedigrees for men and horses. He told me that the earliest ancestor of his family that he had ever heard of was hung in Bacon's (my wife through her great-grandmother, a Burwell, has the honor to be a relation of Bacon, who was first (*sic*) cousin to the first wife of Lewis Burwell of Carter's Creek in Gloucester

* The reference is to Hon. John Roane, son of William Roane and Sarah Upshaw his wife. He served in U. S. Congress from 1809 to 1815, and from 1827 to 1837.

county) Rebellion (1676) in the Dragon Swamp with a grape vine, a fact of which he was so proud, as to say that he was the only man he knew who was glad to trace his descent from the gallows.† His own grandfather, he said, had started in the Northern Neck of Virginia, on small beginnings. * * * If so, he must have been a man of considerable force of character, as his children all married well. That Roane * * * left children, Col. Wm. Roane (the clerk of Essex county, whose fine, bold, old fashioned, Washington style of handwriting I have frequently seen and admired); Thomas Roane of Newington, in the county of King and Queen on the north bank of the Mattaponi; John Roane, *Max Natu* of "Uppowoc," in the county of King William, on the south bank of the Mattaponi; one daughter, Molly, who was married to Archibald Ritchie, a Scotch merchant of Tappahannock, and another, Sarah, who was married to Dr. John Brockenborough, the elder, also of Tappahannock, and Lucy,, who married first, Richard Barnes; second, Thomas (Moore ?) Fauntleroy Brockenborough.

The three brothers lived about twenty miles apart, almost at the three corners of a triangle, each on a large tract of land, and each owning other large detached tracts. Someone once asked one of them why, considering their very great attachment to each other, they had not settled close together; and the reply was sensible and characteristic: "It is precisely because of our attachment to each other, and our wish to preserve it, that we have separated, upon full deliberation, and gone so far off that when we meet at each other's houses it will be as brothers and guests. Brothers should never join fences; for if they should agree, it is likely their wives and children might not; and if *we* quarrel, there will be the devil to pay."

They were too old to take an active part in the field during the Revolutionary war, but they kept things straight at home, and carried on generally with a pretty high hand. Col. Wm. Roane would get into politics, and then he was pretty rough on the Tories. * * * An old lady who remembered him well, told me that one of the patriotic songs she used to sing with other young Whigs of both sexes contained this refrain—all she could recollect:

> "When side by side, Col. Will Roane tied
> A negro and a Tory."

John Roane was not less zealous and prompt than his brother William in support and aid of the cause of the Revolution, of which let

† There is nothing in this. Charles Roane, the emigrant, was a loyalist of wealth, and after Bacon's death a party of rebels, under Gregory Walklate, burnt all his houses down and carried away most of his goods.—*Va. Magazine*, XVI., 69.

this instance be cited in proof: At that time, and for years afterwards, every gentleman considered himself bound to dine at the courthouse tavern on public days, and John Roane had taken his seat for that purpose at one King William court. Exactly opposite to him sat two persons, one of whom was a public man suspected by some person of secret Tory sympathies; and the other a bolder man, was more openly disaffected to the American cause. John Roane had just poured out a glass of wine and sent the servant with the bottle to a gentleman at the upper end of the table with an invitation to drink with him, and was watching to catch his eye, when he caught the sound of some treasonable remark made by the Tory to the pseudo Whig. At that moment he bowed, merely sipped his glass to his friend, and then staved it at the head of the Tory; but it missed him and struck the other on the ear emptying its contents therein. Instantly springing to his feet he addressed them both with the expression, "Badly aimed, but d—d well hit." He was never in public life, I believe, farther than to act as Justice of the Peace.

Col. Thomas Roane was a less turbulent man than either of the others, but was equally determined, and a man of great personal strength as the others were. But he had a rather squeaky voice, which on one occasion misled a gentleman to his cost. He was at the time member of the Senate of Virginia, and had given a vote which greatly displeased a leading gentleman and a man of virulent and arbitrary temper on the other side. When the body adjourned this gentleman, whose measure had failed, was very violent in the abuse of several of his opponents, who, as he was known to be a very powerful man and a great fighter, took it rather quietly. Just as they were descending the stairs, he overtook Thomas Roane with the expression "And you too, d—n you," when Roane seized him by the coat collar, whirled him over the banister, and keeping him suspended, remarked in his small voice: "One more word and I'll let you drop to the bottom. I'll teach you how to curse your equals." The gentleman for once in his life was prudent and saved his bones by holding his tongue. He was several times, I think, in public life as a member of the Legislature, and was, as I have intimated, in the Convention, voted against the adoption of the Constitution of the United States, and was colonel of militia at the battle of Yorktown.

Besides his farm at Newington, he had other and large estates in King and Queen, Essex and Middlesex, and was a very successful manager of his property. Though his hospitality was bounded only by the size of his house; and *that* contained fifty-four beds, which were all filled once a month—King and Queen Courthouse was only two miles distant—and many of them occupied at other times; and though he had eight (certainly nine, and probably ten) children out of a total born

to him of fifteen in all—ten daughters and five sons—yet he gave them all estates; some as much as 1,500 acres of land. Of his daughters, Alice was married to Sterling Ruffin; Katherine to my uncle, Archy Ruffin; Martha to my greatuncle, Archibald Ritchie, brother of Thomas; Lucy to Mr. Edwin Upshaw, and Margaret, or Peggy, first to Mr. Harwood and afterwar ds to Mr. Thos. Garnett, the father of Col. H. T., Jno. R., and James Garnett. Of his sons, John came to a very unfortunate end; Sam, a very amiable but weak man, died early, and Thos. (Tom Roane of the Forge as he was called, after the name of his farm) died in the prime of his life universally bewailed by his county men, who rode, some of them, more than fifty miles to proffer aid, and show their interest in him. Wm. H. Roane has told me that he was the finest fellow he had even known, the most engaging and the most universally beloved. The same qualities he transmitted to his son Thomas Roane, of King William, my very, very dear friend, who though anchylored by rheumatism at ten years of age, and thenceforward unable to walk, or even to sit upright, yet bore his misfortune with such uncomplaining, manly, cheerful, happy fortitude, and manifested such marvelous energy in the management of his small property, such eager concern in public affairs—he was an ardent and untiring Whig against overwhelming odds—such lively sympathy in the trials and triumphs of his personal friends, such love of right and such scorn of wrong as won him the love of all good, and the homage of the bad men. I never heard a harsh word spoken of him.

The sons of John Roane, Jr., of "Uppowoc," were not distinguished, but John Roane, Jr., himself, I always thought, was one of the most remarkable men I ever knew. He was of square, massive stature; broad shouldered, lank, full muscled, with a face to match; blue eyes; brown, waving, stiff hair, short and combed straight back, a la Methodist; a full, broad, and deeply transverse wrinkled forehead, most prominent midway between the eyes and hair, with a Grecian nose, slightly depressed at the bridge; with lips meeting exactly and firmly over his teeth, and a chin square, lean and slightly curved upwards, he looked to me to be the very impersonation of force. He might, if he had spoken, have made a much greater mark than he did; but he had early acquired the influence he possessed in his county, had a hot and arbitrary temper, which had never been checked among his own people, and he had become too fixed in his habit of impatience to conciliate opposition or trust himself in legislative debate.

He had become a petty monarch when he had the intellectual scope of an emperor. But he was great on the hustings. When I first recollect, stump speaking, as we called it (and which Cicero says destroyed the liberties of Greece, as Longinus says it destroyed the liberties of Rome), and after them I take the liberty to say it has gone far to de-

stroy the liberties of the United States, had not so far usurped the place of conversational discussion as it has since done; and I have often seen rival candidates confront each other on the court green as game cocks in the pit, surrounded by their friends, and each applaud as he drove his gaffs into the other. So apt was he, by nature, and so expert by practice, in this kind of digladiation, that in course of time he had no competitors, and always walked over the course when he chose to go into public life. Yet his language, never elegant or refined, was common, oftentimes even to vulgarity. But it was always clear, full of homely illustrations, which everybody could understand, and of proverbs, which all could apply, and like Patrick Henry's whose reputation Mr. Wirt has injured by trying to brighten it, it was pressed into the hearts of his auditors by a dramatic force which could not be resisted. Giants do not fight with the polished weapons of fencing masters, but with huge crushing rocks.

Once, during the War of 1812, he beat John Taylor, of Caroline, for Congress, and in one of the conflicts at the Bowling Green, Taylor's own stronghold, Taylor, who opposed the war said: "But Mr. Roane, the taxes sir, the taxes."

"Well, sir; the taxes, what of them? I do not fear taxes, nor do I the people. They want freedom; they don't want money."

"How high would you tax for this war

"I would tax them, sir, ten cents in the dollar."

"Suppose, sir, that should be insufficient?"

"Then, sir, I would tax them twenty cents in the dollar."

"But suppose they would not stand it?"

"Then, sir, I would not ask them. I would tax them thirty, forty, fifty, sixty, seventy, eighty, ninety, one hundred cents in the dollar. Col, Taylor, I would tax the shirts off the peoples' backs and make them free, whether they would or not. What is your next bugbear?"

The effect was electric.

Compare the only sentence I have ever heard from Patrick Henry's speech in the Parson's case: "Such is the avarice, such the insatiate thirst for gold of these ecclesiastical harpies that they would snatch the last hoe cake from the widow and the orphan." * * *

Like his uncle William, he occasionally got into frolics. On such an occasion, returning one dark night from court, when he had become exasperated with the Federalists, he overtook a pedestrian and asked his name. "John Adams," was the reply. "Well," said he, dismounting, "I shall give you a thrashing." "Why, what for, Mr. Roane? You know me, Jack Adams, who lives on your land." "No, sir; you said John Adams; you made yourself a Federalist, now you must take the consequences," and then and there he thrashed him with his horsewhip. Yet this man, whom I knew very well, a harmless, inoffensive, worthless

creature, had been his tenant for many years, and so continued to his death, rent free.

He was public spirited within his own territory, a very kind neighbor to those who tried to help themselves, the most indulgent despot to his slaves I ever knew—I have known him to feed them all on green peas smeared with butter for days at a time—a tender, but most capricious father, devoted to thoroughbred horses (he despised professional racers, rating them much below their horses), and to agriculture and horticulture, with more hobbies than any man I ever saw. He was warm in his friendships, inveterate in his prejudices. I think his model of a public man was Nat. Macon. He was always initimate with him. He also was very fond of John Randolph, whom he had known at the Grammar School, when he himself was a student at Williamsburg, and who, he told me, was the most beautiful and attractive boy he had ever seen. He was also a great admirer of the late John Wickham, whom he appreciated and tolerated in spite of his supposed Royalist sentiments. * * * He was never in the Senate of the United States, but he was often a member of the Legislature, going there or to Congress, whenever he chose. He was also a member of the Virginia Convention of 1829. His strong sense, his fine logical powers, his remarkable consistency, his boldness, his splendid conversational powers, always gave him great influence in every deliberative body.

I never saw him dressed but in homespun of his own manufacture, nor in a carriage, but of his own making (the nondescript affair of the kind that I remember, he never called anything else than "The thing"), nor with horses but of his own raising. He had but one carpet in his house, calling them "dirt hiders."

He had a fair set of china, but his favorite table service was of pewter. "His father," he said, "had been satisfied with that." His table was the most abundantly supplied and the best—not the richest—I ever saw. He used honey whenever he could as a substitute for sugar, because he said sugar was protected by the tariff.

But I find I am becoming garrulous about this grand old original, and go to the next prominent member of the family, Judge Spencer Roane, son of Col. William Roane, the clerk of Essex. His character was as strongly marked as his cousin John's, but he had fewer detracting peculiarities, owing to very different early association. Called to the bar very early, he gained his first cause against his preceptor, the celebrated "Lawyer Warden," who said when twitted with it, "Oh! I taught the boy to speak," and he rose rapidly in reputation. He went into the Legislature as soon as his age permitted, took part in the debate the day of his admission, and rose so rapidly in favor and public repute that he was made judge at the age of twenty-six or twenty-seven.

He remained on the bench until his death in the sixty-third year of

his age, dying of a disease contracted by neglecting a tooth, whilst he was engaged in a very exciting case, I think, against Treasurer Preston. Of his career as Judge I am not fitted to speak. Of the part he took in politics, there is now no record except in the files of the *Enquirer,* and in very dim tradition.

At the time when that paper was the most influential in the Union, he was its guiding spirit, and contributed largely to its columns in brief paragraphs or in more elaborate essays. His residence was the headquarters of the famous "Richmond Junto," and the resort of all members of the Legislature of his own faith. His influence in his party was second only to Mr. Jefferson's, and was willingly subordinated to his, by himself.

He was in person more than six feet high, and though rather thin was very strong, and so active that when a young man he could walk under a bar that touched his head, and turn round and leap it. His hair was light brown; his eyes—he was near sighted—a very light gray, rather sleepy looking in repose; his nose and chin like John Roane's; his forehead not so full, broad or expansive. He was a man of social, though strictly temperate habits, especially fond, as John Roane was, of young company and jocularity, good tempered in the main, but choleric, and very violent when roused, and a strong partisan. * * *

His first wife was the daughter of Patrick Henry, who said when Judge Roane asked his consent to the union: "Sir, you do me honor." She died, leaving several children, among them one who died early—a young man of great promise. His second wife was the daughter of Col. Hoskins, a wealthy gentleman of King and Queen. By her he had one daughter, who was married first to my uncle Albert and then to Governor McDonald, afterwards Chief Justice of Georgia. She adopted and brought me up, and was the only mother I ever knew.

His son, William H. Roane, by his first wife, was in Congress in 1816, nearly as soon as he was old enough to go, John Roane having retired in his favor.* He served one term only, when he was defeated,

---

* He was born in 1788, studied at William and Mary, a representative in Congress from 1815 to 1817, and a U. S. Senator from 1837 to 1841. He married Patsy Selden, and died at Tree Hill, near Richmond, March 11, 1845.

and was elected immediately a councillor of State. That office he held for several years, when he removed to his patrimony, "Spring Garden," on the Pamunkey, in Hanover, a few years after his father's decease, whence he was sent almost immediately to the Legislature. But in a very few years he came back to Richmond, and was shortly thereafter elected to the Senate of the United States. Failing health induced his retirement, and settling down at his beautiful residence and estate,

"Tree Hill," about three miles below Richmond, which he had bought in 1838, he expired in 1845, in the fifty-seventh year of his age. I knew him well and loved him dearly. His talents, though of high order, had never been systematically improved; for in early life, when habits are formed, his health was so exceedingly delicate that study, or even continued residence in one place, was impossible. But he had lived much in the world, had been everywhere; but especially at his father's house, the most intellectual men of Virginia gathered, and had studied in that school as the Athenians did in the Porch of the Academy.

Such oral instruction as he had received, so he communicated, *con amore,* to many a delighted companion, or more youthful disciple.

An old member of the Legislature, a plain man, of strong sense and wide observation in Virginia, once told me he had seen a good many abler men in public life than Wm. H. Roane, but never as honest a one. I thought the remark eminently just. He had a decided dash of the eloquence of his grandfather (Patrick Henry), and was filled with the peculiarities of the Roanes, high spirited, soft hearted, strong minded, generous, impulsive, but with all their rough traits softened down by a more extended intercourse with the world.

The wife of Col. William Roane was a Miss Ball, of the Northern Neck, and her mother was a *Spencer,** two of the oldest names in the colony; and one of them, Ball, the maiden name of that hard, masculine, strong minded Christian woman, Mary Ball, the mother of General Washington, whom sentimentalists love to compare in attributes with the Virgin Mary. I expect that she was a near cousin of Judge Roane, though the family never claimed the relationship, and I never heard them allude to it.

The wife of Thomas Roane, of Newington, was, I think, a Miss Hipkins, of most reputable family.

John Roane, of "Uppowoc," married, I believe, a Latané, of a Huguenot family, from whom was descended Captain Latané, that was killed in the late war near Capt. Wm. Newton's, as is represented in a picture by Artist Washington, full of tenderness and beauty and *imagination.*

Alice Roane (who married Sterling Ruffiin) was first cousin to John Roane, Jr., to Judge Spencer Roane, to Dr. John Brockenbrough, to Judge William Brockenbrough, of the Supreme Court of Virginia, to Thomas Ritchie, of the *Enquirer,* to Col. Archibald Ritchie, likewise her brother-in-law, for many years a leading man in Essex, and the

* She was Mary Mottrom, daughter of Capt. Spencer Mottrom, nephew-in-law of Hon. Nicholas Spencer, Secretary of State and acting Governor, who died Sept. 23, 1689. For Mottrom Family see QUARTERLY, XVIII., 54.

hottest and most ill-tempered man I ever knew, if he *was* my uncle, but a man of great pluck and force of character; and to Capt. John Ritchie, who so far retrieved an ill-spent and dissolute life by a heroic death on the field of battle in Canada in the last British war, that the General Assembly several years afterwards voted a commemorative sword to his oldest surviving brother. He was also first cousin once removed to Wm. H. Roane and to Judge John W. Brockenbrough, of Lexington, son of Judge William, who up to the war was Judge of the Western District of Virginia. She was thus of near kin to several persons, who in their day were among the most distinguished men of the State.

THE CARLYLE FAMILY.

DESCENDANTS OF JOHN AND SARAH (FAIRFAX) CARLYLE.

(Continued from 212)

SARAH CARLYLE,[2] eldest dau. of John[1] and Sarah (Fairfax) Carlyle, m. William Herbert of Alexandria, Va. Issue:

1. John Carlyle Herbert,[3] of whom presently.
2. William Herbert,[3] of whom presently.
3. Margaret Herbert,[3] of whom presently.
4. Sarah Herbert,[3] m. Rev. Oliver Norris. Issue:
    1. Eliza Mary Norris,[4] of whom presently.
    2. Edward Norris,[4] d. un.
    3. Rev. Herbert Norris,[4] m. Juliet Rawle. Issue:
        1. Carlyle Norris,[5] killed in Civil War.
        2. Frank Norris,[5] d. y.
5. Anne Herbert,[3] d. un.
6. Eliza Herbert,[3] d. un. 1865.
7. Lucinda Herbert,[3] d. un.

JOHN CARLYLE HERBERT,[3] eldest son of William and Sarah (Carlyle[2]) Herbert, b. 1777, d. 1 Sept. 1846, Member of Congress from Maryland 1816-1820. m. 7 Mar. 1805, Mary dau. of Thomas and Anne Snowden. Issue:

1. Thomas Snowden Herbert,[4] M. D., of whom presently.

2. Ann Caroline Herbert,[4] b. 24 Mar. 1808, m. Henry Fairfax of Ashgrove (q. v.).
3. William Fairfax Herbert,[4] b. 25 Mar. 1810, d. un. 2 July 1846.
4. Sarah Carlyle Herbert,[4] b. 2 July 1812, d. 30 Sept. 1850, m. 15 Nov. 1833, (first wife) Archibald Blair Fairfax, U. S. N. and C. S. N., b. 22 May 1809. Issue:
   1. Eugene Fairfax,[5] b. 26 May 1838, C. S. A. killed in action 2 May 1862, un.
   2. Julian Fairfax,[5] b. 14 Dec. 1841, d. un. Jan. 1877.
   3. Archibald Carlyle Fairfax,[5] b. 24 Aug. 1843, C. S. A. d. 4 Aug. 1879, m. 30 April 1873, Virginia Caroline, dau. of William H. Redwood. Issue:
      1. John Carlyle Fairfax,[6] b. 6 Dec. 1874. Lieut. U. S. A.
      2. William Redwood Fairfax,[6] b. 3 Dec. 1876.

      Archibald Blair Fairfax m. 2 Mar. 1852, (second wife) Eliza Mary,[4] dau. of Rev. Oliver and Sarah (Herbert[3]) Norris. Issue:
      3. Edward Herbert Fairfax,[5] b. 11 Dec. 1852, d. s. p. 1878.
      4. Llewelyn Cary Fairfax,[5] b. 28 Aug. 1855, m. 1880, Priscilla Hall, dau. of Reginald Wright, M. D.
      5. Arthur Percy Fairfax,[5] b. 2 Feb. 1857, m. 2 Feb. 1882, Nannie Hunter, dau. of Hon. John Blair Hoge.
5. Alfred Herbert,[4] b. 18 June 1814, d. un. 1879. Lieut. U. S. A. 1836. Afterwards a prominent civil engineer.
6. Mary Virginia Herbert,[4] b. 17 Mar. 1816, m. 3 May 1836, Captain Thomas T. Hunter, U. S. N. and C. S. N. Issue:
   1. Dr. Frederick Hunter,[5] m. ———— Lipscomb.
   2. Thomas Hunter,[5] C. S. N. d. un.
   3. Madeline Hunter,[5] m. Major Edmondstone.
   4. Julia Hunter,[5] m. Colonel Franklin Harwood U. S. A.

5. William Hunter,[5] d. un.
6. Charles Hunter,[5] d. un.
7. Sarah Hunter,[5] Prot. Episcopal Sisterhood.
8. Minnie Hunter,[5] d. un.

7. Emma Bryant,[4] b. 22 Mar. 1818, d. 20 Dec. 1874, m. 16 Nov. 1837, Rev. William Bryant of Va., d. 1846. Issue:
   1. Mary Bryant,[5] b. 2 May 1839, d. un.
   2. William Bryant,[5] b. 16 May 1841, d. un.
   3. J. C. Herbert Bryant,[5] b. 19 May 1843, Capt. C. S. A. m. 17 June 1872, Ruth, dau. of Henry Barnes Claggett. Issue:
      1. Mary Herbert Bryant,[6] m. 23 Nov. 1898, Maj. Thomas Jellis Kirkpatrick U. S. A. Issue:
         1. Fortunata Kirkpatrick,[7] b. Manila P. I., 2 June 1900.
         2. Carlyle Herbert Bryant Kirkpatrick,[7] b. Manila, P. I., 23 Dec. 1903.
      2. William Bryant,[6] m. 19 Nov. 1902, Marion Twiggs Chalmers. Issue:
         1. Elizabeth Chalmers Bryant,[7] b. 29 Aug. 1903.
      3. Agnes Carlyle Bryant,[6] m. 31 Oct. 1906, Lieut. John Downes, Jr., U. S. N. Issue:
         1. John Downes, Jr., b. 5 Mar. 1909.
      4. Arthur Herbert Bryant,[6] m. 11 Dec. 1907, Geraldine Mason Taylor. Issue:
         1. John Carlyle Herbert Bryant,[7] b. 11 April 1909.
      5. Ruth Bryant,[6] d. 27 Feb. 1909, m. 30 Oct. 1907, Lieut. Nelson Brown, Jr., U. S. N.
      6. Marion Barnes Bryant,[6] m. Ensign Herbert Fairfax Leary,[6] U. S. N. (q. v.)
   4. Alfred Estell Bryant,[5] d. in.

8. Julia Herbert,[4] b. 30 Feb. 1820, d. 8 Oct. 1846. un.
9. Eugenia Fairfax Herbert,[4] b. 7 April 1822, d. 12 Mar. 1841, un.

10. Lucinda Herbert,[4] b. 13 Jan. 1824, d. 18 Jan. 1910, m. 29 Mar. 1855, John L. Eversfield. Issue:
    1. Mary Herbert Eversfield,[5] m.
    2. Emma Eversfield,[5] m. ——— Moncure.
    3. John Carlyle Eversfield,[5] m.
    4. Edward Eversfield,[5] m.
    5. Eugenia Fairfax Eversfield,[5]
11. John Carlyle Herbert,[4], b. 16 April 1826, d. in.
12. Eliza Herbert,[4] b. 26 April 1827, d. 18 May 1883 un.
13. Edward Herbert,[4] b. 28 Nov. 1830, m. 29 Jan. 1851, Mary H. Barnett. Issue:
    1. William Pinkney Herbert,[5] b. Feb. 1852, m. 3 Nov. 1876, Rebecca, dau. of Robert and Jane (Carter) Beverly. Issue:
        1. Edward Herbert,[6] b. 2 Oct. 1877.
        2. Robert Beverly Herbert,[6] b. 25 July 1875.
        3. William Pinkney Herbert,[6] b. 28 Aug. 1883.
        4. Guy Fairfax Herbert,[6] b. 13 Sept. 1889.
        5. John C. Herbert,[6] b. 14 Nov. 1891.

THOMAS SNOWDEN HERBERT,[4] M. D., eldest son of John C.,[3] and Mary (Snowden) Herbert, b. 13 Mar. 1806, m. first 2 Nov. 1830, Camilla Hammond, d. 25 Dec. 1845, m. secondly Elizabeth Duer, who d. s. p. Issue by first wife:

1. John Carlyle Herbert,[5] b. Nov. 1821, d. un. 1885.
2. James Rawlings Herbert,[5] Colonel C. S. A., b. 5 Aug. 1833, d. 3 Aug. 1884, m. 10 Nov. 1868, Elizabeth Coleman, dau. of Mark Alexander, b. 6. June 1849, d. 27 May 1885. Issue:
    1. Anne Gordon Herbert,[6] m. 24 Oct. 1894, W. Kennedy Boone. Issue:
        1. Elizabeth Alexander Boone,[7] b. 23 Oct. 1895, d. 8 April 1897.
        2. William Kennedy Boone,[7] b. 1 Mar. 1897.
        3. James Herbert,[7] b. 28 May 1899.
        4. John Marshall Boone,[7] b. 11 Oct. 1900.
        5. Sarah Kennedy Boone,[7] b. 27 Feb. 1902.

6. Carlyle Fairfax Boone,[7] b. 2 Nov. 1905.
7. Camilla Herbert Boone,[7] b. 16 Feb. 1908.

2. Camilla Hammond Herbert,[6] m. April 1900, Wm. Pinkney Whyte, Jr.
3. Mark Alexander Herbert,[6] d. un. 19 Dec. 1899.
4. Mary Coleman Herbert,[6] m. 11 June 1900, H. Warren Buckler, M. D. Issue:
   1. Alice Lawrason Buckler,[7] b. 24 July 1903.
   2. Humphrey Warren Buckler,[7] b. 27 May 1906.
5. Sarah Carlyle Fairfax Herbert,[6] m. 18 Oct. 1899, Courtland H. Smith. Issue:
   1. Courtland Hawkins Smith,[7] b. 14 Aug. 1900.
   2. Mark Alexander Smith,[7] b. 31 Oct. 1901.
6. Elizabeth Snowden Herbert.[6]

3. Matthias Hammond Herbert,[6] b. 1835, d. 1900 un.

WILLIAM HERBERT,[3] second son of William and Sarah (Carlyle[2]) Herbert m. Henrietta Maria, dau. of Benjamin Tasker and Elizabeth (French) Dulany of Va. Issue:

1. Hare Powell Herbert,[4] d. 1883 s. p.
2. Daniel French Dulany Herbert,[4] d. s. p.
3. Upton Heath Herbert,[4] d. July 1900, m. Sarah C. Tracey of New York. s. p.
4. Elizabeth Dulany Herbert,[4] b. Feb. 1822, d. 2 May 1901.
5. William Herbert,[4] b. 25 Dec. 1825, d, 10 Mar. 1901, m. 12 Jan. 1869, Susan, dau. of Robert Eden and Anne (Morson) Scott. Issue:
   1. Margaret Lee Herbert.[5]
   2. Ann Herbert.[5]
   3. Frances Scott Herbert.[5]
   4. Ellen Whiting Herbert.[5]
   5. William Carlyle Herbert.[5]
   6. Arthur Herbert.[5]
   7. Susan Herbert,[5] m. 14 June 1906, George Doswell Brooke. Issue:
      1. Sue Herbert Brooke, b. 18 April 1907.
      2. George Doswell Brooke, b. Sept. 9, 1909.

8. Elizabeth Dulany Herbert.[5]

6. Arthur Herbert,[4] b. 27 July 1829. Colonel 17th Va. Regt. C. S. A., m. 5 July 1865, Alice Goode, dau. of William Gregory. Issue:

1. Maria Dulany Herbert,[5] m. 1890, John Daingerfield Hooe. Issue:

1. Bernard Hooe,[6] d. in.

2. Alice Gregory Herbert,[6] m. 3 June 1891, John Henry McCauley. Issue:

1. Alice Herbert McCauley, b. 9 Nov. 1894.

3. Marrianne Herbert.[5]

4. Florence Harrison Herbert.[5]

5. Nora Carlyle Herbert,[5] m. 3 June 1908, Robert Pegram Holt.

MARGARET HERBERT,[3] eldest dau. of William and Sarah (Carlyle[2]) Herbert, d. 1858, m. Jan. 1800, Thomas 9th Lord Fairfax, b. 1762, d. 21 April 1846. Issue:

1. Albert Fairfax,[4] b. 15 April 1802, d. May 1835, m. 8 April 1828, Caroline Eliza, dau. of Richard and Eliza Snowden. Issue:

1. Charles Snowden Fairfax,[5] 10th Lord Fairfax, b. 8 Mar. 1829, d. 4 April 1869, m. 10 Jan. 1855, Ada, dau. of Joseph S. Benham, s. p.

2. John Contée Fairfax, M. D.,[5] 11th Lord Fairfax, b. 13 Sept. 1830, d. 28 Sept. 1900, m. 8 Oct. 1857, Mary, dau. of Colonel Edmund Kirby, U. S. A. Issue:

1. Caroline Snowden Fairfax,[6] b. 20 Aug. 1858.

2. Josephine Fairfax,[6] b. 20 Aug. 1865, m. 1892, Tunstall, son of Marsden and Anne (Williamson) Smith. Issue:

1. Josephine Tunstall Smith,[7] b. 29 May 1894.

2. Louise Tunstall Smith,[7] b. 19 July 1895.

3. Albert Kirby Fairfax,[6] 12th Lord Fairfax, b. 23 Jun. 1870.

4. Mary Cecelia Fairfax,[6] b. 26 Dec. 1871.

5. Charles Edmund Fairfax,[6] b. 29 April 1876.

6. Frances Marvin Fairfax,[6] b. 29 Aug. 1878, m. 1903, Edward Lowndes Rhett.

2. Henry Fairfax,[4] of Ashgrove, b. 4 May 1804, d. in Mexican War, 14 Aug. 1847, m. 9 Oct. 1827, Ann. Caroline,[4] dau. of Hon. John C.[3] and Mary (Snowden) Herbert. Issue:
   1. Raymond Fairfax,[5] C. E. and C. S. A., b. 19 July 1829, m. 7 Jan. 1865, Anna Burford. Issue:
      1. Ronald Randolph Fairfax,[6] b. 22 Aug. 1870, m. 1901, Annie Ridge, dau. of Charles Early.
      2. Guy Percy Fairfax,[6] b. 21 Feb. 1872, m. 1900, Elsie Ida Crook.
      3. Henry Reginald Fairfax,[6] b. 2 Aug. 1875.
      4. Isabella Christian Fairfax.[6]
      5. Ada Raymond Fairfax.[6]
   2. Eugene Fairfax,[5] b. 1831, d. in.
   3. Mary Isabel Fairfax,[5] b. 20 June 1834, d. 9 July 1851.
   4. Albert Fairfax,[5] M. D., b. 4 June 1836, C. S. A. d. un.
   5. Herbert Carlyle Fairfax,[5] b. 29 April 1838, C. S. A. m. 3 June 1861, Jane Davies, dau. of Dr. Frederick Baker. Issue:
      1. Eugenia Chalmers Fairfax.[6]
      2. Caroline Herbert Fairfax.[6]
   6. Eugenia Herbert Fairfax,[5] b. 28 Mar. 1842.
   7. Henry Fairfax,[5] b. 1 May 1844, d. Aug. 1846.
   8. Henry Malcolm Fairfax,[5] b. 9 Oct. 1849.

3. Orlando Fairfax,[4] M. D., b. 1806, d. 1882, m. 21 May 1829, Mary Randolph, dau. of Wilson Jefferson and Virginia (Randolph) Cary. Issue:
   1. Virginia Randolph Fairfax,[5] b. 1832, d. in.
   2. Edith Fairfax,[5] b. 1833, d. 1839.
   3. Orlando Cary Fairfax,[5] b. 13 Feb. 1836, d. un. 1897.
   4. Monimia Fairfax,[5] b. 1837, d. 1889, m. 1866, Hon. George Davis, of Wilmington, N. C., Attorney General C. S. A. Issue:
      1. Mary Fairfax Davis,[6] b. 1875, m. 1895, Minor Fairfax Heiskell.

2. Monimia Cary Davis,[6] b. 1877, m. 1898, David Macrae.

5. Jane Cary Fairfax,[5] b. 1840.

6. Randolph Fairfax,[5] b. 23 Nov. 1842, C. S. A., killed in action 13 Dec. 1862.

7. Ethelbert Fairfax,[5] b. 23 Jan. 1845, C. S. A., d. 1907.

8. Mary Edith Fairfax,[5] b. 1847, m. 1877, J. J. Moncure, M. D. Issue:

1. Orlando Fairfax Moncure.[6]

2. Rosamund Moncure.[6]

9. Thomas Fairfax,[5] b. 1849, d. un. 1907.

4. Raymond Fairfax,[4] b. 1808, d. 1813.

5. Eugenia Cary Fairfax,[4] b. (1811), d. 1880, m. first, Edgar Eilbeck Mason. Issue:

1. Ethelbert Fairfax Mason,[5] d. un. 1906.

2. Edgar Eilbeck Mason,[5] d. un. 1907.

She m. secondly Charles Keith Hyde, son of Simeon and Katherine (Cleveland) Hyde. Issue:

3. Reginald Fairfax Hyde,[5] d. un. 1907.

4. Edward Henry Hyde,[5] m. first Mary Pierson Hyde, m. secondly, G. Morgan.

5. Arthur Cleveland Hyde,[5] d. in.

6. Margaret Herbert Hyde,[5] m. Neville Herbert,[5] third son of George William Carlyle[4] and Mary Anne De Butts (Dulany) Whiting (q. v.)

6. Ethelbert Fairfax,[5] b. 1814, d. 1827.

7. Aurelia Herbert Fairfax,[4] b. 1816, d. 1884, m. 1852, Colonel James W. Irwin. Issue:

1. Fairfax Irwin, M. D.,[5] m. Alice Poulson. Issue:

1. Ethel Irwin.[6]

2. Augusta Irwin.[6]

3. Reginald Irwin.[6]

2. Augusta Neville Irwin,[5] m. Richard P. Leary, U. S. N. Issue:

1. Herbert Fairfax Leary,[6] m. 28 April 1909, Marion Barnes, dau. of J. C. Herbert[5] and Ruth (Claggett) Bryant.

2. Neville Leary.[6]

8. Lavinia Fairfax,[4] b. 1818, d. 1822.

9. Monimia Fairfax,[4] b. 1820, d. 1875, m. Nov. 1838, Archibald, son of Wilson Jefferson and Virginia (Randolph) Cary. Issue:
   1. Falkland Cary,[5] d. s. p.
   2. Constance Cary,[5] m. Burton Norvell, son of J. Burton Harrison. Issue:
      1. Fairfax Harrison,[6] m. Hetty, dau. of John B. and Frances (Daniel) Cary. Issue:
         1. Constance Cary Harrison.[7]
         2. Ursula Fairfax Harrison.[7]
         3. Richard Fairfax Harrison.[7]
      2. Francis Burton Harrison,[6] m. first, Mary Crocker. Issue:
         1. Virginia Randolph Harrison.[7]
         2. Barbara Harrison.[7] He m. secondly Mabel Judson. Issue:
         3. Burton Harrison.[7]
      3. Archibald Cary Harrison,[6] m. Helena Walley. Issue:
         1. Mary Harrison.[7]
   3. Clarence Cary,[5] m. Elizabeth, dau. of Howard Potter. Issue:
      1. Guy Fairfax Cary.[6]
      2. Howard Cary,[6] d. s. p.

10. Reginald Fairfax,[4] b. 1822, d. un. 1862, U. S. N.

ANNE FAIRFAX CARLYLE,[2] second dau. of John[1] and Sarah (Fairfax) Carlyle, b. 22 Jan. 1761, d. 20 Mar. 1778, m. 1777, Henry Whiting of Gloucester County, Va., b. 10 Dec. 1748, d. 28 Oct. 1786. Issue: An only son, CARLYLE FAIRFAX WHITING,[3] b. 20 Mar. 1778, d. 8 Sept. 1831, m. 14 Dec. 1797, Sarah Manly, dau. of Colonel Charles and Mary (Manly) Little, b. 1 June 1776, d. 12 Nov. 1835. Issue:

1. Charles Henry Whiting,[4] b. 4 Mar. 1801, d. 16 Sept. 1847.
2. John Carlyle Whiting,[4] b. 11 May 1804, d. 3 Oct. 1821.
3. Mary Matilda Whiting,[4] b. 9 Jan. 1806, d. 24 Mar. 1815.

4. Frances Beverly Whiting,[4] b. 25 July 1807, d. 19 July 1828.
5. George William Carlyle Whiting,[4] of whom presently.
6. Fairfax Herbert Whiting,[4] of whom presently.
7. William Wilmer Whiting,[4] of whom presently.
8. Ellen Marr Whiting,[4] b. 14 June 1817, d. 28 Sept. 1903.
9. Norman Howard Whiting,[4] b. 17 Feb. 1820, d. 27 Sept. 1823.

GEORGE WILLIAM CARLYLE WHITING,[4] fourth son of Carlyle Fairfax,[3] and Sarah Manly (Little) Whiting, b. 5 July 1809, d. 17 Dec. 1864, m. 24 Dec. 1838, Mary Anne De Butts,* dau. of John Peyton and Mary Anne (De Butts) Dulany, of Welboune, Loudoun county, Va., b. 8 Oct. 1818, d. 11 Jan. 1894. Issue:

1. Julia Beverly Whiting.[5]
2. Norman Dulany Whiting,[5] d. in.

---

* Mary Anne De Butts[1] (d. 1855), wife of John Peyton Dulany, born at Grantham, Lincolnshire, England, 13 Nov. 1786, had a very interesting line of descent.

She was the daughter of Dr. Samuel De Butts (d. 1814), a native of Ireland, and Marianne Welby (d. 1828), daughter of Richard Welby (d. 1782), of Welbourne Hall, Lincolnshire, and Anne King, his wife, daughter of Neville King (d. 1730), of Ashby-de-la-Launde, Lincolnshire, and Mary Middlemore, his wife, of Somerby Hall, Grantham, who was the great-granddaughter of the distinguished Robert Sanderson, D. D., Bishop of Lincoln (d. 1662), a devoted Royalist and chaplain to Charles I., who used to say, "I carry my ears to hear other preachers, but I carry my conscience to hear Dr. Sanderson and to act accordingly." He was of the same family as Sir Nicholas Sanderson, Viscount Castleton.

Her mother, Marianne Welby, wife of Dr. De Butts, was the first cousin of Sir William Earle Welby, 1st Bart. (d. 1815), of Denton, near Grantham, and member of Parliament.

Her great-grandfather, Neville King, was the son of Edward King (d. 1692) and Bridget Neville, daughter of Sir Gervase Neville (d. 1654), "of the once great and powerful family of Neville, Lords of Raby, who became Earls of Westmoreland," and Katherine Hutton, his wife, daughter of Sir Richard Hutton, Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, York.

(See Burke's Peerage. Also "Lincolnshire Pedigrees," Harleian Society Publications, Volume 51, 1903.)

3. Clarence Carlyle Whiting,[5] of whom presently.
4. Nina Carlyle Whiting.[5]
5. Alice Herbert Whiting,[5] m. 24 Nov. 1880, Richard Henry Spencer, son of Henry Spencer, a lineal descendant of James Spencer, Jr. (1692), of "Spencer Hall," Talbot County, Md., whose ancestor, Robert Spencer came from Bedfordshire, England, and was allied to the noble family of that name.
6. Mary Anne Dulany Whiting,[5] d. un., 5 April 1881.
7. Rose Welby Whiting.[5]
8. Neville Herbert Whiting,[5] of whom presently.
9. Guy Fairfax Whiting,[5] of whom presently.
10. Richard Henry Dulany Whiting.[5]
11. Maud Edith Whiting.[5]

CLARENCE CARLYLE WHITING,[5] second son of George Carlyle[4] and Mary Anne De Butts (Dulany) Whiting, m. 29 Jan. 1877, Marion Gordon, dau. of C. Hughes and Agnes (Gordon) Armistead. Issue:

1. Clarence Carlyle Whiting,[6] d. aet. 13.
2. George Armistead Whiting,[6] m. 12 Feb. 1901, Mary Susan, dau. of Lawrence Lewis and Mary Susan (Gay) Butler. Issue:
   1. Eleanor Custis Whiting,[7] b. 3 Jan. 1902.
   2. Lawrence Lewis Butler Whiting,[7] b. 9 April 1906.
3. Norman Stewart Whiting,[6] d. in.
4. George William Carlyle Whiting,[6] m. 30 Oct. 1907, Nathalie Contee, dau. of J. Marshall and Annie (Gregg) Thomas. Issue:
   1. Gordon Carlyle Whiting,[6] b. 20 June 1909.
5. Agnes Gordon Whiting,[6]
6. Mary Dulany Whiting,[6] d. in.
7. Marion Dulany Whiting.[6]

NEVILLE HERBERT WHITING,[5] third son of George William Carlyle[4] and Mary Anne De Butts (Dulany) Whiting, d. 20 Jan. 1908, m. Oct. 1881, Margaret Herbert,[5] dau. of Charles Keith and Eugenia Cary (Fairfax[4]) Hyde. Issue:

1. Edgar Mason Whiting,[6] b. 24 Dec. 1882. Lieut. U. S. A.
2. George William Carlyle Whiting,[6] b. Nov. 1885. Lieut. U. S. A.
3. Neville Herbert Whiting,[6] b. 4 May 1887.
4. Brian Fairfax Whiting,[6] b. Nov. 1888.

GUY FAIRFAX WHITING,[5] M. D., fourth son of George William Carlyle[4] and Mary Anne De Butts (Dulany) Whiting, m. 11 Nov. 1884, Alice Horn, dau. of Dr. Matthew Dykeman and Mary J. (Mott) Van Doren. Issue:

1. Guy Fairfax Whiting,[6] b. 28 Aug. 1885, d. 6 Jan. 1886.
2. Carlyle Fairfax Whiting,[6] b. 15 Mar. 1887, d. 1 Jan. 1889.
3. Alice Van Doren Whiting,[6] b. 6 March 1891.
4. Julia Beverly Whiting,[6] b. 5 Aug. 1892.

FAIRFAX HERBERT WHITING,[4] fifth son of Carlyle Fairfax[3] and Sarah Manly (Little) Whiting, b. 25 April 1813, d. 28 Mar. 1890, m. Margaret Douglas. Issue:

1. Charles Henry Whiting.[5]
2. Fairfax Herbert Whiting.[5]
3. Francis Beverly Whiting.[5]
4. Douglas Whiting.[5]
5. Margaret Carlyle Whiting.[5]

WILLIAM WILMER WHITING,[4] sixth son of Carlyle Fairfax,[3] and Sarah Manly (Little) Whiting, b. 7 April 1815, d. 12 May 1888, m. Lucy E., dau. of Francis Beverly and Mary (Burwell) Whiting. Issue:

1. Florence Whiting,[5] d. un., 29 Sept. 1886.
2. Carlyle Fairfax Whiting,[5] C. S. A. killed in the war. 3 Nov. 1864.

WALKER AND WRAY FAMILIES.

In QUARTERLY IX., 127, is an account of the Walker family. The following extract is from Call's Sketches of the Judges of the Virginia Supreme Court in the 4th volume of his Reports:

Mr. Keith, a quaker gentleman of good fortune, migrated from Great Britain to the town of Hampton in Virginia about the year

1690. He was well educated, and I have seen, in Mr. Wythe's Library a folio volume written by him, upon mathematical and other subjects. He had five daughters, one of whom married Mr. Walker, a wealthy gentleman on Back River, near Hampton, whose son afterwards removed to the county of Brunswick; another married Mr. Wray, of Hampton, the ancestor of the present family of that place; another married Mr. Dewey, a lawyer of distinction, who settled in the County of Prince George about four miles below Petersburg and died without issue; another married Mr. Taylor, the captain of a merchant ship, who likewise settled in the County of Prince George near Petersburg, and was possessed of a moderate but independent estate; and another married Mr. Wythe, of the town of Hampton, who had a good farm on Back River and died intestate survived by a wife, a daughter and two sons—Thomas, the eldest, who was his heir-at-law, and George the subject of this essay, a small boy.

Mr. Keith here mentioned was the celebrated George Keith, who figures extensively in the history of Pennsylvania. He was a Quaker, but broke with his faith and returned to the Church of England. The records of Elizabeth City County show that the statement above of Call is erroneous in many ways.

Ann Keith, daughter of George Keith, married George Walker, pilot of James river, in 1697, and gunner and storekeeper at Fort Point Comfort, in 1723. He had issue: 1. Elizabeth, married Stephen Dewey, an eminent lawyer. No issue. 2. Margaret, married Thomas Wythe, father of Judge George Wythe; 3. *Jacob,* married Courtney Tucker (See QUARTERLY X., 207); 4. *Helen,* married Capt. George Wray, of Elizabeth City County; 5. George, whose will is on record in Southampton County, and names son George and daughter Jane Cropper; 6. daughter, married Capt. Richard Taylor, of Petersburg, clerk of the vestry of Blandford Parish, and had (1) Helen, married William Call, Jun., and had Richard Keith Call, born Oct. 29, 1792; (2) George Keith Taylor.

Jacob Walker and Courtney Tucker had issue: George Walker, who married Mary Meade, daughter of David Meade, of Nansemond Co., and Susanna Everard, eldest daughter of Sir Richard Everard, baronet, governor of North Carolina.

They moved to Brunswick County and had issue: 1. Susanna, who married Rolfe Eldridge, in 1773 (marriage bond); 2. Mary; 3. Anne; 4. Helen; 5. Margaret; 6. Frances; 7. David; 8. George; 9. Andrew Meade; 10. John; 11. Kidder Keith; 12. Jacob Wythe.

Captain George Wray and Helen Walker had issue: (1) George, of Hampton; (2) Ann, who married "John Stith, of Stafford County, Gent," no issue; 3. James, of the County of Dinwiddie merchant; 4. Jacob, merchant of Southampton (Hampton); 5. Keith Wray, mariner. All these are mentioned in a deed recorded at Hampton in 1767.

George Wray, the son of Jacob Wray, died between 1800 & 1810, having property in London on Queen's Street. Issue: (1) Jacob Keith Wray; (2) John Francis; (3) Mary Ann; (4) Helen Walker; (5) Georgiana.

VIRGINIA GENEALOGIES.

Kindly permit the privilege of a correction. In Mr. McAllister's book, "Lewis and Kindred Families," lately come into my hand, I find an unfounded charge that must be refuted. His book, barring lack of dates and authorities, is an excellent work. But on page 10 he makes this statement:

"The Rev. Mr. Hayden in his 'Virginia Genealogies," argues in his article on 'Descent' that the most prominent Virginia families are not able to trace their descent beyond the fifteenth century."

There is *no such statement in my book*. What I do say in my article on Descent is this:

"One personal friend [now dead] soberly assured me that 'the only aristocratic families in Virginia were those from which *she descended* [naming two], because their coats of arms were undoubted, and that no other families in Virginia equalled hers.' Yet none of the families from which *she descended* are able to note their descent beyond the 15th century."

It was this remark of one dear woman which caused the article on Descent. My statement referred to two families named by her. Mr. McAllister makes me include the entire families of Virginia in this statement, eminently unjust to me, and to my common sense.

"Virginia Genealogies" contains errors. Only two human beings ever lived who made no mistakes, Enoch and Elijah, and they were translated. No one has ever been translated since!

My book is brim full of dates and authorities, but no such assertion as Mr. McAllister gives is to be found in it, and no plagiarism such as Crozier perpetuates in his "Buckner Family," where he appropriates my Ashby Excursus—the result of personal work and money—bodily, without the mention of my name: and my book is copyrighted.

HORACE EDWIN HAYDEN.

Wilkesbarre, Pa., Nov. 16, 1909.

QUERIES.

WALLER-HARRISON. Wanted the descent of Temperance Waller from Benjamin Harrison and Benjamin Waller, whose descendants are supposed to have intermarried? *Mrs. John Beatty,* Blackwell, Oklahoma.

RANDLE. Can you give me the parentage of William Randle (some of the family spelled it Randall)) of Virginia, who settled in Madison, Georgia, and was the father of thirteen children, the eldest named James Graves and the fifth child born in 1814. *Mrs. J. H. P. Gillaspie,* Cor. Crawford Street and Leland Avenue, Houston, Texas.

LUNSFORD. George Lunsford was born in Virginia, June 8, 1762, and went West with his brothers Moses and Anthony, under George Rogers Clarke. Wanted information of George Lunsford's parents and family? *Mrs. John Beatty,* Blackwell, Oklahoma.

This Lunsford family began in Lancaster county, between the Rappahannock and Potomac Rivers. Edmund Lunsford made a deed to Thomas Carter in 1658, and Edward Lunsford, of Lancaster county, made a deed to Major Edward Dale in 1664. In the same county are marriage bonds of Moses Lunsford to Anne Payne, February 19, 1762, security George Payne; of Edwin Lunsford to Mary Carter, November 11,

1772, security Benjamin Haynie; of Rodham Lunsford to Lettice Carter, widow, February 26, 1774, security Henry Carter. In 1783 John Lunsford was living in the county. Epaphroditus Lunsford married Chloe Yapp, August 11, 1795, Rodham Lunsford married Sally Cox, July 8, 1796. A branch of the family moved to Stafford county (Overwharton Parish Register). William and Dinah Lunsford had Hannah, born June 5, 1744, and Charlotte, born Dec. 26, 1746; Rebecca Lunsford married John Baker, June 8, 1747; Benjamin Lunsford, son of William, born Feb. 19, 1749; Judith Lunsford married John Petter, Feb. 27, 1750; Hannah Lunsford, daughter of William, born Oct. 16, 1751; Rowley Lunsford married Joanna Sturdy June 16, 1754; Alice Lunsford married Joshua Brown July 21, 1754; Jane Lunsford, daughter of Moses and Rachel, born April 24, 1756; Letty Lunsford married William Simpson, January 18, 1756; John Lunsford married Margaret Martyn June 6, 1756; Sarah Lunsford married Henry Kirk May 23, 1756; Susanna Lunsford married John Peyton March 28, 1758; Enoch Lunsford, son of John, born Feb. 28, 1758.

This family were probably related to Sir Thomas Lunsford, who came to Virginia in 1649.

BOOK REVIEWS.

LIVES OF THE BISHOPS OF NORTH CAROLINA. By Marshall Delancey Haywood. Alfred Williams & Company, Raleigh, North Carolina, 1910.

This is a very neat and well printed volume and does credit to both the author and printer. The first bishop of North Carolina was John Stark Ravenscroft, of whose family a brief account appeared in the last number of this magazine. Mr. Haywood verifies the assumption that the emigrant ancestor to Virginia came from New England. Samuel Ravenscroft was one of the eleven persons who took steps to found King's Chapel in Boston for the services of the church of England and was one of the wardens. He owned a sloop with which he traded to Virginia. When after the accession of King William, Sir Edmund Andros was seized by the Boston authorities and imprisoned, the same fate befell Captain Ravenscroft. He was released and emigrated to Virginia about the time (1692) when Sir Edmund Andros came as governor. He married Dyonisia Savage, daughter of Major Thomas Savage, and was the father of five children, viz: 1, Dyonisia, born April 12, 1681; 2, Samuel, born April 12, 1682; 3, George, born March 20, 1683; this was the George Ravenscroft, who died in 1692; 4, Sarah, born November 20, 1686; 5, Thomas, born June 29, 1688. Captain Ravenscroft died about 1695, when the York county records show that his widow, Dyonisia, married Thomas Hadley, who was superintendent of the erection of the capitol building.

Thomas Atkinson, the third bishop, was also of Virginia descent and was born at Mansfield, near Petersburg, in Dinwiddie county, Virginia, on August 6, 1807. Of the other bishops William Ives was born in Connecticut and Theodore Benedict Lyman was born in Massachusetts.

THE LOYALISTS OF MASSACHUSETTS AND THE OTHER SIDE OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION. Boston, James H. Stark, 17 Milk Street, 1910.

This work is calculated to do a great deal of good in the interests of exact narrative. The characteristic of American history as written has been hero worship, and much injustice has been done through violent partisanship. The author of this work carries the war into Africa and does good even if he errs on the other side. He produces

so much that is new or forgotten that he serves indirectly the useful purpose of putting on the breaks. It is a curious fact, however, that all New Englanders are essentially of one mind when it comes to the glorification of their prominent men. Mr. Stark regards Samuel Adams as a defaulter, a marplot and a disturber of the peace, but he makes him "the sole expounder of Independence" and "the father of the Revolution." He places him on such a pinacle that an admirer might not see the mud spots. After the same manner he glorifies Benjamin Franklin and John Adams and John Hancock. They are rascals, but "our rascals," and, therefore, the greatest of their kind. And yet Mr. Stark himself very clearly shows that it was Patrick Henry, who by his Stamp Act resolutions really started the American Revolution, and that no one advocated independence till Tom Paine took the lead in doing it in his pamphlet called "Common Sense." The most valuable part of the work undoubtedly consists in the biographies of the New England tories. In New England to call the names of the tories is almost like calling the names of all that were cultivated, wealthy and refined in that section. There was undoubtedly much of the mob in the New England cities, but it is certainly absurd to represent the Revolution there as the work of a few unprincipled men. The people were behind the movement, and Samuel Adams and the other leaders were only a few steps in advance. Had they dropped back, other leaders would have taken their places. In Virginia very few of the prominent men were tories, and it is certainly ridiculous to assert that the Revolutionary movement was one of the poor whites or "crackers" led by Patrick Henry against the "planter aristocracy." In the first place, there were no "crackers" in Virginia, which was a name given to a class of poor white people in Georgia, no more degenerate, however, than the poor whites of New England, whom Mr. Stark represents as so dangerous and murderous. Patrick Henry had his support among the Scotch-Irish settlers of the western part of the State, and the middle classes of society in the East, but he was only a step in advance of the Randolphs, the Lees and the Blands, who were leaders of the aristocracy.

PATRICIAN AND PLEBEIAN IN VIRGINIA. By Thomas Wertenbaker, M. A. The Michie Company, Printers, Charlottesville, Virginia, 1910.

This is an excellent study of conditions in Colonial Virginia, based upon the latest and important material. Mr. Wertenbaker's view of the early immigration and the growth of the classes is in the main correct. His monograph shows much research and is well worthy of

publication. There are some statements which may not be wholly acceptable. Mr. Wertenbaker does not credit the generally received idea of an extensive cavalier immigration during the Commonwealth. There is, however, too much authority for this belief to be lightly disregarded. This immigration did not necessarily imply that it was composed of men of great birth and standing in England. There are also some inconsistencies. In one place Mr. Wertenbaker correctly shows that the convict element among the servants was very small (p. 166), but in another place he speaks of Virginia being "a dumping ground for the refuse of the English population"—a statement which is very popular with those who dislike Virginia, but for which there has never been adduced any proper authority. No one can say with any pretence to accuracy how many convicts were sent to Virginia. The term "Virginia" was a vague one at any rate, and meant any part of America. Such as came left little trace behind them, for disease and climatic influences practically exterminated them.

COLONIAL VIRGINIA. By J. A. C. Chandler and T. B. Thames, Times-Dispatch Company, Richmond, Virginia, 1907.

This contains an interesting account for popular use. The story given of Virginia is not always free from fault, but is fresh and interesting. The reader misses the reference to authority, which such a subject seems to demand.

A DOCUMENTARY HISTORY OF CHELSEA, in cluding the Boston precincts of Winnisimet, Rumney March and Pullen Point, 1624, 1824, collected and arranged with notes by William Chamberlain. In two volumes. Boston, Printed for the Massachusetts Historical Society, 1908.

MIRABEAU AND THE FRENCH REVOLUTION. By Fred Morrow Fling, Ph. D., Professor of European History in the University of Nebraska. In three volumes. Volume I.—The Youth of Mirabeau, G. P. Putnam Sons, New York and London. The Knickerbocker Press, 1908.

THE CONVENTION OF 1788: An address delivered by J. Staunton Moore at the Westmoreland Club, Richmond, Virginia, to the Society of the Sons of the American Revolution, February 22, 1908. Mr. Moore's sketches of Patrick Henry, Edmund Pendleton, James Madison and other leading men of the celebrated convention of 1788, are very cleverly done. They show research and study, and his conclu-

sions are in the main correct. Suppose Virginia had not approved the Union. What then? Probably the Southern Confederacy would have been anticipated by seventy-three years. The North and South as distinct nations would then have developed according to their own natural inclinations, under laws suitable to their own conditions. As it was, the Union which was created was as illjointed an affair as the statue erected by Nebuchadnezzar. The gigantic war of 1861-'65 was the natural consequences of such a stupendous act of folly. Under the conditions, which existed in 1861, separation was the only logical and natural act. With the differences now all wiped out and the willingness of the South to accept an inferior status in the Union, the question is altogether different.

A DOCUMENTARY HISTORY OF AMERICAN INDUSTRIAL SOCIETY, edited by John R. Commons, Ulrich B. Phillips, Eugene A. Gilmore, Helen L. Sumner and John B. Andrews. Volume I. *Plantation and Frontier,* 1649-1863. Selected, collated and edited with Introduction by Ulrich B. Phillips, Ph. D., Professor of History and Political Science, Tulane University of Louisiana. This book is the first of a series which will be the standard source work on American industries. Dr. Phillips is to be congratulated upon the admirable and interesting selections which he has made. The book is a credit to Southern scholarship.

Works of Lyon G. Tyler

President of William and Mary College, Williamsburg, Virginia.

1. Letters and Times of the Tylers.

   Being a work in three volumes covering the lives of John Tyler, Sr., Governor of Virginia, and his son, John Tyler, President of the United States, with a running commentary on political events from 1775 to 1861. Price $7 (Express to be paid by purchaser). Apply to the author.

2. Cradle of the Republic—Jamestown and James River.

   A detailed history of Jamestown and the other James River settlements. Second edition, rewritten, enlarged and copiously illustrated. Sent to any place in the United States free of postage for $3. Apply to the author.

3. Williamsburg, the Old Colonial Capital.

   Copiously illustrated. Williamsburg is full of interest as the capital of Virginia during the American Revolution, and the seat of William and Mary College. Sent to any place in the United States free of postage for $2.50. Apply to the author.

4. Parties and Patronage in the United States,

   in G. P. Putnam's "Questions of the Day." Price $1. Apply to the author.

5. Narratives of Early Virginia (1606-1625)

   Charles Scribner's Sons, Publishers, New York.

6. The English in America.

   (Volume IV. in Hart's American Nation). Harper & Brothers, Publishers, New York.

7. William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine.

   Lyon G. Tyler, Editor and Proprietor, Williamsburg, Va.

   This magazine is devoted chiefly to the early history and families of Virginia. All unsigned articles contributed by the Editor. It enters on its eighteenth volume with the July number, 1909.

   Subscription price is $3 per year. Back numbers furnished only to subscribers. Single copies $1; more than three copies at 75 cents each. Can furnish any back numbers except No. 1 of Vol. III, No. 1 of Vol. IV. and Nos. 1 and 2 of Vol. VI. No discount to the trade.

   An index to Genealogic Data in the first sixteen volumes will be furnished on application.

8. Men of Mark in Virginia.

   In five volumes. Men of Mark Publishing Co., Washington, D. C.

Just Issued *285 Pages Octavo Price $2.50*

WILLIAMSBURG

THE OLD COLONIAL CAPITAL

Copiously Illustrated

BY LYON GARDINER TYLER, LL. D.

President of William and Mary College

AS Jamestown and the James river settlements were the beginnings of English civilization upon the American continent, Williamsburg, which succeeded Jamestown as the capital of Virginia, was the CRADLE of the AMERICAN REVOLUTION. Here, in the old capitol at the east end of Duke of Gloucester street, were passed the resolutions against the stamp act, the resolutions for the committees of correspondence, and the resolutions calling on Congress to declare the American colonies free and independent States. Here is William and Mary College, where Jefferson, Marshall, Monroe, the Randolphs, Dabney Carr and a host of other great men studied. Here was the first American theatre and the first hospital for the insane. *Here was concentrated all the glory of Colonial Virginia.* This work is the first serious effort to give a detailed account of this ancient town, which may be described as *a very small place with a very great story.*

Sent to any place in the United States for $2.50, free of postage, by

LYON G. TYLER, Williamsburg, Virginia

Date Due

UNIVERSITY OF FLORIDA
3 1262 07591 395 3

LAD